

THE

Palace of Pleasure

*ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,
AND OTHERS*

DONE INTO ENGLISH

BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME

BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. III.



LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND

~ MDCCCXC

FS

15

T A B L E O F C O N T E N T S.

VOLUME III.

TOME II.—*Continued.*

TITLE PAGE (EDITION 1580)	PAGE
NOVEL	
XXIII. DUCHESS OF MALFY	3
XXIV. COUNTESS OF CELANT	44
XXV. ROMEO AND JULIET.	80
XXVI. LADIES OF VENICE	125
XXVII. LORD OF VIRLE	157
XXVIII. LADV OF BOHEMIA	195
XXIX. DIEGO AND GINEVRA	222
XXX. SALIMBENE AND ANGELICA	288
XXXI. HELENA OF FLORENCE	329
XXXII. CAMIOLA AND ROLAND	354
XXXIII. LORDS OF NOCERA	363
XXXIV. SULTAN SOLYMAN	395
XXXV. KING OF MOROCCO	416
CONCLUSION	431

The second Tome
of the Palace of Pleasure,
contayning store of goodlye Histories,
Tragical matters, and other Mo-
rall argumentes, very re-
quisite for delight
and profyte.

*Chosen and selected out of
diuers good and commen-
dable Authors :
and now once agayn corrected and
encreased*

By William Painter, Clerke of the
Ordinance and Armarie.

Imprinted at London, in
Fleat strete, by Thomas
Marshe.

The Palace of Pleasure.

THE TWENTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The infortunate mariage of a Gentleman, called Antonio Bologna, wyth the Duchesse of Malfi, and the pitifull death of them both.

THE great Honor and authority men haue in thys World, and the greater their estimation is, the more sensible and notorious are the faultes by theim committed, and the greater is their flaunder. In lyke manner more difficult it is for that man to tolerate and sustayne Fortune, which al the dayes of his life hath lyued at his ease, if by chaunce he fall into any great necessity than for hym whych never felt but woe, mishap, and aduerſity. Dyonisius the Tyrant of Scicilia, felt greater payne when hee was expelled his Kyngdome, than Milo did, beinge banished from Rome: for so mutch as the one was a Soueraygne Lorde, the sonne of a Kynge, a Iusticiary on Earth, and the other but a fimple Citizen of a City, wherein the People had Lawes, and the Lawes of Magistrates were had in reurence. So lykewyfe the fall of a high and lofty Tree, maketh greater noyfe, than that whych is low and little. Hygh Towers, and stately Palaces of Prynces bee seene further of, than the poore Cabans, and homely Sheepeheardes Sheepecotes: the Walles of lofty Cityes more a loofe doe Salute the Viewers of the same, than the fimple Caues, which the Poore doe digge belowe the Mountayne Rockes. Wherefore it behoueth the Noble, and futch as haue charge of Commonwealth, to lyue an honest Lyfe, and beare their port vpright, that none haue cause to discourse vpon their wicked deedes and naughty life. And aboue all modeſty ought to be kept by Women,

whom as their race, Noble birth, auðthority and name, maketh them more famous, euen so their vertue, honesty, chasfity, and continencie more prayse worthy. And behoueful it is, that like as they wishe to be honoured aboue all other, so their life do make them worthy of that honour, without disgracing their name by deed or worde, or blemishing that brightnesse which may commend the fame. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the employtes and conquests done by the Babylonian Queene Semyramis, neuer was recommended wyth futch prayse, as hir vice had shame in records by those which left remembrance of auncient a&ts. Thus I say, because a woman being as it were the Image of sweetnesse, curtefie and shamefastnesse, so foone as she steppeth out of the right tract, and abandoneth the sweete smel of hir duety and modesty, besides the denigration of hir honour, thrusteth her selfe into infinite Troubles, caufeth ruine of futch whych should bee honoured and praysed, if Womens Allurementes solicited theym not to Folly. I wyll not heere Indeuour my selfe to seeke for examples of Samson, Salomon or other, which suffred themselues fondly to be abused by Women: and who by meane of them be tumbled into great faults, and haue incurred greater perils: contentinge my selfe to recyte a ryght pitifull History done almost in our tyme, when the French vnder leadinge of that notable Capitayne Gaston de Foix, vanquished the force of Spayne and Naples at the Iourney of Rauenna in the time of the French Kynge called Lewes the twelfth, who married the Lady Mary, Daughter to Kynge Henry the feuenth, and Sister to the Victorious Prynce of worthy memory kynge Henry the eyght, Wyfe (after the death of the sayd Lewes) to the puissaunt Gentleman Charles, late Duke of Suffolke. In the very tyme then lyued a Gentleman of Naples called Antonio Bologna, who hauing bin master of Household to Fredericke of Aragon, fointime king of Naples, after the French had expelled thos of Aragon out of that Citty, the sayde Bologna retyred into Fraunce, and thereby recovered the goods, which hee possessed in his countrey. The Gentleman besides that he was valiant of his persone, a good man. of Warre, and wel esteemed amongs the best, had a passing numbre of good graces, which made him to be loued and cherished of euery

wight: and for riding and managing of greate horse, he had not his fellow in Italy: he could alfo play exceedyng well and trim vpon the Lute, whos fayning voyce so wel agreed therewith, that the moſte melancholike perſons would forget their heauineſſe, vpon hearing of his heauenly noyſe: and beſides these qualyties, he was of perſonage comely, and of good proportion. To be ſhort: naſure hauiing trauayled and diſpoyleſt hir Treaſure Houſe for inriching of him, he had by Arte gotten that, which made him moſt happy and worthy of prayſe, which was, the knowledge of good letters, wherein he was ſo well trayned, as by talke and diſpute thereoſt, he made thoſe to bluſh that were of that ſtate and profeſſion. Antonio Bologna hauiing left Fredericke of Aragon in Fraunce, who expulſed out of Naples was retired to king Lewes, went home to his houſe to lyue at reſt and to auoyd trouble, forgetting the delicates of Courtes and houſes of great men, to bee the only hufband of his owne reuenue. But what? it is imposſible to eſchue that which the heauens haue determined vpon vs: or to ſhunne the vnhappe which feemeth to follow vs, as it were naſurally proceeding from our mother's Wombe: in ſutcher wyſe as many times, he which feemeth the wiſeſt man, guided by miſfor- tūne, haſteth himſelf with ſtouping head to fall headlonge into hys death and ruine. Euen ſo it chaunced to this Neapolitan Gentle- man: for in the very fame place where he attained his aduaunce- ment, he receiued alſo his diſminution and decay, and by that houſe which preferred hym to what he had, he was depryued, both of his eſtate and life: the diſcourse whereoſt you ſhall vnderſtande. I haue tolde you already, that this Gentleman was Mayſter of the kinge of Naples houſehouſt, and beyng a gentle perſon, a good Courtier, wel trained vp, and wyſe for gouernment of himſelf in the Courte and in the ſeruice of Princes, the Ducheffe of Malfi thought to intreate him that he would ſerue hir, in that office which he ſerued the King. This Ducheffe was of the houſe of Aragon, and ſiſter to the Cardinall of Aragon, which then was a rych and puissant perſonage. Being reſolued, and perſuaded, that Bologna was deuoutly affected to the houſe of Aragon, as one brought vp there from a Chylde: ſhee fent for him home to his Houſe, and vpon hys repaire vſed vnto him theſe,

or like Woordes: "Mayster Bologna, sith your ill fortune, nay rather the vnhap of our whole House is futch, as your good Lord and Mayster hath forgon his state and dignity, and that you therewithall haue lost a good Maister, without other recompence but the prayse which euery man giueth you for your good seruice, I haue thought good to intreat you to doe me the honor, as to take charge of the gouernment of my House, and to vse the same, as you did that of the King your maister. I know well that the office is to vnworthy for your calling; notwithstanding you be not ignorant what I am, and how neare to him in bloud, to whom you haue bene a Seruaunte so faythfull and Louing; and albeit that I am no Queene, endued with greatest reuenuie, yet with that little portyon I haue, I beare a Pyncely heart: and futch as you by experiance do knowe what I haue done, and dayly do to those which depart my seruice, recompensing them according to theyr paine and trauaile: magnificence is obserued as well in the Courts of poore Princes, as in the stately Palaces of great Kings and monarches. I do remembre that I haue read of a certain noble gentleman, a Persian borne, called Ariobarzanes, who vfed great examples of curtefie and stoutnesse towards King Artaxerxes, wherewith the king wondred at his magnificence, and confessed himself to be vanquished: you shal take aduise of this request, and in the meane time do think you will not refuse the same, aswell for that my demaund is iust, as also being assured, that our House and race is so well imprinted in your heart, as it is impossible that the memory thereof can be defaced." The gentleman hearynge that curteous demaund of the Duchesse, knowing himselfe how deeplye bound he was to the name of Aragon, and led by some vnkownen prouocation to his great il luck, answered hir in this wise: "I would to God, Madame, that with so good reason and equity I were able to make denyall of your commaundment, as iustly you maye require the same: wherfore for the bounden duety which I owe to the name and memorie of the house of Aragon, I make promise that I shall not only sustaine the trauell, but also the daunger of my Lyfe, dayly to be offred for your seruice: but I feele in mynde I know not what, which commaundeth me to withdraw my selfe to lyue alone at home within

my lyttle house, and to be content with that I haue, forgoing the sumptuous charge of Pryncestes houses, which Lyfe would be wel liked of my self, were it not for the feare that you Madame should be discontented with my refusall, and that you should conceiue, that I disdained your offred charge, or contempne your Court for respect of the great Office I bare in the Courte of the Kyng, my Lord and Mayster: for I cannot receiue more honour, than to serue hir, which is the paragon of that stock and royal race. Therfore at all aduentures I am resolued to obey your will, and humbly to satissify the duety of the charge wherein it pleaseth you to employ me, more to pleasure you for auoiding of displeasure, then for desire I haue to lyue an honorable lyfe in the greatest Princes house of the world, fith I am discharged from him in whose name resteth my comfort and only stay, thinking to haue liued a solitarye life, and to passe my yeres in rest, except it were in the pore abilitye of my seruice to that house, wherunto I am bound continually to be a faithfull seruaunt. Thus Madame, you see me to be the readiest man of the world, to fulfil the request, and accomplishe sutch other seruice wherein it shall please you to employ me." The Ducheſſe thanked him very heartily, and gaue him charge of all hir houſholde traïne, commaunding ech person to do him sutch reuerence as to hir ſelf, and to obey him as the chief of al hir family. This Lady was a widow, but a paſſing faire Gentlewoman, fine and very yong, hauing a yong ſonne vnder hir guard and keping, left by the deceased Duke hir husband, togither with the Duchy, the inheritaunce of hir child. Now conſider hir perſonage being ſutch, her eaſy life and delycate bringing vp, and hir daily view of the youthly trade and manner of Courtiers lyfe, whether ſhe felt hir ſelf pryckt wyth any deſire, which burned hir heart the more incessantly, as the flames were hidden and couert: from the outward ſhew whereof ſhee stayed hir ſelf ſo well as ſhee coulde. But ſhee followinge beſte aduice, rather eſteemed the prooſe of Maryage, than to burne wyth ſo lyttle fire, or to incurre the exchange of louers, as many vnſhamefaſte ſtrumpets do, which be rather giuen ouer, than ſatiffied with pleaſure of loue. And to ſay the truthe, they be not guided by wife-dom's lore, which ſuffer a maiden ripe for mariage to be long

vnwedded, or yong wife long to liue in widowe's state, what assurance so euer they make of their chaste and stayed lyfe. For booke be to full of futch enterpryses, and houses stored with examples of futch stolne and secrete practises, as there neede no further prooфе for assurance of our cause, the daily experience maketh plaine and manifest. And a great folly it is to build the fantasies of chasfitye amid the follies of worldly pleasures. I will not goe about to make those matters impossible, ne yet will iudge at large, but that there be som maydens and Wyues, which wiselye can conteine themselfues amongs the troupe of amorous futers. But what? the experience is very hard, and the prooфе no leſſe daungerous, and perchaunce in a moment the mind of some peruerted, which all their lyuyinge dayes haue closed theyr Eares from the Sute of those that haue made offer of louyng seruice. And hereof we neede not run to forrayne Hystories, ne yet to seeke records that be auncient, sith wee may see the daily effects of the lyke, practised in Noble houses, and Courtes of Kyngs and Prynces. That this is true, example of this fayre Duchesse, who was moued wyth that defyre which pricketh others that be of Flesh and Bone. Thys Lady waxed very weary of lying alone, and gryued hir Hearte to be wythoute a match, specially in the Nyght, when the secrete silence and darkeſſe of the same presented beſfore the eyes of hir mind, the Image of the pleasure which ſhe felt in the lyfe tyme of hir deceaſed Lord and Husband, whereof now feelyng hir ſelfe despoyled, ſhe felt a contynuall Combat, and durſt not atteſt that which ſhe defyred moſt, but eſchued the thyng wherof hir Mind lyked beſt. "Alas (ſayd ſhee) is it poſſyble after the taste of the Value of honest obeyence whych the Wyfe oweth vnto hir Husband, that I ſhould defyre to ſuffer the Heat whych burneth and altereth the martyred myndes of thoſe that ſubdue themſelues to loue? Can futch atteſt pierce the heart of me to become amorous by forgetting and ſtraying from the limmetts of honest life? But what deſire is this? I haue a certayne vnaquaynted luſt, and yet very well know not what it is that moueth me, and to whom I ſhall vow the ſpoyle thereof. I am truely more fond and fooliſhe than euer Narcifſus was, for there is neyther shadow nor voyce, vpon which I can well ſtay my fight, nor yet ſimple Imaginacion of any worldly

man, whereupon I can arrest the conceypt of my vnstayed heart, and the desires which prouoke my mynde. Pygmalion loued once a Marble Piller, and I haue but one desire, the colour whereof is more pale than death. There is nothyng which can geue the same so mutch as one spot of vermillion rud. If I doe discouer these appetites to any wight, perhaps they will mock me for my labor, and for all the beauty and Noble byrth that is in me, they will make no conscience to deeme me for their iesting stock, and to solace themselues with rehersall of my fond conceits. But sith there is no enemy in the field, and that but simple suspicion doth assayle me, why breake I not the same, and deface the entier remembraunce of the lightnesse of my brayne? It appertayneth vnto mee to shewe my selfe, as issued from the Noble house of Aragon: to me it doeth belonoge to take heede how I erre or degenerate from the royall bloud whereof I came." In this sort that fayre Wydow and young Princeffe fantasied in the night vpon the discourse of hir appetites. But when the day was come, seeing the great multitude of the Neapolitan Lords and Gentlemen that marched vp and downe the Citty, eyinge and beholdinge their best beloued, or vsing talke of loue with them whose seruaunts they were, all that which she thought vpon in the night, vanished so fone as the flame of burned Straw, or the Pouder of Cannon shot, and purposed for any respect to liue no longer in that sort, but promisid the conquest of some frend that was lusty and discreete. But the difficulty rested in that she knew not vpon whom to fixe hir loue, fearing to bee flaundered, and also that the light disposition and maner of most part of youth were to be suspected, in futch wise as giuing ouer al them which vauted vpon their Gennets, Turkey Palfreis, and other Coursers alonge the Citty of Naples, shee purposed to take repaſt of other Venifon, than of that fond and wanton troupe. So hir mishap began already to spin the threede which choked the Ayre and Breath of hir vnhappy life. Yee haue heard before that Mayſter Bologna was one of the wifest and moſt perfect Gentlemen that the land of Naples that tyme brought forth, and for his Beauty, Proportion, Galantneſſe, Valiaunce, and good grace, without comparison. His fauour was ſo ſweete and pleafant, as they which kept him company, had ſomwhat to do to abſtayne their affection.

Who then could blame thys fayre Princeffe, if (preffed wyth desire of match, to remoue the ticklish infstigations of her wanton flesh, and hauing in hir presence a man so wife) shée did set hir minde on hym, or fantasy to mary him? Would not that party for calming of his thirst and hunger, being set at a table before fundry sorts of delicate viands, eafe his hunger? Me thinke the person doth greatly forget himselfe, which hauing handfast vpon occasion, suffreth the same to vanish and fly away, fith it is wel known that she being bald behinde, hath no place to fease vpon when desire moueth vs to lay hold vpon hir. Which was the cause that the Ducheffe became extremely in loue with the mayster of hir house. In futch wyfe as before al men, she spared not to prayse the great perfections of him whom she desired to be altogether hirs. And so she was inamored, that it was as possible to see the night to be voide of darknesse, as the Ducheffe without the presence of hir Bologna, or els by talke of words to set forth his prayse, the continual remembrance of who (for that shée loued him as hirselfe) was hir onely minde's repast. The Gentleman that was full wyfe, and had at other times felt the great force of the paſſion which proceedeth from extreeme loue, immediatly did mark the countenaunce of the Ducheffe, and perceyued the same so neere, as vnfaynedly hee knew that very ardently the Lady was in loue with him: and albeit he fawe the inequality and difference betweene them both, she being forted out of the royll bloud, and himself of meaner calling, yet knowing loue to haue no respect to state or dignity, determined to folow his fortune, and to serue hir which so louingly shewed hir selfe to him. Then fodaynely reproving his fonde conceit, he sayd vnto himself: "What folly is that I enterprise, to the preiudice and peril of mine honor and life? Ought the wisedome of a Gentleman to stray and wandre through the assaults of an appetite rising of sensuality, and that reason gieue place to that which doeth participate with brute beasts deprived of all reason by subduinge the minde to the affections of the body? No, no, a vertuous man ought to let shine in him selfe the force of the generosity of his minde. This is not to liue according to the spirite, when pleasure shall make vs forget our duty and fauegard of our Conscience. The reputation of a wife Gentleman resteth not only to be valiant,

and skilfull in feates of armes, or in seruice of the Noble: but needfull it is for him by discreation to make himselfe prayse worthy, and by vanquishinge of himselfe to open the gate to fame, whereby he may euerlastingly make himselfe glorious to all posterity. Loue pricketh and prouoketh the spirite to do well, I do confesse, but that affection ought to be addredded to some vertuous end, tending to mariage, for otherwise that vnspotted Image shall be soyled wyth the villany of Beastly pleasure. Alas," sayd he, "how easie it is to dispute, when the thyng is absent, which can both force and violently assayle the Bulwarks of most constant hearts. I full well doe see the troth, and doe feele the thing that is good, and knowe what behoueth mee to follow: but when I view the pereles beauty of my Lady, hir graces, wisedome, behauour and curtesie, when I see hir to cast so louinge an eye vpon me, that she vseth so great familiarity, that she forgetteth the greatnessse of hir house to abase hirselfe for my respect: how is it possible that I should be so foolish to dispise a duety so rare and precious, and to set light by that which the Nobleſt would purſue wyth all reuerence and deuoyre? Shall I be so voyde of wifdome to ſuffer the yonge Princeſſe to ſee hirſelfe contempned of mee, thereby to conuert hir loue to teares, by ſetting hir mynde upon an other, that ſhall ſeek mine ouerthrow? Who knoweth not the fury of a woman: ſpecially the Noble dame, by ſeeing hirſelfe diſpifed? No, no, the loueth me, and I will be hir ſeruaunt, and vſe the fortune proffred. Shal I be the firſt ſimple Gentleman that hath married or loued a Princeſſe? Is it not more honourable for mee to ſettle my mind vpon a place ſo high, than vpon ſome ſimple wench by whom I ſhall neyther attayne profit, or aduancement? Baldouine of Flaunders, did not he a Noble enterpriſe when he carried away Iudith the daughter of the French kynge, as he was paſſing vpon the Seas into England, to be married to the kynge of that Countrey? I am neither Pirat nor Aduenturer, for the Lady loueth me. What wrong doe I then to any perſon by rendringe loue agayne? Is not ſhe at liberty? To whom ought ſhee to make accoumpt of hir deedes and doinges, but to God alone and to hir owne Conſcience? I wyll loue hir, and cary lyke affection for the loue which I know and ſee that ſhe beareth vnto me, beinge

assured that the same is directed to good ende, and that a Woman so wyfe as she is, will not hazard the bleamish of hir honor." Thus Bologna framed the plot for intertayntment of the Duchesse (albeit hir loue already was fully bent vpon him) and fortified hym selfe agaynst all perillous myshap and chaunce that might succeede, as ordinarily you see that Louers conceyue all things for their aduauntage, and fantasie dreames agreeable to their most desire, resemblinge the Mad and Bedlem persons which haue before their eyes, the figured Fansies whych cause the conceipt of their fury, and stay themselues vpon the vision of that which most troubleth their offended Brayne. On the other side, the Duchesse was in no lesse care of hir Louer, the will of whom was hid and secret, whych more did vexe and torment hir, than the fire of loue that burned hir feruently. She could not tell what way to hold, to do him vnderstand hir heart and affe^ction. She feared to discouer the same vnto hym, doubtinge eyther that some fond and rigorous aunswere, or the reueylinge of hir mynde to hym, whose prefence pleased hir more than all of the men of the World. "Alas," sayd shee, "am I happed into so straunge misery, that with mine owne mouth I must make request to him, which with all humility ought to offer mee hys service? Shall a Lady of sutch bloud as I am, be constrainyd to sue, where all other be required by importunate instance of their Suters? Ah loue, loue, what so euer he was that clothed thee wyth sutch puissaunce, I dare say he was the cruell enimy of man's freedom. It is impossible that thou hadst thy being in heauen, sith the clemency and curteous influence of the same, inuesteth man with better benefits, than to suffer hir nourse children to be intreated with sutch rigor. He lieth which sayth that Venus is thy mother, for the swetenes and good grace that refesth in that pitifull Goddesse, who taketh no pleasure to see louers perced with so egre trauayles as that which afflieteth my heart. It was some fierce cogitation of Saturne, that brought thee forth, and sent thee into the worlde to breake the ease of them which liue at rest without any passion or grieve. Pardon me Loue, if I blasphemē thy maiesty, for the stresse and endlesse grief wherein I am plunged, maketh me thus to roue at large, and the doubts, which I conceyue, do take away the health and soundnesse

of my mynde, the little experience in thy schole caufeth this amaze in me, to be solicited with desire that countersayeth the duty, honor, and reputation of my state: the party whom I loue, is a Gentleman, vertuous, valiant, sage, and of good grace. In this there is no cause to blame Loue of blindnesse, for all the inequality of our houles, apparant vpon the first sight and shew of the same. But from whence Issue Monarchs, Prynches and great Lords, but from the naturall and common Masse of Earth, whereof other men do come? what maketh these differences betwene thoſe that loue ech other, if not the ſottish opinion which we conceiue of greatnessſe, and preheminence: as though naturall affections bee like to that ordayneſd by the fantasie of men in their lawes extreme. And what greater right haue Princes to ioyne wyth a ſimple Gentlewoman, than the Princeſſe to mary a Gentleman, and ſutſch as Anthonio Bologna is, in whom Heauen and Nature haue forgotten nothiſe to make him equall with them which march amonſt the greatest. I thinke we be the dayly flauſes of the fond and cruell fantasie of thoſe Tyrants, which ſay they haue puiffance ouer vs: and that ſtraininge our will to their tiranny, we be ſtill bound to the chaine like the Galley flauſe. No, no, Bologna ſhall be my Husband, for of a freend I purpose to make my loyall and lawful Husband, meaning therby not to offend God and men together, and pretend to liue without offence of conſcience, wherby my ſoule ſhal not be hindred for any thyng I do, by marying him whom I ſo ſtraungely loue. I am ſure not to be deceyued in loue. He loueth me ſo mutch or more as I do him, but he dareth not diſcloſe the ſame, fearing to be refuſed and caſt of with shame. Thus 2 vnitied wiſs, and 2 hearts tied together with equal knot cannot choſe but bryng forth fruites worthy of ſutſch ſociety. Let men ſay what they liſt, I will doe none otherwyſe than my heade and mynd haue already framed. Semblably I neede not make accompt to any perſone for my fact, my body, and reputation beyng in full liberty and freedome. The bond of mariage made, ſhall couer the faulte whych men woulde fynde, and leauyng myne eſtate, I ſhall do no wrong but to the greatnessſe of my houſe, which maketh me amonſt men right honorable. But theſe honours be nothiſe worth, where the Mynd is voyd of conten-

tation, and wher the hearte prykte forwarde by desire leaueth the Bodye and Mynde restlesse wythout quiet." Thus the Duchesse founded hir enterpryse, determining to mary hir houshold Mayster, seeking for occasion and time, meete for disclosing of the same, and albeit that a certaine naturall shamefastnesse, which of custome accompanieth Ladies, did close hir mouth, and made hir to deferre (for a certain time) the effect of hir resolued minde: yet in the ende vanquished with loue and impaciencie, she was forced to breake of silence, and to assyure hir self in him, reiecting feare conceiued of shame, to make hir waye to pleasure, which she lusted more than mariage, the same seruyng hir, but for a Maske and couverture to hide hir follies and shamelesse lusts, for which she did the penaunce that hir folly deserued. For no colorable dede or deceyful trompery can serue the excuse of any notable wyckednesse. She then throughly perswaded in her intent, dreamyng and thinking of nougnt else, but vpon the imbracement of hir Bologna, ended and determined hir conceits and pretended follies: and vpon a time sent for him vp into hir chamber, as commonly she did for the affaires and matters of hir house, and taking him aside vnto a window, hauing prospect into a garden, she knew not how to begin hir talk: (for the heart being seased, the mind troubled, and the witts out of course, the tongue fayled to do his ofice,) in futch wife, as of long time she was vnable to speake one onely woord. He surprised with like affection, was more astonied by seeing the alteration of his Ladie. So the two Louers stooode still like Images beholding one another, without any mouing at all, vntill the Lady the hardiest of them bothe, as feelinge the most vehement and greatest gryef, tooke Bologna by the hand, and dissembling what she thought, vsed this or futch language: "If any other besides your selfe (Gentleman) should vnderstand the secret which now I purpose to dysclose, I doubt what speeche were necessary to colour, what I shall speake: but being assured of your discretion and wisdom, and with what perfection nature hath indued you, and Arte, hauing accomplished that in you, which nature did begin to worke, as one bred and brought vp in the royal court of the seconde Alphonse, of Ferdinando, and Frederick of Aragon my coufins, I wil make no doubt at all to manifest to

you the hidden secrete of my heart, being well persuaded that when you shall both heare and fauor my reas ons, and tast the light which I bring forth for me, easily you may iudge that mine aduice cannot be other than iust and reasonable. But if your conceits shall straye from that whych I determine, I shal be forced to thinke and faye that they which esteeme you wife and sage, and to be a man of good and ready wytte, be maruelously deceiued. Notwithstanding my heart foretelleth that it is impossible for mayster Bologna, to wandre so farre from equitie, but that by and by he wil enter the lystes and dyscerne the White from Blache, and the Wronge fro that whych is Iust and Ryghte: for so mucht as hitherto I neuer saw thinge done by you, which Preposterated or peruertered the good iudgement that all the world esteemeth to shine in you, the same well manifested and declared by your tongue, the right iudge of the Mynde, you knowe and see how I am a Wydow through the Death of that Noble Gentleman of good remembrance, the Duke my Lord and husbande: you be not ignoraunt also, that I haue lyued and gouerned my self in sutch wife in my Widow state, as there is no man so hard and seuere of iudgement, that can blasfon reproch of mee in that whych appertayneth to the honestye and reputation of sutch a Lady as I am, bearyng my port so righte, as my conscience yeldeth no remorse, supposinge that no Man hathe wherewith to byte and accuse me. Touchyng the order of the goods of the Duke my Sonne, I have vsed them with diligence and discretion, as besides the Dettes, whych I haue dyscharged fithens the death of my Lord: I haue purchased a goodly Manor in Calabria, and haue annexed the same to the Dukedom of his heire: and at this day doe not owe one peny to any creditor that lent money to the Duke, which he toke vp to furnish the charges in the warres, which he sustayned in the seruice of the Kinges our soueraine Lords in the late warres for the Kyngdome of Naples. I haue as I suppose by this meanes stopped the flaundrous mouth and giuen cause vnto my sonne, during his life to accompt himself bound vnto his mother: now hauing till thys time liued for other, and made my selfe subiect more than nature could beare, I am entended to chaunge both my lyfe and condic-
tion. I haue tyll thys time run, trauayled, and remoued to the

Castels and Lordefhips of the Dukedom, to Naples and other places, being in mind to tary as I am a widow. But what new affayres and new councel hath possest my mynd? I haue trauayled and payned my self inougue: I haue to long abidden a widowe's lyfe: I am determined therefore to prouyde a Husbande, who by louing me, shall honor and cherysh me according to the loue which I shall beare hym, and my desert. For to loue a man without mariage, God defend my hearte should euer think, and shal rather dye a hundred thousand deathes, than a desire so wicked should foyle my conscience, knowyng well that a woman which setteth hir honor to sale, is lesse than nothing, and deserueth not the common ayre should breathe vpon hir, for all the reuerence that men do beare vnto them. I accuse no person, albeit that many noble women haue their forheds marked, with the blame of dishonest lyfe, and being honored of some, bee neuertheleſſe the common Fable of the Worlde. To the intente then that futch myshappe happen not to me, and perceyuyng my selfe vnable stylly thus to lyue, beyng younge as I am, and (God bee thanked) neyther deformed nor yet paynted, I had rather bee the louyng Wyfe of a symple feere, than the Concubyne of a kynge or greate Prynce. And what? is the myghty Monarche able to washe away the faulte of hys Wyfe whych hath abandoned him contrary to the duety and honesty whych the vndefyled bed requyreth? no leſſe then Pryncesses that whilom trespassed with thoſe whych were of baser ſtuffe than themſelues. Meſſalina with hir imperiall robe could not ſo wel couer hir faults, but that the Historians, do defame hir with the name and title of a common woman. Fauſtina the Wyfe of the ſage Monarch Marcus Aurelius, gayned lyke reporte by rendringe hir ſelfe to others pleaſure, byfides hir lawfull Spouse. To mary my ſelfe to one that is myne equall, it is iſſoimpoſſible, for ſo mucht as there is no Lorde in all this Countray meete for my degree, but is to olde of age, the rest being dead in theſe later Warres. To mary a husband that yet is but a childe, is folly extreeme, for the inconueniences which daily chaunce thereby, and the euil intreayt that Ladies do receyue when they come to age, when their nature waxeth cold, by reaſon whereof, imbracemēnts be not ſo fauourable, and their husbandes glutted

with ordinary meate, vse to run in exchange: wherefore I am resolued without respite or delay, to choose some well qualified and renoumed Gentleman, that hath more vertue than richeffe, that is of better Fame and brute, then of wealth and reuenue, to the entent I may make him my Lord, Espouse, and Husbande. For I cannot employ my loue vpon treasure, which may bee taken away from him, in whom richeffe of the minde doth fayle, and shall bee better content to see an honest Gentleman with little liuing, to be praysed and commended of ech Degree for his good Deedes, than a rich Carle cursed and detested of all the World. Thus mutch I say, and it is the summe of all my secretes, wherein I pray your councel and aduice. I know that some wil be offended with my choise, and the Lords my Brothers, specially the Cardinall will thincke it straunge, and receyue the same with ill Digesture, that mutch a do shall I haue to bee agreed with them and to remoue the grieve they shall conceyue against mee for this myne attempt: wherefore I would the same should secretly be kept, until without peril and daunger eyther of my self or him, whome I pretende to marry, I may publish and manyfest, not my loue but the mariage which I hope in God shall foone bee consummate and accomplished wyth one, whome I doe loue better than my self, and who as I ful well do know, doeth loue me better than his owne propre lyfe."

Mayster Bologna, which tyll then hearkned to the oration of the Duchesse without mouing, feeling himselfe touched so neare, and hearinge that his Lady had made hir approche for mariage, stode still astonnied, hys tongue not able to frame one word, onely fantastied a thousand chimeraes in the Ayre, and formed like number of imaginations in his minde, not able to coniecture what hee was, to whom the duchesse had vowed hir loue, and the possestion of hir beauty. He could not thinke that this ioy was prepared for hymselfe, for that his Lady spake no word of him, and he lesse durst open his mouth, and yet was wel assured that she loued him beyond measure. Notwithstanding knowing the ficklenesse and vnsutable heart of women, he sayd vnto himselfe that she would change hir mynde, for seeing him to be so great a Coward, as not to offer his seruice to a Lady by whom hee saw himselfe so many times both wantonly looked vpon, and intertwyned wyth some secretie more

than familiar. The Duchesse which was a fine and subtile dame, seeinge hir friend rapt with the passion, and standing still vnmooeable through feare, pale and amazed, as if hee had bene accused and condempned to dy, knew by that Countenaunce and astonishment of Bologna, that she was perfectly beloued of him: and so meaning not to suffer him any longer to contynue in that amaze, ne yet to further feare hym, wyth dissembed and fayned mariage of any other but wyth hym, she tooke hym by the hand, and beholdinge him with a wanton and luring eye, (in sutch fort as the curious Philosophers themselues would awake, if sutch a Lampe and Torche did burne wythin theyr studies,) she fayde thus vnto hym: “ Seignor Anthonio, I pray you be of good cheere, and torment not your selfe for any thing that I haue sayd: I know well, and of long time haue perceyued what good and faythful lone you beare mee, and with what affection you haue serued me, sithens you first came into my company. Thinke me not to bee so ignorant, but that I know ful wel by outward signes, what secret thoughts be hid in the inner heart: and that coniectures many times do geue me true and certayne knowledge of concealed things: and am not so foolish to thinke you to be so vndiscrete but that you haue marked my Countenaunce and maner, and thereby haue knownen that I haue bene more affectioned to you, than to any other: for that cause (fayde shee, strayninge hym by the hand very louingly, and wyth cheerefull colour in hir face) I fware vnto you, and doe promise that if you thinke meete, it shalbe none other but your self whom I wil haue, and desire to take to husband and lawful spouse, beyng assyred so much of you, as the loue which so longe time hath ben hidden and couered in our hartes, shall appeare by so euident prooфе, as onely death shal end and vndo the same.” The Gentleman hearing sutch sodain talke, and the assurance of that which he most wished for, albeit he saw the daunger extreme wherunto he launched himself by espoufing this great Ladie, and the enimies he should get by entring sutch alliance: notwythstandyng building vpon vaine hope, and thinking at length that the choler of the Aragon brother would passe away if they vnderstoode the maryage, determined to pursue the purpose, and not to refuse that greate preferment, being so pro-

digally offred: for which cause hee answered his Lady in this manner: "If it were in my power madame, to bryng to passe that, which I desire for your seruice by acknowledging the benefits and fauors which you depart vnto me, as my mind presenteth thanks for the same, I would think my self the happyest Gentleman that lyueth, and you the beste serued Prynceffe of the world. For one beter beloued (I dare presume to say, and so long as I liue wil affirme) is not to be found. If tyll thys time I delayed to open that which now I discouer vnto you, I beseeche you madame to impute it to the greatnesse of your estate, and to the duty of my calling and office in your houfe, being not seemelye for a seruaunte to talk of sutch secrets with his Lady and Mistrefse. And truely the payne which I haue indured to hold my peace, and to hyde my grief, hath ben more noysom to me than one hundred thousand like forrowes together, although it had bene lawfull to haue reuealed them to some trusty friend: I doe not denye madame, but of long time you did perceiue my follie and presumption, by addressing my minde so high, as to the Aragon bloud, and to sutch a princeffe as you be. And who can beguile the Eye of a louer, specially of hir, whose Paragon for good minde, wisedome and gentlenesse is not? And I confesse to you besides, that I haue most euidentlye perceiued how a certain loue hath lodged in your gracious hearte, wherwith you bare me greater affection, than you dyd to anye other within the compasse of your family. But what? great Ladyes heartes be fraught with secretees and conceitees of other effects than the Minds of Symple Women, which caused me to hope for none other guerdon of my loyal and faithful affection, than Deathe, and the same very short, and sith that little hope accompanied wyth great, nay, rather extreme passion, is not able to giue sufficient force, both to suffer and to stablish my heart with constancye. Nowe for so mutch as of your motion, grace, curtefie and liberality the same is offred, and that it pleaseſeth you to accept me for yours, I humblye beseeche you to dispose of me not as husband, but of one whych is, and shalbe your Seruaunt for euer, and sutch as is more ready to obey, than you to commaund. It resteth now Madame, to confyder how, and in what wise our affayres are to be directed, that thynges being in assurance, you may so liue

without perill and bruite of flaunderous tonges, as your good fame and honest report may continue without spot or blemish." Beholde the first Acte of this Tragedy, and the prouision of the fare which afterwardes sent them bothe to their graue, who immediatly gaue their mutual faith: and the houre was assignd the next day, that the faire Princesse should be in hir chamber alone, attended vpon with one onely Gentlewoman which had ben brought vp with her from the cradle, and was made priuy to the heauy mariage of thos two louers which was consummate in hir prefence. And for the present time they passed the same in words: for ratification whereof they went to bed togither: but the pain in the end was greater than the pleasure, and had ben better for them bothe, yea and also for the third, that they had shewed themselfes so wyse in the deede, as discrete in keeping silence of that which was don: for albeit theyr mariage was secrete, and therby politikely gouerned themselfes in their stelthes and robberyes of Loue, and that Bologna more ofte helde the state of the Stewarde of the House by Daye, than of Lorde of the same, and by Nyghte supplyed that Place, yet in the ende, the thynge was perceyued whych they defyred to bee closely kepte. And as it is impossyble to tyll and culture a fertyle Grounde, but that the same muste yelde some Fruycte, euen so the Duchesse after many pleasures (being ripe and plentifull) became with childe, which at the firste astonned the maried couple: neuerthelesse the same so well was prouided for, as the first Childbed was kept secret, and none did know thereof: the Childe was noured in the Towne, and the father desired to haue him named Frederick, for remembraunce of the parents of hys Wyfe. Nowe fortune whych lieth in dayly wayte and ambushment, and lyketh not that men should longe Loyter in Pleasure, and Passeftime, being enuious of futch prosperity, cramped so the Legges of our two Louers, as they must needes chaunge their Game, and learne some other practise: for somutch as the Duchesse beinge great with Childe agayne, and deliuered of a Girle, the businesse of the same was not so secretly done, but that it was discouered. And it sufficed not that the brute was noysed through Naples, but that the sound flew further of: As eche man doth know that Rumor hath many mouthes, who

wyth the multitude of hys Tongues, and Trumps, Proclaymeth in diuers and sundry places, the things which chaunce in al the Regions of the Earth: euen so that bablinge foole, caried the newes of that seconde Childbed to the eares of the Cardinall of Aragon the Duchesse brother, being then at Rome. Think what Ioy, and Pleasure the Aragon brothers had, by hearinge the report of their Sister's fact: I dare presume to say, that albeit they were extreinly wroth wyth this happened Slaunder, and wyth that dishonest fame which the Duchesse had gotten throughout Italy, yet farre greater was their sorrow and grieve for that they did not know what hee was, that so curteously was allied to their house, and in their loue had increased their Ligneage: and therefore swelling wyth despite, and rapt with fury to see themselfes so defamed by one of their Bloude, they purposed by all meanes whatsoeuer it cost them, to know the lucky Louer that had so wel tilled the Duchesse their Sister's field. Thus desirous to remoue that shame from before their eyes, and to bee reuenged of a wrong so notable, they sent Espials round about, and scouts to Naples, to view and spy the behauour and talke of the Duchesse, to settle some certayne Iudgement of him, which stealingly was become their Brother in lawe. The Duchesse Courte beinge in thys trouble, she dyd contynually perceiue in hir house, hir brothers men to marke hir countenance, and to note thofe that came thither to visite hir, and to whom she vsed greatest familiaritie, bicause it is impossible but that the fire, although it be raked vnder the ashes, must giue some heat: and albeit the two Louers vsed eche others company, without shewing any Sygne of their affection, yet they purposed to chaung theyr estate for a tyme, by yelding truce to their pleasures: yea, and although Bologna was a wise and prouident personage, fearing to be surprised vpon the facte, or that the Gentlewoman of the chamber corrupted with money, or forced by feare, should pronounce any matter to his hinderance or disaduantage, determined to absent himself from Naples, yet not so sodainly but that he made the Duchesse his faithfull Lady and companion priuy of his intent: and as they were secretly in their chamber together, he vsed these or sutch like words: "Madame, albeit the right good intent and vnstained conscience, is free from

faulfe, yet the iudgement of men hath further relation to the exterior appearance, than to vertue's force and innocency it self, as ignoraunt of the secrets of the thought: and so in things that be well done, wee must of necessity fall into the sentence of those, whom beastly affection rauifheth more, than ruled reason. You see the solempne watch and guarde whych the Seruaunts of the Lordes your Brøthers do within your house, and the suspition which they haue conceiued by reason of your seconde Childbed, and by what meanes they labor truely to know how your affayres procede, and things do passe. I feare not death where your seruice may be aduaunced, but yf herein the Maiden of your Chamber be not secrete, if shee bee corrupted, and if shee keepe not close that which shée ought to doe, it is not ignoraunt to you that it is the losse of my lyfe, and shall dye suspected to bee a Whoremonger and varlot, euen I, (I say) shal incurre that Peryll, whych am your true and Lawfull Husband. Thys separation chaunceth not by iustyce or desert, sith the cause is to ryghteous for vs: but rather your brethren will procure my death, when I shall thinke the same in greatest assurance. If I had to do but wyth one or two, I would not chaunge the place, ne march one step from Naples, but be assured, that a great band, and the same well armed will set vpon me: I pray you, madame, suffer me to retire for a time, for I am assured that when I am absent, they will neuer foile their hands or imbrue their fweardes in your Bloud. If I doubted any thing at all of Peryll touchyng your owne person, I had rather a hundred hundred tymes die in your Company, than lyue to see you no more: but out of doubt I am, that if our affaires were discouered, and they knew you to be begotten with Chyld by me, your safety would be prouided for wher I should sustaine the penaunce of the fact, committed without fault or finne: and therfore I am determined to goe from Naples, to order mine affaires, and to cause my Reueneue to be brought to the place of mine abode, and from thence to Ancona, vntyl it pleaseth God to mitigate the rage of your brethren, and recouer their good wills for consent to our mariage. But I meane not to do or conclude any thing without your aduise, and if thys intente doe not like you, gyue me Councell Madame, what I were beste to doe, that

both in Lyfe and Death you may knowe your faythfull seruaunt and louing Husband is ready to obey and please you." This good Lady hearing hir husband's discourse, vncertayne what to do, wept bitterly, as well for grief to lose his presence, as for that she felt her self with child the third time: the fighes and teares, the sobbes and heauy lookes, which she threwe forth vpon hir sorrowful husband, gaue sufficient witnesse of hir payne and Gryef: and if none had hard hir, I thynke her playntes would haue well expressed hir inwarde smarte of mynde. But like a wife Ladye feing the alleaged reasons of hir husbande, licensed him although agaynst hir minde, not wythout vtterance of these fewe Words, before hee went out of hir Chamber: "Deare husbande, if I were so well assured of the affectyon of my Brethren, as I am of my mayde's fidelity, I would entreat you not to leaue me alone: specially in the case I am, beyng wyth Chylde: but knowyng that to be iust and true whych you haue sayde, I am content to force my wyll for a certayne tyme, that hereafter we may lyue at rest together, ioyning our selues in the compayne of our Chyldren and Famlye, voyde of those troubles, whych greate Courts ordinarily beare within the compasse of their Palaces. Of one thing I must intreat you, that so often as you can by trusty messenger, you send me word and intelligence of your health and state, bicause the same shall bring vnto me greater pleasure and contentation, than the welfare of mine owne: and bicause also, vpon sutch occurrentes as shall chaunce, I may prouide for myne owne affaires, the surety of my self, and of our Children." In saying so, she embrased him very amorously, and he kissted hir with so greate sorrow and grief of heart, as the soule was ready out of his Body to take hir flight, forowful beyond measure so to leaue hir whome he loued, for the great curtefies and honor which hee had receiued at hir hands. In the end, fearing that the Aragon espials woulde come and discrie them in those priuities, Bologna tooke his leaue, and bad his Lady and spouse Farewell. And this was the seconde Acte of this Tragicall Historie, to see a fugitife husband secretly to mary, especially hir, vpon whome hee ought not so mutch as to loke but with feare and reuerence. Behold here (O ye folish louers) a Glasse of your lightnesse, and yee Women, the course of

your fond behauyor. It behoueth not the wife sodainly to execute their first motions and defyres of their heart for so mutch as they may be assured that pleasure is pursued so neare with a repentaunce so sharp to be suffred, and hard to be digested, as their voluptuousnesse shall vtterly discontent them. True it is, that mariages be don in heauen and performed in earth, but that saying may not be applied to fooles, which gourne them felues by carnall desires, whose scope is but pleasure, and the reward many times equall to their follie. Shall I be of opinion that a houshold seruaunt oughte to follicite, nay rather suborne the Daughter of his Lorde without punyshment, or that a vyle and abieet person dare to mount vpon a Prynces Bed? No, no, pollicye requyreth order in all, and eche wight ought to bee matched according to theyr qualytye, wythout makynge a Pastyme of it to couer theyr Follyes, and knowe not of what Force Loue and Desteny be, except the same be resyfted. A goodly thinge it is to Loue, but where reason loofeth Place, Loue is wythoute his effecte, and the sequele rage and Madnesse: leauwe we to discourse of those which beleue that they be constrainyd to folowe the Force of theyr Mynde, and may easilie subdue themselues to the Lawes of Vertue and Honesty, lyke one that thrusteth hys Heade into a Sack, and thynkes he can not get out: futch people do please themselues in theyr losse, and thinke all well that is noysome to their Health, daily folowing thyrs owne delyghtes. Come wee againe then to sir Bologna, who after he had left hys Wyfe in hir Castell, went to Naples, and hauing fesfed a rent vpon hir lands, and leuyed a good summe of Money, he repayred to Ancona a city of the patrimonye of the Romane church, whither hee caryed the two Chyldren, which he had of the Duchesse, causyng them to be brought vp with suche Dyligence and care, as it is to be thought a Father well affectyoned to hys Wyfe would doe, and who delyghted to see a Braunch of the Tree, that to hym was the best beloued Fruyet of the World. There he hyred a house for hys trayne, and for those that wayted vpon hys Wyfe, who in the meane tyme was in great care, and could not tell of what Woode to make hir arrowes, perceyuing that hir Belly began to swell, and grow to the tyme of hir deliuerie, seeing that from Day to Day, hir Brothers seruaunts were at hir back, voide

of Counsel and aduise, if one euenyng she had not spoken to the Gentlewoman of her chamber, touchyng the doubts and peryl wherein she was, not knowing how she might be deliuered from the same. That maiden was gentle and of a good mind and stomake, and loued hir mistrefse very derely, and seeing hir so amazed and tormenting hir self to death, mindyng to fray hir no further, ne to reproue hir of hir fault which could not be amended, but rather to prouyde for the daunger wherunto she had hedlong cast hir selfe, gaue hir this aduyse: "How now, Madame" (sayd shee,) "is that wyfdom whych from your Chyldhode hath ben so famyliar in you, dislodged from your brest in time when it ought chiefly to rest for incountryng of those mishaps that are comming vpon vs? think you to auoid the dangers, by thus tormentyng your self, except you set your hands to the work therby to gyue the repulse to aduerse fortune? I haue heard you many tymes speake of the Constancye and Force of Mynde, whych ought to shine in the deedes of Princeffes, more clerely than amongs those dames of baser house, and whych ought to make them appeare like the funne and the little starres: and yet I see you nowe aftonned, as though you had neuer forseene, that aduersity chaunceth so wel to catch the great within his clouches, as the base and simple fort. It is but now that you haue called to remembraunce that which might infue your mariage with sir Bologna? Did hys onely prefence assure you against the waits of fortune, and was it the thought of paines, feares and frights, which now turmoileth your dolorous mind? Ought you thus to vexe your selfe, when nede it is to thinke how to saue both your honor, and the fruicte wythin your intrailes? If your sorrow be so great ouer sir Bologna, and if you feare your childbed wil be descrid, why seeke you not meanes to attempt some voyage, for couering of the fact, to beguile the eyes of them whych so diligently do watch you? Doth your hearte faile you in that matter? whereof do you dreame? why sweat and freat you before you make me answer?" "Ah sweete hearte," (answered the Duchesse,) "if thou feltest the paine which I do suffer, thy tongue would not be so mutch at wyll, as thou shewest it now to bee for reprooфе of my small Constancie. I do sorrow specially for the causes which thou alleageſt, and

aboue all, for that I know well, that if my Brethren had never so little intelligence of my beyng with Chyld, I were vndone and my Lyfe at an end, and peraduenture poore Wench, thou shouldest beare the penaunce for my finne. But what way can I take, that stel these Candels may not giue light, and I voided of the Trayne whych ought to wayghte vpon my Brethren? I thinke if I should descend into Hell, they would know, whither any shadowe there were in loue with me. Now gesse if I should trauayle the Realme, or retire to any other place, whither they would let me liue in peace? Nothing lesse, for suspect they would, that the cause of my departure proceeded of desyre to liue at liberty, to dallye wyth hym, whom they Iudge to be other than my lawfull husbande: and it may so be, that as they bee Wicked and suspiciois, so will they doubte of my beyng wyth Chylde and thereby shall I bee farre more infortunate by trauaylyng, than here in miserie amidde myne anguishe: and you the rest that be keepers of my Councell, fall into greater Daunger, vpon whome no doubte they will bee reuenged: and fleshe themselues for your vnhappy waiting and attendance vpon vs." "Madame," sayd the bolde Maiden, "be not afraide, and followe mine aduise, for I hope that it shall be the meanes both to see your spouse, and to rid those troublesome verlets out of your house, and in like maner safely to deliuer you into good assuraunce." "Say your mind," quod the Ladye, "for it may bee, that I wyll gourne my self according to the same." "Mine aduise is then," sayd the Gentlewoman, "to let your housshould vnderstand, that you made a Vowe to visite the Holy Temple of our Lady of Loretto, (a Famous Pilgrimage in Italy) and that you commaund your Trayn to make themselues ready to wayt vpon you for accomlyshment of your deuotion, and from thence you shall take your Iourney to soiourne at Ancona, whither before you goe hence, you shall send your Moweables and Plate, wyth sutch Moneye as you thynke necessarye for furnyshing of your Charges: and afterwards God will performe the rest, and through his holy mercy will guyde and direct al your affaires." The Duchesse hearing the mayden speake her good aduise and amazed of her sodayne inuention, could not forbear to imbrace and kyss hir, bleffing the houre wherein she was borne, and that euer she

chaunced into hir Companye, to whome afterwards shee sayd: "My Wenche, I had well determined to gyue ouer myne estate and Noble porte, ioyfully to lyue a simple Gentlewoman with my deare and welbeloued Husband, but I could not deuyse how I should conueniently departe thys countrey without suspition of some folly: and sith that thou hast so well instructed mee for brynging that same to passe, I promyse thee that so diligentlye by counsel shal be performed, as I see the same to be right good and necessary: for rather had I see my husband, beyng alone without title of Duchesse or great Lady, than to liue without him beautified with the graces and Names of Honor and preheminence." This deuised plot was no soner grounded, but she gaue order for execution of the same, and brought it to passe with sutch dexterity as the Ladye in lesse than viii. Dayes had conueyed and fente the most part of hir Moueables, and specially the chyefest and beste to Ancona, taking in the meane time hir way towards Loretto after she had bruted hir solempne vow made for that Pilgrimage. It was not sufficient for this folysh Woman to take a Husband more to glut hir libidinous appetite, than for other occasion, except shee added to hir finne another excreable impietie, making holy places and dueties of deuotion, to be as it were the shadowes of hir folly. But let vs consider the force of Louers rage, which so soone as it hath seased vpon the minds of men, we see how maruellous be the effects thereof, and with what straite and puissaunce that madnesse subdueth the wife and strongest worldlings: who woulde thinke that a great Lady besides the abandoning hir estate, hir goodes and Chyld, would haue mispryed hir honor and reputation, to follow like a vagabond, a pore and simple Gentleman, and him besides that was the household seruaunt of hir Courte? and yet you see this great and mighty Duchesse trot and run after the Male, like a female Wolfe or Lionesse (when they goe to fault,) and forget the Noble bloud of Aragon whereof she was descended, to couple hir self almost with the simplest person of all the trimmest Gentlemen of Naples. But turne we not the example of follies to be a matter of consequnce: for if one or two become bankrupt of theyr honor, it followeth not, good Ladyes, that theyr fact should serue for a matche to your

deserts, and mutch lesse a patron for you to folow. These Hystories be not wryten to trayne and trap you to purfue the thousand thousand slippery sleightes of Loue's gallantise, but rather carefullly to warne you to behold the semblable faultes, and to serue for a drugge to dyscharge the Poyson which guaweth and fretteth the integrytie and soundnesse of the soule. The wyse and skilfull Apothecary or compositor of drugges, dresseth Vipers flesh to purge the patyent from hote corrupted bloud which conceyueth and engendreth Leprosie within hys Body. In lyke manner, the fonde loue and wycked rybauldry of Semiramis, Pasiphae, Messalina, Faustina, and Romilda is shewed in wryt, that euery of you maye feare to be numbred and recorded amongs sutch common and dis honourable women. You Princes and great Lords read the follies of Paris, the adulteries of Hercules, the dainty and effeminate life of Sardanapalus, the tiranny of Phalaris, Bufiris, or Dyonisius of Sicile, and see the history of Tiberius, Nero, Caligula, Domitian, and Heliogabalus, and spare not to recompte them amongs our wanton youthes which foile themselues villaines more filthily than the swine do in the durt: al this intendeth it an instruction for your youth to follow the infection and whoredome of those Monsters? Better it were all those bokes were drenched in bottom lesse depth of seas, than Christian life by their meanes should be corrupted: but the example of the wicked is induced for to eschue and auoid them, as the life of the good and honest is remembred to frame and addresse our behauior in this world to be praiseworthy and commended: otherwyse the holiness of sacred writ shoud serue for an argument to the vnthrifty and luxurios to confirm and approue their beastly and licencios wickednesse. Come we againe then to our purpose: the good Pilgrime of Loretto went forth hir voyage to atchieue hir deuotions, by visitng the Saint for whose Reliques she was departed the country of the Duke hir Sonne: when she had done hir suffrages at Loretto, hir people thought hir voyaige to be at an end, and that she would haue returned again into hir Countrey: but she said vnto them, that for somutch as she was so neare Ancona, being but xv. myles of, she would not retyre but she had seen that auncient and goodlye city, which diuers Hystories do greatly recommend, as wel for the

antiquitie, as for the pleasant seat therof. Al were of hir aduise, and went forward to see the antiquities of Ancona, and she to renue the pleasures whych she had before begon with hir Bologna, who was aduertised of all hir determination, restyng now like a God, possessed with the Iewels and rycheffe of the Duchesse, and had taken a fayre palace in the great Streat of the City, by the gate wherof the traine of hys Lady must passe. The Harbinger of the Duchesse posted before to take vp lodging for the train, but Bologna offred vnto hym hys Palace for the Ladye. So Bologna whych was already welbeloued in Ancona, and newly entred Amytye and greate Aquayntaunce wyth the Gentlemen of the Cytye, wyth a goodlye troupe of them, wente forthe to meete hys Wyfe, to whom he presented his houfe, and besought hir that shee and hir trayne would vouchsafe to lodge there. She receiued the same very thankfully, and withdrew hir selfe vnto his house, who conducted hir thither, not as a husband, but like him that was hir humble and affectionate seruaunte. But what needeth greate dyscourse of Woordes? The duchesse knowing that it was impossible but eche man must be priuy to hir facte, and know what secretes hath passed betweene hir and hir Husband, to the ende that no other opynyon of hir Childebed should be conceyued, but that whych was good and Honest, and done synce the accomplayshment of the Maryage, the morrow after hir arryuall to Ancona, assembled all her Trayne in the Hall, of purpose no longer to keepe cloase that sir Bologna was hir Husbande, and that alreadye shee had had two Chyldren by him, and agayne was great with childe, with a third. And when they were come togither after dynner, in that presence of hir husbande, shee vsed vnto them these woordes: "Gentlemen, and al ye my trusty and louyng seruaunts, hyghe tyme it is to manyfest to euery of you, the thing which hath ben done before the Face, and in the presence of hym who knoweth the most obscure and hydden secretes of our thoughts. And needfull it is not to keepe silente that which is neyther euyll done ne hurtfull to any person: If things myght be kept secrete and styl remaine vñknowen, except they were declared by the doers of them, yet would not I commit the wrong in concealyng that, which to dysconer vnto you doth greatly delite me, and deliuereth my mind

from exceeding grief, in futch wife as if the flames of my desire could break out with futch violence, as the fire hath taken heate within my mind, ye should see the fmoke mount vp with greater smoulder than that which the mount Gibel doeth vomit forth at certayne seafons of the yeare. And to the intent I may not keepe you long in this suspect, this secret fire wythin my Heart, and that which I shal cause to flame in open ayre, is a certain opinion which I conceiue for a mariage by me made certain yeares past, at what time I chose and wedded a husband to my fantasie and liking, desirous no longer to liue in Widow state, being vnwilling to do the thing that should preiudice and hurt my conscience. The same is done, and yet in one thing I haue offended, which is by long keepyng secrete the performed mariage: for the wycked brute dispearced through the realme by reason of my childbed, one yeare past, hath displeased some: howbeit my conscience receiueth comforte, for that the same is free from fault or blot. Now shall ye know therefore what he is, whom I acknowledg for my Lord and spouse, and who it is that lawfully hath me espoused in the prefence of this Gentlewoman here present, which is the witnesse of our Nuptials and accorde of mariage. This gentleman also Antonio Bologna, is he to whom I haue sworn and giuen my faith, and hee againe to mee hath ingaged his. He it is whom I accompt for my spouse and husband, (and with whome henceforth) I meane to rest and contynue. In consideration whereof, if there be any heere amongs you all, that shal mislike of my choyse, and is willing to wayt vpon my sonne the Duke, I meane not to let them of their intent, prayinge them faithfully to serue him, and to be careful of his person, and to be vnto him so honest and loyall, as they haue bene to me so longe as I was their mistresse. But if any of you desire stil to make your abode wyth me, to be partakers of my Wealth and woe, I will so entartayne them as they shall haue good cause to be contented, if not let them departe hence to Malfi, and the steward shal prouide for them according to their degré: for touching my self I do mind no more to be termed an infamous Duchesse: rather would I be honored wyth the Tytle of a symple Gentlewoman, or wyth that estate whych shee can haue that hath an honest husband, and wyth whom she holdeth

faithfull and loyall company, than reuerenced with the glory of a Prynceſſe, ſubieſt to the deſpite of flaundrous tongues. Ye know" (ſaid ſhe to Bologna) "what hath paſſed betwene vs, and God is the witneſſe of the integrity of my Conſcyence, wherfore I pray you bryng forth our Chyldren, that eche Man may beholde the Fruyctes rayfed of our allyance." Hauyng ſpoken thoſe Woordes, and the Chyldren broughte forthe into the Hall, all the compayne ſtoode ſtyll ſo aſtonned wyth that newe ſuccesse and tale, as though hornes ſodainly had ſtarted forth their heads, and reſted vnmoueable and amazd, like the great marble piller of Rome called Pasquile, for ſo muſch as they neuer thought, ne conieuctured that Bologna was the ſucceffor of the duke of Malfi in his mariage bed. This was the preparatiue of the catastrophe and bloody end of this tragedie. For of all the Ducheffe ſeruaunts, there was not one that was willing to continue wyth theyr auncient miſtreſſe, who with the faithfull maiden of hir chamber remained at Ancona, enioyng the ioyful embracements of hir Hufbande, in all futch Pleaſure and Delyghts as they doe, whych hauyng lyued in fear, be ſet at liberty, and out of al ſuſpition, plunged in a ſea of ioy, and fleting in the quiet calme of al paſſetime, where Bologna had none other care, but how to please his beſt beloued, and ſhe ſtudied nothing elſe but how to loue and obey him, as the wyfe ought to doe hir hufband. But thys fayre Weather laſted not long, for as the ioyes of men do not long endure but waſt in lyttle time, ſo bee the delights of louers leſſe firme and ſtedefaſt and paſſe away almoſt in one moment of an houre. Now the ſeruaunts of the Ducheffe which wer retired, and durſt tary no longer with hir, fearing the fury of the cardinal of Aragon brother to the Lady, the verye Day they departed from Ancona, deuized amoung themſelues that one of them ſhould ride in poſt to Rome, to aduertife the cardinal of the ladys maryage, to the intente that the Aragon brethren myght conceiue no cauſe to ſeke reuenge of theyr diſloyalty. That determination ſpedily was accoſtomed, one poſting towardes Rome, and the reſt galloping to the countrye Caſtles of the duke. These newes reported to the Cardinal and his brother, it may be conieuctured how gryeuouſly they toke the ſame, and that they were not able to di geſt them wyth modeſtye, the yongeſt

of the brethren, yalped forth a Thousand Cursles and despytes, agaynste the symple sexe of womankind. “Ha,” said the Prince (transported with choler, and driuen into deadly furie) “what law is able to punish or restrayne the folysh indiscretion of a Woman, that yeldeth hir self to hir own desires? What shame is able to brydle and withdrawe a Woman from hir mind and madnesse? Or with what fear is it possible to snaffle them from execution of theyr filthinessse? Ther is no beast be he neuer so wilde, but man sometime may tame, and bring to his lure and order. The force and diligence of Man is able to Make mylde the stronge and Proude, and to ouertake the swyftest Beaste and Foule, or otherwyse to attayne the hyghest and deepest things of the world: but this incarnate diuelish beaste the Woman, no force can subdue hir, no swiftnesse can approch hir mobylity, no good mind is able to prevent hir sleightes and deceites, they seem to be procreated and borne againte all order of Nature, and to liue withoute Lawe, whych gouerneth al other things indued with some reasoun and vnderstanding. But howe great abomination is this, that a Gentlewoman of futch a house as ours is, hath forgotten hir estate, and the greatnesse of hir deceased husband, with the hope of the toward youthe of the Duke hir sonne and our Nephew. Ah, false and vile bytch, I sweare by the Almighty God and by his blessed wounds, that if I can catch thee, and that wicked knaue thy chosen mate, I wil pype ye both futch a wofull galiard, as in your imbrace-ments ye neuer felt like ioy and mirthe. I wil make ye daunce futch a bloody bargenet, as your whorish heate for euer shall be cooled. What abuse haue they committed vnder title of mariage, whych was so secretly don, as their children do witnesse their lecherous loue, but theyr promise of faith was made in open aire, and serueth for a cloke and visarde of their moste filthy whoredom. And what if mariage was concluded, be we of so little respect, as the carion beast could not vouchsafe to aduertise vs of hir entent? Or is Bologna a man worthy to be allied or mingled with the roial bloud of Aragon and Caſtille? No, no, be he neuer so good a gentleman, his race agreeth not with kingly state. But I make to God a vow, that neuer wyll I take one foun̄d and restful slepe, vntill I haue dispatched that infamous fact from our bloud, and

that the caitif whoremonger be vsed according to his desert." The cardinal also was out of quiet, grinding his teeth togither, chattering forth of his Spanish mosel Jack an Apes Pater-noster, promising no better vsage to their Bologna than hys yonger brother did. And the better to intrap them both (without further sturre for that time) they sent to the Lord Gismondo Gonfago the Cardinal of Mantua, than Legate for pope Iulius the second at Ancona, at whose hands they enjoyed futch friendship, as Bologna and all his family were commaunded spedily to auoid the city. But for al that the Legat was able to do, of long time he could not preuail, Bologna had so greate intelligence wythin Ancona. Neuerthelesse whiles hee differred his departure, he caused the most part of his trayne, his Children and goods to be conueyed to Siena, an auncient City of Thoscane, which for the state and liberties, had long time bin at warres with the Florentines, in futch wyse as the very fame day that newes came to Bologna that hee should depart the City within xv. daies, hee was ready, and mounted on horseback to take hys flight to Siena, whych brake for sorrow the hearts of the Aragon brethren, seeinge that they were deceiued, and frustrate of their intent, bicause they purposed by the way to apprehend Bologna, and to cut him in peeces. But what? The tyme of his hard lucke was not yet expired, and so the marche from Ancona, serued not for the Theatre of thosse two infortunate louers ouerthrow, who certaine moneths liued in peace in Thoscane. The Cardinall night nor day did sleepe, and his brother still did wayt to performe hys othe of reuenge. And seeinge their enimy out of feare, they dispatched a post to Alfonso Castruccio, the cardinall of Siena, to entreat the lord Borgliefe, cheyfe of the Seigniory there, that their Syster, and Bologna should be banished the Countrey, and limits of that City, which wyth small suite was brought to passe. These two infortunate, Husband and Wyfe, were chafid from all places, and so vnlucky as whilom Achaftus was when he was accursed, or Oedipus, after his father's death, and incestuous mariage wyth his mother, vncertayne to what Sainct to vow themselues, and to what place to take their flight. In the ende they determined to goe to Venice, but first to Ramagna, there to imbarke themselues for to retyre in faulfty to the citty

enuironned wyth the Sea Adriaticum, the richeſt in Europa. But the poore ſoules made their reconinge there wythout their hoaſte, faylinge halfe the price of their bankeſt. For being vpon the territory of Forly, one of the trayne a farre of, did ſee a troupe of horfemen galloping towardes their company, which by their countenaunce ſhewed no ſigne of peace or amity at all, which made them conider that it was ſome ambuſh of theiſr Enimyes. The Neapolitan gentleman ſeeing the onſet bendinge vpon them, began to feare death, not for that hee cared at al for his miſhaf, and ruine, but his heart began to cleaue for heauineſſe to ſee his Wyfe and little Children ready to be muſtered, and ferue for the paſſetyme of the Aragon Brethren's eyes, for whoſe ſakes he knew himſelfe already predeſtinate to dy, and that for deſpite of him, and to acceſſate his death by the ouerthrow of hys Wyfe and Children, he was aſſured that they would diſpatch them all before his face and preſence. But what is there to be done, where counſell and meaſes to eſcape do fayle? Full of teares therefore, aſtoniſhment and feare, he expeſted death ſo cruell as man could deuife, and was already determiſed to ſuffer the fame with good couraſe, for any thing that the Ducheffe could ſay vnto him. He miſt well haue ſaued himſelf and his eldeſt ſonne by flight, being both wel mounted vpon two good Turkey horfes, whiche ran ſo fast, as the quarrel out of a Croſbow. But he loued to mutch his wife and children, and woulde kepe them company both in lyfe and death. In th'ende the good Lady ſayd vnto him: "Sir, for all the ioyes and pleaſures which you can do me, for God's fake ſauē your ſelfe and the litle infant next you, who can well indure the galloping of the horſe. For ſure I am, that you being out of our company, we ſhall not neede to feare any hurt: but if you do tary, you wil be the cauſe of the ruine and ouerthrow of vs all, and we ſhal receiue thereby no profit or aduaunſage: take this purſe therefore, and ſauē yourſelf, attending better fortune in time to come." The poore Gentleman Bologna knowing that his wife had pronounced reaſon, and fearing that it was iſpoſſible from that time forth that ſhe or hir Traine could eſcape their hands, taking leauue of hir, and kiſſing his chyldren not forgoſting the money which ſhe offred vnto him, willed his fer-

uants to faue themselues by futch meanes as they thought best. So gieuing spurs vnto his horse, he began to fly amayne, and his eldest sonne seeing his father gone, began to followe in like sorte: and so for that time they two were faued by breaking of the intended ill luck lyke to light vpon them. And where he thought to rescue himselfe at Venice, he turned another way, and by great Journeys arriued at Millan. In the meane time the horfemen were approched neere the Duchesse, who seeing that Bologna had faued himselfe, very courteously began to speake vnto the lady, were it that the Aragon brethren had geuen theym that charge, or feared that the Lady would trouble them with hir importunate Cries, and Lamentations. One therefore amongs the Troupe sayde thus vnto hir: "Madam, we be commaunded by the Lordes your brethren, to conduct you home vnto your house, that you may receiue agayne the Gouernment of the Duchy, and the order of the Duke your sonne, and do maruell very mucht at your folly, for giuing your selfe thus to wander the Countrey after a man of so final reputation as Bologna is, who when he had glutted his lusting lecherous minde with the comelines of your noble Personage, wil despoyle you of your goods and honour, and then take his Legs into som straung countrey." The simple Lady, albeit greeuous it was vnto hir to heare futch speech of hir husband, yet helde hir peace and dissembled what she thought, glad and wel contented with the curtesy done vnto hir, fearinge before that they came to kyll hir and thought hirselfe already discharged, hopinge vpon their courteous Dealinges, that shee, and hir Chyldren from that tyme forth should lyue in good assuraunce. But she was greatly deceyued, and knew within shorte space after, the good will that hir Brethren bare hir: for so soone as these Gallants had conducted hir into the kyngdome of Naples, to one of the Castels of hir sonne, she was committed to pryon wyth hir chyldren, and she also that was the secretary of hir infortunate mariage. Til this time Fortune was contented to proceede with indifferent quiet against those Louers, but henceforth yee shall heare the Iffue of theyr little prosperous loue, and how pleasure hauing blinded them, neuer forsooke them vntil it had giuen them the ouerthrow. It booteth not heere to recite any Fables or Hyfstories, contenting my

self that Ladies do reade wythout to many weeping teares, the pitiful end of that myserable princesse, who seeing hir selfe a Prisoner in the company of hir little chyldren and welbeloued Mayden, paciently liued in hope to see hir Brethren appaysed, comforting hir selfe for the escape of hir husband out of the hands of his mortal foes. But hir assurance was changed into an horrible feare and hir hope to no expectation of surety, when certayne dayes after hir imprisonment, hir gaoler came in, and sayde vnto hir: "Madame, I do aduise you henceforth to consider and examine your Conscience, for so much as I suppose that euen thys very day your Lyfe shall be taken from you." I leaue for you to thinke what horrour, and traunce assayled the feeble heart of this poore Lady, and wyth what eares she receyued that cruell mesage, but hir cryes, and moanes together with hir fighes and lamentations declared with what chere she receyued the aduertisement. "Alas" (sayd she) "is it possible that my brethren shoulde so far forget themselues, as for a fact nothing preiudicial vnto them, cruelly to put to death their innocent Sister, and to imbrue the memory of their fact, in the bloud of one which neuer did offend them? Must I against al right and equity be put to death before the Iudge or Maiestrate haue made triall of my lyfe, and knowne the righteousesse of my cause? Ah God, most rightfull and bountifull father, beholde the mallice of my Brethren, and the Tyrannous cruelty of those which wrongfully doe seeke my bloud. Is it a sinne to marry? Is it a fault to fly, and auoide the sinne of Whoredome? What Lawes be these, where marriage bed, and ioyned matrimony is pursued wyth lyke feuerity, that Murder, Theft, and Aduoutry are? And what Christianity in a Cardinall, to shed the bloud which hee ought to defend? What profession is thys, to assayle the innocent by the hygh way fide, and to reue them of lyfe in place to punish Theeues and Murderers? O Lord God thou art iust, and dost al things in equity, I see wel that I haue trespassed against thy maiesy in some more notoryous crime than in marriage: I most humbly therefore beseech thee to haue compassion on mee, and to pardon myne offences, accepting the confession, and repentaunce of mee thine humble seruaunt for satissfaction of my finnes, which it pleased thee to washe away in

the precious bloud of thy sonne our Sauiour, that being so purified, I may appeare at the holy banquet in thy glorious kingdome." When shee had thus finished hir prayer, two or three of the ministers which had taken hir besides Forly, came in, and said vnto hir: "Now Madame make ready your selfe to goe to God, for beholde your houre is come." "Prayfed be that God" (sayd she) "for the wealth and woe that it pleaseth hym to send vs. But I beseech you my friendes to haue pitty vpon these lyttle Babes and innocent creatures: let them not feele the smarte whych I am assured my Brethren beare agaynst their Poore vnhappy Father." "Well well, madame," sayd they, "we wil conuey them to sutch place as they shal not want." "I also recommend vnto you" (quod she) "this pore imprisoned mayden, and entreate hir well, in consideracion of hir good service done to the infortunate Duchesse of Malfi." As she had ended those words, the two Ruffians did put a coarde about her neck, and strangled hir. The mayden seeing the pitious Tragedy commensed vpon hir maystresse, cried out a maine, cursing the cruell malice of those tormenters, and besought God to be witnesse of the same, and crying out vpon his diuine Maies-ty, she humbly praied unto him to bend hys iudgement agaynst them which causelesse (being no Magistrates,) had killed so innocent creatures. "Reason it is" (sayd one of the Tyrants) "that thou be partaker of thy maystresse innocency, sith thou haft bene so faythfull a Minister, and messenger of hir fleshly follies." And sodaynly caught hir by the bayre of the head, and in steade of a Carcanet placed a roape about her necke. "How nowe" (quoth shee,) "is this the promised fayth you made vnto my lady?" But thofe words flew into the Ayre wyth hir Soule, in company of the myserable Duchesse. And now hearken the most sorowfull scene of all the Tragedy. The little Chyldren which had seene all this furious game executed vpon their mother and hir mayde, as nature prouoked them, or as some presage of their myshap might leade them thereunto, kneeled vpon their knees before those Tyrants, and embracinge their Legges, wayled in sutch wyse, as I thinke that any other, except a pitilesse heart spoyled of all humanity, would haue had compassion. And impossible it was for them, to vnfolde the embracementes of those innocent creatures,

whych seemed to foreiudge their death by Sauage lookes and Coun-
tenaunce of those Roysters: whereby I think that needes it must
be confessed, that nature hath in hir selfe, and in vs imprinted
some figne of diuination, and specially at the Houre and tyme of
death, so as the very beastes doe feele some forewarninges, although
they see neyther Sworde, nor Staffe, and indeuoure to auoyde the
cruell Passage of a thynge so Fearefull, as the separation of two
thynges so neerely vnyted, euen the Body, and Soule, which for
the motion that chaunceth at the very instant, sheweth how na-
ture is constrained in that monstrous diuision, and more than hor-
rible ouerthrow. But who can appease a heart determined to
worke mischief, and hath sworne the death of another forced there-
unto by some special commaundment? The Aragon brethren
ment hereby nothing else, but to roote out the whole name and
race of Bologna. And therfore the two ministers of iniquity did
like murder and slaughter vpon those two tender babes, as they
had done before vpon their mother not without some motion of
horror, for an act so detestable. Behold here how far the cruelty
of man extendeth, when it coueteth nothing else but vengeance,
and marke what exceffyue choler the mind of them produceth,
whych suffer themselues to be forced and ouerwhelmed with fury.
Leave we apart the cruelty of Euchrates, the Sonne of the kinge
of Bactria, and of Phraates the Sonne of the Persian Prynce, of
Timon of Athenes, and of an infinit number of those which were
rulers and gouernors of the Empyre of Rome: and let vs match
with these Aragon brethren, one Vitoldus Duke of Lituania, the
cruelty of whom, constrained his own subiects to hang themselues
for feare leaste they should fall into his furious and bloody hands.
We may confess also these brutall brethren to be more butcherly
than euer Otho Erle of Monferrato, and prince of Vrbin was, who
caused a yeoman of his chamber to be wrapped in a sheete pou-
dred with fulpher and brimstone, and afterwards kindled with a
Candle, was scalded and consumed to death, bicause he waked not
at an hour by him appointed: let vs not excuse them also from
some affinity with Manfredus the sonne of Henry the second em-
peror, who smoldered hys own father, being an old man, between
two Courlets. These former furies might haue some excuse to

couer their cruelty, but these had no other color but a certain beastly madnesse which moued them to kil those litle Children their nephews, who by no means could preiudice or anoy the Duke of Malfi or his title, in the succeſſion of his Duchie, the mother hauing withdrawen hir goods, and had her dowrie asſigned hir: but a wicked hart wrapt in malice must nedes bring forth ſemblable workes. In the time of these murders the infortunate Louer kept himſelf at Millan with his ſonne Frederick, and vowed himſelf to the Lord Siluio Sauello, who that tyme besieged the Caſtell of Millan, in the behalf of Maximilian Sforcia, which in the end he conquered and recouered by composition wyth the French within. But that charge being atchieued, the general Sauello marched from thence to Cremona with hys Campe, whyther Bologna durſt not folow, but repayred to the Marquize of Britone, in whych tyme the Aragon brethren ſo wroughte as hys goods were confiſcate at Naples, and he dryuen to hys ſhiftes to vſe the Golden Duckates which the Ducheffe gaue him to relieue himſelfe at Millan, whose Death althouge it were aduertised by many, yet hee could not be perſuaded to beleue the ſame, for that diuers which went about to betray him, and feared he ſhoulde flie from Millan, kept his beake vnder the water, (as the Prouerb is,) and assured him both of the Lyfe and welfare of his Spouse, and that ſhortly his Brethren in law would be reconciled because many Noble men fauored hym well, and defird his returne home to hys countrey. Fed and filled with that vaine hope, he remayned more than a yeaſe at Millan, frequentyng good company, who was well entartayned of the rycheſt marchaunts and beſt Gentlemen of the Cytte: and aboue all other, he had famyliar acceſſe to the house of the Ladye Hippolita Bentiuoglia, where vpon a Daye after Dynner, takyng hys lute in hand, whereon he could excedyngly well play, he began to ſing a ſonnet, whych he had compoſed vpon the diſcourse of hys myſſortune, the tenor whereof inſueth.

The Song of Antonio Bologna, the husband of the Ducheffe of Malfi.
If loue, the death, or tract of tyme, haue measured my diſtreſſe,
Or if my beatinge forrowes may my languor well exprefſe:
Then loue come ſoone to viſit me, which moſt my heart defires,

And so my dolor findes fome ease, through flames of fanfies fires.
The time runnes out his rollinge course, for to prolong myne ease,
To th' end I shall enjoy my loue, and heart himselfe appeafe,
A cruell darte brings happy death, my soule then rest shall find:
And sleepinge body vnder Toumbe, shall dreame time out of
mynde,

And yet the Loue, the Time, nor Death, lookes not how I decreace:
Nor geueth eare to any thinge, of this my wofull peace.
Full farre I am from my good hap, or halfe the ioye I craue,
Whereby I chaung my state wyth teares, and draw full neere
my graue.

The courteous Gods that giues me lyfe, now mooues the Planets all:
For to arrest my groning ghoſt, and hence my sprite to call.
Yet from them still I am separed, by thinges vnequall heere,
Not ment the Gods may be vniuft, that breeds my chaunging
cheere.

For they prouide by their foresight, that none shall doe me harme:
But ſhe whose blaſing beauty bright, hath brought me in a
charme.

My miſtreſſe hath the powre alone, to rid me from this woe:
Whose thrall I am, for whom I die, to whom my sprite ſhall goe.
Away my ſoule, goe from the griefs, that thee opprefſeth ſtill,
And let thy dolor witneſſe beare, how much I want my will.
For ſince that loue and death himſelfe, delights in guiltleſſe bloud,
Let time tranſport my troubled ſprite, where deſtny ſeemeth
good.

This ſong ended, the poor Gentleman could not forbear from
pouring forth his luke warme Tears, which abundantly ran downe
his heauy Face, and his pantinge Sighes truly diſcouered the
alteration of his mynde, whych mooued ech wight of that aſſembly
to pity his mournful State: and one ſpecially of no acquaintance,
and yet knew the deuifes that the Aragon Brethren had trayned
and contriued againſt hym: that vnaquaynted gentleman his
name was Delio, one very well learned, and of trim inuention,
who very excellently hath endited in the Italian vulgar tongue.
This Delio knowing the Gentleman to be hufband to the deceaſed

Duchesse of Malfi, came vnto him, and taking him afide, said: "Sir, albeit I haue no great acquaintance with you, this being the first time that euer I saw you, to my remembrance, so it is, that vertue hath sutch force, and maketh gentle myndes so amorous of their like, as when they doe beholde ech other, they feele them-selues coupled as it were in a bande of mindes, that impossible it is to diuide the same: now knowinge what you be, and the good and commendable qualities in you, I coumpt it my duty to reueale that which may chaunce to breede you damage. Know you then, that I of late was in company with a Noble man of Naples, whych is in this Citty, banded with a certaine company of horsemen, who tolde mee that he had a speciall charge to kill you, and therefore prayed me (as it seemed) to require you not to come in his fight, to the intent he might not be constrayned to doe that which should offend his Conscience, and grieue the same all the dayes of his life: morcouer I haue worse Tidings to tell you: the Duchesse your Wyfe deade by violent hand in prisone, and the most part of them that were in hir company: besides this assure your selfe, that if you doe not take heede to that which this Neapolitane Capitnyne hath differred, other wyll doe and execute the same. This mutch I haue thought good to tell you, bicause it would very mutch grieue me, that a Gentleman so excellent as you be, should be murdered in that myserable wyse, and I should deeme my selfe vnworthy of lyfe, if knowing these practises I should diffemble the same." Whereunto Bologna aunswered: "Syr Delio, I am greatly bound vnto you, and geue you hearty thankes for the good will you beare me. But in the conspiracy of the brethren of Aragon, and of the death of my lady, you be deceyued, and some haue giuen you wrong intelligence: for within these two dayes I receyued letters from Naples, wherein I am aduertised, that the right honorable and reuerend Cardinal and his Brother be almost appeased, and that my goods shall bee rendred agayne, and my dear Wyfe restored." "Ah syr," sayde Delio, "how you be beguiled and Fedde wyth Follyes, and nourished with sleights of Court: assure your selfe that they which write these trifles, make sutch shamefull sale of your lyfe, as the Butcher doth of his flesh in the Shambles, and so wickedly betray you, as impossible it is to inuent

a treason more detestable : but bethinke you well thereof." When he had sayd so, he tooke hys leauue, and ioyned hymselfe in company of fine and pregaunt Wyttes, there assembled together. In the meane tyme, the cruell Spirite of the Aragon Brethren were not yet appeased with the former murders, but needes must finish the last act of Bologna hys Tragedy by losse of hys Lyfe, to keepe hys Wyfe and Chyldren company, so well in an other Worlde as he was vnited with them in Loue in this frayle and transitory passage. The Neapolitan gentleman before spoken of by Delio, whych had taken this enterprise to satissie the barbarous Cardinall to berieue his Countreyman of lyfe, hauinge chaunged his mynde, and differring from day to day to sorte the same to effect, it chaunced that a Lombarde of larger Conscience than the other, inueigled with Couetousnesse, and hired for ready Money, practised the death of the Duchesse poore husband: this bloudy beaste was called Daniel de Bozola that had charge of a certayne bande of footemen in Millan. Thys newe Iudas and pestilent manqueller, who wythin certayne dayes after knowinge that Bologna often-times Repayred to heare Seruice at the Church and conuent of S. Fraunces, secretly conueyed himselfe in ambush, hard besides the church of S. Iames, (being accompanied wyth a certayne troupe of Souldiers) to assayle infortunate Bologna, who was sooner slayne than hee was able to thinke vpon defence, and whose miifhap was futch, as hee whych kylled hym had good leysure to saue hymselfe by reason of the little pursuite made after hym. Beholde heere the Noble fact of a Cardinall, and what sauuer it hath of Christian purity, to commit a slaughter for a fact done many yeares past vpon a poore Gentleman which neuer thought him hurt. Is thys the sweete obseruation of the Apostles, of whom they vaunt themselues to be the Successours and followers? And yet we cannot finde nor reade, that the Apostles, or those that stopt in their trade of lyfe, hyred Ruffians, and Murderers to cut the Throates of them which did them hurt. But what? it was in the tyme of Iulius the second, who was more martiall than Christian, and loued better to shed bloud than giue blessing to the people. Sutch ende had the infortunate mariage of him, whych ought to haue contented hymselfe wyth that degree and honor that

he had acquired by the deedes and glory of his vertues, so mutch by ech wight recommended: we ought neuer to climb higher than our force permitteth, ne yet surmount the bounds of duty, and lesse suffer our felues to be haled fondly forth with desire of brutal sensuality. Which sinne is of futch nature, that he neuer giueth ouer the party whom he maystereth, vntil he hath brought him to the shame of some Notable Folly. You see the miserable discourse of a Princesse loue, that was not very wyse, and of a Gentleman that had forgotten his estate, which ought to serue for a lookinge Glasse to them which bee ouer hardy in makinge Enterpris, and doe not measure their Ability wyth the greatnesse of their Attempts: where they ought to mayntayne themselues in reputation, and beare the title of well aduised: foreseeing their ruine to be example for all posterity, as may bee seene by the death of Bologna, and by all them which sprang of him, and of his infortunate

Spouse his Lady and Maistresse. But we haue discoursed inough hereof, sith diuersity of other hystories do call vs to bring the same in place, which were not mutch more happy than the bloudy end of those, whose Hystory ye haue already heard.

THE TWENTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The disordered Lyfe of the Countesse of Celant, and how shee (causinge the County of Mafino to be murdered,) was beheaded at Millan.

NOT wythout good cause of long tyme haue the wyse, and discrete, Prudently gouerned their Children, and taken great heede ouer their Daughters, and thosse also whom they haue chosen to bee their Wyues, not in vsing them lyke Bondwomen, and Slaues, to beereine them of all Liberty, but rather to auoyde the murmur, and secrete flaunderous Speach of the common people, and occasions offred for infection, and marrying of Youth, specially circumspect of the assaultes bent agaynst Maydens, being yet in the firste flames of fire, kindled by nature in the hearts, yea of thosse that be the wylfes, and best brought vp. Some doe deeme it very straunge, that solempne Guard bee obserued ouer thosse which ought to lyue at lyberty, and doe consider how lyberty and the bridle of Lycence let slip vnto Youth, they breede vnto the same most strong and tedious Bondage, that better it had bene for youth to haue beene chayned, and closed in obscure Pryson, than marked wyth thosse blottes of infamy, which Sutch Lycence and Lyberty doe conduce. If England doe not by experiance see Maydens of Noble Houses Infamed through to mutch vnbrideled, and frank maner of Lyfe, and their Parents desolate for sutch villanyes, and the name of their houses become Fabulous and Ridiculous to the people: surely that manner of Espiall and watch ouer Children, may be noted in Nations not very farre conuening from vs, where men be Ielous of the very Fantasie of them, whom they think to be indued with great vertues, and of thosse that dare with their very Lookes geue attaynt, to behold their Daughters: but where examples be euident, where all the World is assured of that which they see by daily experiance, that the fruicts of the disordered, breake out into light, it behoueth no more to attend the daungerous customes of Countreyes, to condescend to the sottish Opinions of thosse, whych say that youth to narrowly looked vnto, is trayned vp in sutch grosenesse, and blockishnesse of spyrite, as

impossible it is afterwardes the same shoulde do any thinge prayse worthy. The Romayne maydens whilom were Cloystered within their Fathers Pallaces, still at their Mothers Elbowes, and notwithstanding were so wel brought vp, that those of best ciuility and finest trained vp in our age, shall not be the seconde to one of the least perfect in the Citty. But who can learne ciuility and vertue in these our dayes? our Daughters nouslyed in companies, whose mouthes run ouer with Whorish and filthy talke, wyth behauour full of Ribauldry, and many fraughted wyth facts lesse honest than Speach is able to expresse. I doe not pretend heereby to deprive that sexe of honest and seemely talke, and company, and leste of exercise amonges the Noble Gentlemen of our Englyshe Soyle, ne yet of the Liberty receyued from our Aunceftours, only (me thyncke) that requisite it were to contemplate the manners and inclination of wils, and refrayne those that be prone to wantonnesse, and by lyke meanes to reioyce the mindes of them that be bent to heauinessse, deuided from curtefie and Ciuility, by attendinge of whynch choyse, and considering of that difference, impossible it is but vertue must shyne more bright in Noble houses than homelynesse in Cabanes of Pesauntes, and Countrey Carles: who oftentimes better obserue the Discipline of our Predeceffours in education of their Chyldren, than they which presume to prayse themselues for good skil in vse and gouernment of that age, more troublesome and payneful to rule, than any other wythin the compasse of man's lyfe. Therefore the good and wise Emperour Marcus Aurelius would not haue his Daughters to be trayned vp in Courts. "For (quod he) what profit shall the Nurse receyue by learning hir mayden honesty and vertue, when our workes intice them to daliaunce and vice, apprehending the folly of those that bee amorous?" I make this discourse, not that I am so rigorous a Judge for our maydens of England, but that I wish them so reformed, as to see and be seene should be forbidden, as assured that vertue in what place so euer she be, cannot but open things that shall sauor of hir excellency. And now to talke of an Italian Dame, who so long as hir first husband (knowing hir inclination) kept hir subiect, liued in reputation of a modest and sober wyfe. Nothing was seene in hir that could defame hir renoume. But so soone as the

shadow of that free captiuitie was made free by the death of hir husband, God knoweth what pageant shee played, and how shee foyled both hir owne reputation, and the honour of hir second Mate, as yee shall vnderstande if with pacience yee vouchsafe to reade the discourse of thys present Hyfstory. Casal, (as it is not vnknowen) is a City of Piedmont, and subiect to the Marquize of Montferrato, where dwelled one that was very rich, although of base birth, named Giachomo Scappardone, who being growne wealthy, more by wicked art, and vsury, to mucht manifest, than by his owne diligence, toke to Wife a yong Greeke mayden, which the Marchiones of Montferrato mother of Marquize Guglielmo, had brought home wyth hir from the voyage that shee made into Grætia wyth hir husbante, when the Turkes ouerran the countrey of Macedonia, and seased vpon the City of Modena which is in Morea. Of that mayden Scapperdone had a Daughter indifferent fayre, and of behauour liuely and pleasaunt, called Bianca Maria. The Father dyed wythin a while after hir birth, as one that was of good yeares, and had bin greatly turmoyled in getting of riches, whose value amounted about one Hundred Thousand Crownes. Bianca Maria arriued to the age of sixteene, or feuenteene yeares, was required of many, aswell for hir Beauty, Gentlenes, and good grace, as for her goods, and riches. In the ende shee was maried to the Vicecount Hermes, the Sonne of one of the chiefeſt Houses in Millan, who incontinently after the mariage, conueyed hir home to hys house, leauing his Greeke mother to gouerne the vsuries gotten by hir dead husband. The Gentleman which amongs two greene, knew one that was ripe, hauing for a certayne tyme well knowen, and learned the maners of hys Wyfe, saw that it behoued hym rather to deale wyth the Bit and brydle than the spur, for that shee was wanton, full of desire, and coueted nothing so mucht as fond and disordered liberty, and therefore without cruell dealing, disquiet, or trouble, hee vsed by little and little to keepe hir in, and cherisched hir more than his nature willingly would suffer, of purpose to holde hir wythin the boundes of duty. And although the Millan Dames haue almost like lyberties that ours haue, yet the Lord Hermes kept hir wythin Dores, and suffred hir to frequent none other houſe and company, but the Lady Hippolita Sforcia, who

vpon a day demaunded of him wherefore hee kept in his wyfe so short, and persuaded hym to geue her somewhat more the Brydle, bicause diuers already murmured of this order, as to strayte and Frowarde, esteeming hym eyther to be to mutch fond ouer hir, or else to Jealous. "Madame," sayde the Millanoise, "they whych at pleasure so speake of me, know not yet the nature of my Wyfe, who I had rather should be somewhat restrayned, than run at Rouers to hir dishonour, and my shame. I remember wel madame the proper saying of Paulus Emilius that notable Romane: who being demauned wherefore he had put away his Wyfe being a Gentlewoman so fayre and beautifull. 'O,' quod he and lifted vp his leg whereupon was a new payre of Buskins) 'yee see this fayre Bulkin, meete and seemely for this Leg to outward appearance not greeuous or noysome, but in what place it hurteth me, or where it wringeth yee doe neyther see nor yet feele. So I, madame, do feele in what place my Hoafe doeth hurt and wring my Legge. I know madame what it is to graunt to so wanton a dame as my Wyfe is, hir will, and how farre I ought to slip the rayne: ialous I am not vpon the fayth I beare vnto God, but I feare what may chaunce vnto me. And by my trouth, madame, I geeue her Lycence to repayre to you both Day and Nyght, at whatsoeuer hour you please, being assured of the vertuous company that haunteth your house: otherwyse my Pallace shall suffyce hir pleasure for the common ioy of vs both, and therefore I wish no more talk hereof, least too importunate suites do offend my nature, and make me thinke that to be true whych of good will I am loth to suspect, contenting my selfe with hir Chasfity, for feare least to mutch liberty do corrupt hir." These words were not spoken wythout cause, for the wyfe husband saw wel that sutch beasts, albeit rudely they ought not to be vsed, yet stily to be holden short, and not suffred too mutch to wander at will. And verily his prophecy was to true for respect of that which followed: who had not bene maried full vi. yeares, but the Vicecount Hermes departed thys World, whereof she was very sory bycause she loued him derely, hauing as yet not tasted the licorous baites of sutch liberty, as afterwards she drank in gluttonous draughts, when after hir husband's obsequies, she retired to Montferrato, and then to

Casal to hir Father's house, hir mother being also dead, and she a lone woman to ioy at pleasure the fruict of hir desires, bendinge hir only study to gay and trimme Apparell, and employed the mornings with the vermillion rud to colour hir cheeke by greater curiositie than the most shameleffe Curtisan of Rome, fixing hir eyes vpon ech man, gyring, and laughing with open mouth, and pleasantly disposed to talk and reasoun with euery Gentleman that pased by the streate. This was the way to attayne the glorious feast of hir triumphant filthines, who wan the prise aboue the most famous women whych in hir tyme made profession of thosse armes, wherewith Venus once dispoyled Mars, and toke from him the strongest and best steeled armure of all his furniture. Thinck not fayre maydes, that talk and clattering with youth is of small regarde. For a Citty is halfe won when they within demaunde for parle, as loth to indure the Canon shot. So when the eare of yong Wyfe or mayde is pliant to lafciuous talk, and deliteth in wanton words, albeit hir chasfity receyue no damage, yet occasion of speach is ministred to the people, and perchaunce wylt futch disaduantage, as neuer after hir good name is recouered. Wherefore needefull it is, not only to auoyde the effect of euill, but also the least suspition: for good fame is requisite for the Woman, as honest lyfe. The great Captain Iulius Cæsar, (which first of al reduced the common wealth of Rome in fourme of monarchie) beinge once demaunded wherfore hee hadde refusid hys Wyfe before it was proued that she had offendid with Clodius, the night of the sacrifices done to the Goddesse Bona, answereid so wyfely as truely, that the house of Cæsar ought not onely to be voyde of whordome but of suspition therof. Behold therfore what I haue sayd, and yet doe say againe, that ye oughte to take greate heede to youre selues, and to laugh in tyne, not reclining your eares to vncomely talke, but rather to follow the nature of the Serpent, that stoppeth his eare with his tayle, to auoide the charms and forceries of the Enchaunter. Now this Bianca Maria was sued vnto, and pursued of many at Casall that desired hir to Wyfe, and amonges the rest two did profer themselues, which were the Lord Gismondo Gonzaga, the neere kinsman of the Duke of Mantua, and the Counte of Celant, a great Baron of Sauoy, whose landes lie in the vale of

Agosta. A great pastyme it was to thys fyne Gentlewoman to feede hir self wyth the Orations of thos two Lordes and a ioye it was to hir, to vse her owne discourse and aunswers expressinge with right good grace fundry amorous countenances, intermingling therwithall fighes, fobbes, and alteration of cheere, that full well it might haue bene sayde, of loue trickes that shee was the only dame and mistresse. The Marchyoneſſe of Montferrato desirous to gratify the Lord of Mantua his sonne in law, endeuored to induce this wanton Lady to take for spouse Gismondo Gonzaga, and the fute ſo well proceeded, as almoſt the mariage had bene concluded if the Sauoy Earle had not come betwixte, and ſhewed forth his Noblenesse of minde, when he vnderſtode how things did paſſe, and that another was ready to beare away the prufe, and recouer his mistreſſe. For that cauſe he came to viſit the Lady, who intertayned him wel, as of cuſtom ſhe did al other. And for that he would not emploie hys tyme in vayne, when he founde hir alone and at conuenyent leyſure, began to preache vnto hir in thys wyſe with futch countenaunce, as the perceyued the Counte to be far in loue with hir.

The Oration of the Counte of Celant to his Ladye.

“ I am in doubt Madame, of whome chiefly I ought to make complaſynt, whether of you, or of my ſelfe, or rather of fortune which guideth and bryngeth us together. I ſee wel that you receiue ſome wrong, and that my cauſe is not very iuft, you taking no regarde vnto my paſſion which is outragious, and leſſe hearkeninge vnto my request that ſo many times I haue giuen you to vnderſtand onely grounded vpon the Honest loue I beare you. But I am beſides this more to be accuſed for ſuffering an other to marche ſo far over my game and foyle, as I haue almoſt loſt the traſte of the pray after which I moſt deſire, and ſpecially doe condeſonne my Fortune, for that I am in daunger to loſe the thynge which I deſerue, and you in peryll to paſſe into that place where your captiuity ſhalbe worse than the ſlaues by the Portugales condeſoned to the mines of India. Doeth it not ſuffiſe you that the Lord Hermes closed you vp the ſpace of v. or vi. yeares in his Chamber, but wil you nedes attempt the reſt of your yonthly daies amid the Man- tuanes, whose ſuſpicioſe heads are ful of hammers working in the

same? Better it were madame, that we approchynge neerer the gallante guise of Fraunce, should live after the lyberty of that Country, than bee captiue to an Italian house, whych wyll restrain you with like bondage, as at other tymes you have felt the experience. Moreover ye see what opinion is like to be conceiued of you, when it shalbe bruted that for the Marquize feare, you haue maried the Mantuan Lord. And I know well that you like not to be esteemed as a pupil, your nature cannot abyde compulsion, you be free from hir authority, it were no reason you should be constrained. And not to stay in framing of orations, or stand vpon discourse of Words, I humbly beseeche you to behold the constant loue I beare you, and being a Gentleman so Wealthy as I am, none other cause induceth me to make this sute, but your good grace and bryngynge vp, whych force me to loue you aboue any other Gentlewoman that liueth. And althoughe I myghte alleage other reasons to proue my saying, yet referre I my self to the experience and bounty of youre mynd, and to the equity of your Iudgement. If my passion were not vehement, and my torment without comparison, I would wish my fained griefs to be laughed to scorne, and my dissembled payne rewarded with flouts. But my loue being sincere and pure, my traueil continuall, and my griefs endlesse, for pity sake I beseeche you madame to consider my faithfull deserts with your duetiful curtesie, and then shall you see how much I ought to be preferred before them, which vnder the shadow of other mens puissance, do feke to purchase power to commaund you: where I do faithfully bynd and tye my word and deede continually to loue and serue you, wyth promyse al the dayes of my Lyfe to accomplish your commaundements. Beholde if it please you what I am, and with what affection I make mine humble playnt, regard the Messanger, loue it is himself that holdeth me within your snares, and maketh mee captiue to your beauty and gallant graces, which haue no pierce. But if you refuse my sute, and cause me breath my words into the aire, you shalbe accused of cruelty, ye shall see the entier defaile of a gentleman which loueth you better than loue himselfe is able to yelde flame and fire to force any wight to loue mortal creature. But, verily, I beleue the heauens haue departed in me futch abundance, to the intent in

louyng you with vehemence so greate, you may also thinke that it is I which ought to be the Friend and spouse of that gentle and curteous Lady Bianca Maria, which alone may cal her self the mistresse of my Heart." The Ladye whych before was mocked and flouted wyth the Counte his demaunds, hearing thys laste discourse, and remembryng his first mariage, and the natural iealousie of Italyans, half wonne, without making other countenance, answered the Counte in thys manner: "Syr counte, albeyt that I am obediente to the wyll and commaundemente of madame the Marchyonesse, and am loth to dysplease hir, yet wil I not so farre gage my lybertye, but stille referue one poynt to fayre what reasteth in my thoughte. And what shoulde lette me to chose sutch one, to whome I shalbe both his life and death? And whereof beinge once possest, it is imposyble to be rid and acquited? I assure you, if I feared not the speach and suspition of malycious mindes, and the venime of flaunderous Tongues, neuer husband should bryng me more to bondage. And if I thought that he whom I pretend to chose, would be so cruel to me, as others whom I know, I would presently refuse mariage for euer. I thanke you neuertheleſſe, both of your aduertisements giuen me, and of the honor you doe me, your self defiryng to accomplish that honor by maryage to be celebrated betweene vs. For the fidelity of which your talke, and the little diffimulation I fee to be in you, I promise you that there is no gentleman in this countrey to whom I giue more puissance ouer me, than to you, if I chaunce to mary, and thereof make you so good assurance, as if it were already done." The Counte seeing so good an entry would not suffer the tyme to ſlip, but beating the Bushes vntill the praye was ready to ſpryng, replied: "And fith you know (madame) what thing is profitable, and what is hurtfull, and that the benefite of lyberty is ſo mucht recommended, why doe you not perforne the thinge that may redounde to your honor? Affure mee then of your word, and promise me the faith and loyaltie of maryage, then let me alone to deale wyth the rest, for I hope to attayn the effect without offense and displeasure of any." And ſeeing hir to remaine in a muse without ſpeaking word, he toke hir by the hand and kissing the ſame a million of tymes, added theſe Words: "How now,

madame, be you appalled for so pleasaunt an assault, wherin your aduersary confesseth himselfe to be vanquished? Courage, madame, I say courage, and beholde him heere which humbly praieth you to receiue him for your lawfull husband, and who sweareth vnto you all futch amitye and reuerence that husband oweth to hys loyall spouse." "Ah, syr Counte," sayd she, "and what wyll the Marquize say, vnto whom I haue wholly referred my self for mariage? shal not she haue iust occasion to frowne vpon mee, and frowardly to vse me for little respect I heare vnto hir? God be my witnesse if I would not that Gonzaga had neuer come into this countrey: for although I loue him not, yet I haue almost made him a promyse, which I can not kepe." "And sith there is nothing don," (said the Sauoy Lord) "what nede you to torment your selfe? wyl the Marquize wrecke hir tyrannie ouer the will of hir subiectes, and force Ladyes of hir Lande to marie againste their luste? I thinke that so wyfe a princeffe, and so well nurtured, will not so far forget hir self, as to straine that which God hath left at lyberty to euerye wight: promise me onely maryage and leaue me to deale wyth the rest: other thynges shalbe wel prouided for." Bianca Maria vanquished with that importunity, and fearing againe to fal into seruytude, hoping that the Counte would mainteine futch liberty as he had assured, agreed vnto hym and plyghted vnto him her faithe, and for the tyme vfed mutuall promises by wordes respettively one to another: and the better to confirme the fact, and to let the knotte from breakyng, they bedded themselues togethers. The Counte very ioyfull for that encountre, yelded futch good beginning by his countenance, and by Famyliar and continuall haunte with Bianca Maria, as shortly after the matter was knownen and came to the Marquesse eares, that the Daughter of Scappadone had maryed the Counte of Celant. The good lady albeit that shee was wroth beyond measure, and willingly would haue ben reuenged vpon the bride, yet hauing respect to the Counte, which was a noble man of great authority, swallowed down that pille wythout chewing, and prayed the Lord Gonzaga not to be offended, who seing the light behauisour of the Ladie, laughed at the matter, and prayed God for that the thing was so wel broken off: and he did foresee already what issye that Comedye would haue, beyng

very famlyar for certayne Dayes in the House of Bianca Maria. Thys maryage then was publyshed, and the solempnity of the Nuptyals were done very pryncely, accordyng to the Nobylty of hym whych had maryed hir: but the augurie and presage was heauy, and the melancholike face of the season (which was obscured and darkened about the time they shold go to church) declared that the mirth and ioy shold not long continue in the house of the counte, according to the common saying: *He that loketh not before he leapeth, may chaunce to stumble before he sleepeth.* For the lord of Celant being retird home to his valeys of the Sauoy mountains, began to loke about his businesse, and perceiued that his wife surpasseed al others in light behauour and vnbrideled desires, whereuppon hee resolued to take order and stop hir passage before she had won the field, and that frankly she shold goe seke hir ventures where shee list, if she would not be ruled by his aduise. The foolish Countesse seeing that hir husband well espied hir fond and foolysh behauor, and that wisely he went about to remedy the same, was no whit astonied, or regarded his aduise, but rather by forging complaints did cast him in the teeth sometymes with hir riches that she brought him, sometime with those whom she had refused for his sake, and with whom farre of she liued lyke a sauage creature amid the mountaine deserts and baren dales of Sauoy, and tolde him that by no meanes she minded to be closed and shut vp like a tameleffe beast. The Counte which was wyse, and would not breake the Ele vpon his knee, prouidently admonished hir in what wise a Ladye ought to esteeme hir honor, and how the lightest faults of Noble sorts appeare mortal finnes before the world: and that it was not sufficient for a Gentlewoman to haue hir body chraft, if hir speach were not according, and the minde correspondent to that outward semblance, and the conseruation agreeable to the secreit conceiptes of Mynd: "And I shall be ful sory swete Wife" (sayd the Counte) "to giue you cause of discontent: for wher you shalbe vexed and molested, I shall receiue no ioy or pleasure, you being [such one as ought to be the second my self, determining] by God's grace to keepe my promise, and vse you like a wyfe, if so be you regard me with duety semblable: for reason will not that the

head obey the members, if they shew not themselues to be futch as depend vpon the health and life of it. The husband being the Wyue's chiefe, ought to be obeyd in that which reson forbideth: and shee referring hir selfe to the pleasure of hir head, forceth him to whom she is adioyned, to do and assay all trauayle and Payne for hir sake. Of one thinge I must needes accuse you, which is, that for trifles you frame complaynt: for the mynde occupied in folly, lusteth for nothinge more than vayne things, and those that be of little profite, specially where the pleasure of the Bodye is onely considered: where if it follow reson, it dissembleth his grieves with wordes of wysedome, and in knowing mutch, fayneth notwithstanding a subtile and honest ignoraunce: but I may bee mutch deceyued herein, by thinking that a Woman fraught with fickle Opinions may recline her eares to what so euer thing, except to that whych deliteth hir mynde, and pleasest the desires framed wyth in hir foolysh fantasie. Let not thys speach be straunge vnto you, for your woordes vttered without discretion, make me vse thys language: finally (good madame) you shall shew your selfe a Wyfe and louing wyfe, if by takinge heede to my requests, you faythfully follow the advise thereof." The Countesse whych was so fine and malicious as the Earle was good and wyse, dissembling her grieve, and coueringe the venome hidden in hir mynde, began so well to play the hypocrite before hir husbande, and to counterfayte the simple Dame, as albeit he was right politike, yet he was within hir Snare intrapt, who flattered him wyth so fayre Wordes, as she won him to goe to Casal, to visite the lands of hir Inheritaunce. We see whereunto the intent of this false Woman tended, and what checkmate she ment to geue both to hir husband, and hir honour: whereby we know that when a woman is disposed to giue hir selfe to wickednesse, hir mynde is voyd of no malyce or inuention to fort to ende any daunger or perill offered vnto hir. The factes of one Medea (if credite may be gieuen to Poets) and of Phædra, the Woman of Theseus, wel declare with what beastly zeale they began and finished their attempts: the eagles flight is not so high, as the Foolysh desires, and Conceiptes of a Woman that trufeth in hir owne opinion, and treadeth out of the tract of duety, and way of Wysedome. Pardon

me, good Ladies, if I speake so largely, and yet think not that I mean to display any other but sutch, as forget the degree wherin their Auncestours haue placed them, and whych digreffe from the true path of thoſe that haue immortalized the memory of themſelues, of their husbands, and of the houses also whereof they came. I am very lothe to take vpon mee the office of a flaundrer, and no leſſe do mean to flatter thoſe, whom I ſee to their great shame, offende openly in the fight of the worlde: but why ſhould I dyſembl that which I know your felues would not conceygle, yf in conſcyence yee were requyred? It were extreame follye to decke and clothe vice wyth the holy garment of Vertue, and to call that Curteſie and Ciuylity, whych is manyfēt whoredom and Trecherie: let vs terme ech thynge by his due Name, and not deface that whych of it ſelffe is faire and pure: let vs not alſo ſtaine the renoume of thoſe, whom their own Vertue do recommende. This gentle Counteffe beeing at Caſal, making mutch of hir hufbande, and kiſſing him with the kiſſe of treaſon, and of him being vnfainedly beloued and cheriſhed, not able to forget his ſermons, and mutch leſſe hir own filthy lyfe, ſeeyng that with hir Counte it was imposſyble for hir to liue and glut her lecherous luſt, determined to runne away and ſeeke hir aduenture: for the brynging to paſſe wheroft ſhe had already taken order for money, the iñtereſt wheroft growing to hir daily proſite at Millan: and hauynge leuied a good ſumme of Ducates in hande, vnyll hir other rents were ready, ſhe fled away in the night in compayne of certayne of hir men which were priuie to her doeings. Hir retire was to Paie, a City ſubiecte to the ſtate and Duchy of Millan, where ſhe hired a pryncely pallace, and apparellēd the ſame according to hir eſtate and Trayne of hir hufband, and as her owne reueneue was able to beare. I leaue for you to thiñke what buzzings entred the Counte's head, by the fodayne flight of his wife, who would haue ſent and gone him ſelffe after to feke hir out, and bryng hir home againe, had he not well conſidered and wayed his owne proſite and aduantage, who knowing that hir abſence would rid out of his head a fardell of ſuſpitions which he before conſeued, was in the ende reſolued to lette hir alone, and ſuffer hir remaine in what place ſo euer ſhe was retired, and whence hee

neuer minded to cal hir home agayne. "I were a very foole," (said he) "to keepe in my Housfe so pernicious and fearfull an enimy, as that arrant whore is, who one day before I beware will cause some of hir ruffians to cut my throte, besides the Vyolatyon of hir holye Maryage Bed: God defende that sutch a Strumpet by hir prefence should any longer profane the house of the Lord of Celant, who is well rewarded and punished for the excessiue loue whych he bare hir: let hir goe whether shee list, and lyue a God's name at hir ease, I do content my selfe in knowing what Women be able to do, wythout further attempt of fortune or other prooife of hir wycked Lyfe." He added further, that the honor of so Noble a personage as he was, depended not upon a woman's mischief: and assure your selfe the whole race of woman kind was not spared by the Counte, against whom he then inueyed more through rage than reason, he considered not the honest sort of women, which deface the vyllany of thofe that giue themselues ouer to theyr own lusts, wythout regarde of modefty and shame, which oughte to be Famylyar, as it were by a certain Naturall inclynatyon in all degrees of Women and Maydens. But come we again to Bianca Maria, holding now hir Courte and open house at Pauie, wher she got so holy a fame, as mistresse Lais of Corinth did, whose trumprie was neuer more common in Asia than that of this fayre dame, almost in euery corner of Italy, and whose conuerstation was sutch as hir frank liberty and famyliar demeanor to ech wyghte, well witnessef hir horryble Lyfe. True it was that her reputatyon ther was very smal, and she hired not hir selfe, ne yet toke pains by setting hir body to sale, but for some refonable gayne and earnest pain: howbeit she (of whom somtimes the famous Greke orator would not buy repentaunce for so high a pryce) was more excessiue in Sale of hir Merchaundyse, but not more wanton: for she no sooner espyed a comely Gentleman that was youthly, and well made, but would presently shew him so good countenance, as he had ben a very foole, that knewe not what prouender this Colt did neigh: whose shameleffe Gesture Maffalina the Romane princiſſe dyd neuer furmount, except it were in that shee vſited and haunted common houses: and this dame vſed hir disports wythin hir owne, the other also receiued indifferently Carters, Galleye flauſes, and

Porters: and thys halfe Greeke did hir pastyme wyth Noble Men that were braue and lustye: but in one thing shee well resembled hir, whych was, that Messalina was soner wearey with trauayle, than she satisfiyyed with pleasure and the filthy vse of hir body, like vnto a sink that receyuethe al filth, wythout disgorgyng any throwne into the same: this was the chaste lyfe which that good Lady led, after she had taken flight from hir husband. Marke now whether the Milanois that was hir first husbande, were a grosse headed person or a foole, and whither hee were not learned and skilful in the science of Phisiognomy, and time for him to make ready the rods to make hir know hir duety, therwith to correct hir wanton youth, and to cut of the lusty twigs and proud sciences that foked the moisture and hart of the stock and braunches. It chaunced whiles she liued at Pauie, in this good and honorable port, the Counte of Maffino called Ardizzino Valperga came to the Emperour's service, and therby made hysabode at Pauie with one of his brothers: the Counte being a goodly Gentleman young and gallant in apparel, giuen to many good qualitieis had but one onely fault, which was a mayme in one of his legges, by reason of a certain aduenture and blow receiued in the warres, although the same toke away no part of his comeliness and fyne behauyor. The Counte I say, remaining certayne days at Pauie beheld the beauty and singularity of the Countesse of Celant, and stayed with futch deuotion to view and gaze vpon hir, as manye times he romed vp and down the streate wherein she dwelt to find meanes to speak vnto hir. His first talke was but a *Bon iour*: and simple salutation, futch as gentlemen commonly vse in company of Ladies, and at the firste brunte Valperga coulde settle none other iudgement vpon that Goddesse, but that she was a wise and honest dame, and yet futch one as needed not the Emperor's camp to force the place, which as he thought was not so well flanked and rampired but that a good man of Armes myght easly winne, and the breache so liuely and sautable, as any souldier might passe the same: he became so famyliar with the Lady, and talked with hir so secretly, as vpon a day being with hir alone, hee courted in this wife: "Were not I of all men mooste blame worthy, and of greatest folly to be reprooved, so long time to be acquainted with a Lady

so faire and curteous as you be, and not to offre my seruice life and goodes to be disposed where you pleased? I speake not thys, Madame, for any euil and sinister iudgement that I conceyue of you, for that I prayse and esteeme you aboue any Gentlewoman that euer I knew til this day, but rather for that I am so wonderfully attached with your good graces, as wrong I should doe vnto your honor and my loyal seruice towards you, if I continued dumbe, and did conceyde that whych incessantly would consume my heart with infynyte numbre of ardent desyres, and wast myne intrailes for the extreame and burning loue I beare you. I do require you to put no credite in me, if I refuse what it shall please you to commaund me: wherfore Madame, I humbly besech you to accepte me for your owne, and to fauor me as futch one, whych with all fidelity hopeth to passe hys time in your company." The Countesse although she knew ful wel that the fire was not so liuely kindled in the stomacke of the Counte as hee wente aboue to make hir beleue, and that his wordes were to eloquent, and countenance to ioyfull for so earnest a louer as hee femed to be, at thys first incountry: yet for that he was a valiant Gentleman, yong, lusty, and strongly made, minded to retaine him, and for a tyme to staye hir stomacke by appeasying hir gluttonous appetite in matters of loue, with a morfell so dainty, as was thys Mynion and lustye young Lorde: and when the Courage of hym began to coole, another shoulde enter the listes. And therefore she aunswere hym in thys wife: "Although I (knowyng the vse and manners of men, and with what Baits they Hoke for Ladies, if they take not heede, hauing proued their malice and little loue,) determined neuer to loue other than mine affection, ne yet to fauoure Man excepte it bee by shewyng some Familiar manner to heare theyr talke, and for pastime to hearken the braue requests of thos which say they burne for loue, in the mids of some delyghtsome brooke. And albeit I think you no better than other bee, ne more fayhfully, more affe^tyonate, or otherwyse moued than the rest, yet I am contente for respecte of youre honoure, somewhat to beeleeue you and to accepte you for myne owne, fith your dyscretyon is futch (I truste) as so Noble a Gentleman as you bee, wyll hym selfe declare in thos Affayres, and when I see the effecte of my

hope succeede, I cannot be so vnkynde, but wyt all honesty shall assay to satify that your loue." The Countee seeing hir alone, and receyuing the Ladie's language for his aduantage, and that hir countenance by alteration of hir minde did ad a certayne beauty to hir face, and perceyuing a desire in hir that he shold not vse delay, or be to squeimish, she demaunding naught else but execucion, tooke the present offred time, forgetting all ceremonies, and reuerence, he embrased hir and kissted hir a Hundred Thousande tymes. And albeit shée made a certayne simple and prouoking resistance, yet the louer notinge them to be but preparatiues for the sport of loue, he strayed from the bounds of honesty, and threw her vpon a fieldे Bed wythin the Chambre, where hee solaced hymselfe wyth hys long desired suite. And finding hir worthy to be beloued, and she him a curteous gentleman, consulted together for continuaunce of their amity, in sutch wife as the Lorde Ardiz-zino spake no more but by the mouth of Bianca Maria, and dyd nothyng but what she commaunded, being so bewrapped wyth the heauy Mantell of hir Beastly Loue, as hee stille abode nyght and day in the house of his beloued: whereby the brute was noysed throughout the City, and the songes of their Loue more common in ech Citizen's mouth, than Stanze or Sonnettes of Petrarch, Played and Fayned vpon the Gittrone, Lute, or Lyra, more fine and witty than those vnsauery Ballets that be tuned and chaunted in the mouthes of the common sort. Beholde an Earle well serued, and dressed by enyoying so false a Woman, which had already falsified the fayth betrouweth to hir husband, who was more honest, milde, and vertuous than she deserued. Beholde also, yee Noble Gentlemen, the simplicity of this good Earle, how it was deceyued by a false and filthy strumpet, whose stincking lyfe and common vse of body woulde haue withdrawen ech simple creature from mixture of their owne wyth sutch a Carrion. A lesson to learne al youth to refrayne the Whoorishe lookes of lighte conditioned Dames, a number (the more to be pittied) shewinge foorth themselues to the Portfale of euery Cheapener, that lift demaunde the prycē, the grozenes whereof before considered, were worthy to be defied and loathed. This Ladye seeinge her Louer nosled in hir lust, dandled him with a thousand trumperyes, and made

hym holde the Mule, while other enjoyed the secrete spore which earst hee vsed hymself. This acquayntance was so dangerous to the Counte, as shee hir selfe was shamelesse to the Counte of Celant: for the one bare the armes of Cornwall, and became a seconde Acteon, and the other wickedly led his lyfe, and lost the chiefeſt of that hee loked for by the seruice of great Princes, throughe the treason of an arrante common queane. Whiles this Loue contynued in al Pleasure and lyke contentation of either parts: fortune that was ready to mounte the stage, and shew in sight that her mobylytye was no more stable than a woman's wyll: for vnder futch habite and sexe Painters and Poets describe hir) made Ardizzino ſuſpeſte what deſire ſhe had of chaunge: and within a while after, ſawe himſelfe ſo farre miſliken of his Lady, as though he had neuer bene acquainted. The cauſe of which recoile was, for that the Counteſſe was not contented with one kind of fare, whose Eyes were more greedy than hir ſtomake able to diſteſt, and aboue al deſired chaunge, not ſeking meaneſ to finde him that was worthy to be beloued and intertayned of ſo great a Lady, as ſhe eſteemed hir ſelfe to be, and as futch of their owne opinion thiſke themſelues, who counterfaſte more grauitie and reputation than they doe, whome Nature and vertue for theyr maiesty and holynes of lyfe make Noble and praiſe worthy. That deſire deceiued hir nothing at all, for a certayne time after that Ardizzino poſſeſſed the forte of this fayre Counteſſe, there came to Pauia, one Roberto Sanfeuerino earle of Gaiazzo, a yong and valiaunte gentleman, whose Countreye lyeth on this fide the Mountaines, and was verye famylyar with the Earle of Maffino. This vnfaythful Alcina and cruel Medea had no ſoner caſt hir Eye vpon Signor di Gaiazzo, but was piercēd with loue in futch wife, as if forthwith ſhee had not attayned hir deſyres, ſhe would haue run mad, bycauſe that Gentleman bare a certayne ſtatelye repreſentatyon in hys Face, and promyſed futch dexteritie in hys deedeſ, as ſodaynly ſhe thought him to be the man that was able to ſtaunch hir filthy thurſt. And therfore ſo gently as ſhe could, gave ouer hir Ardizzino, with whom ſhe vtterly refuſed to ſpeake, and ſhunned hys company when ſhe ſaw him, and by ſhutting the gates agaynſt him: the Noble man was notable to forbeare from throwing forth

some words of choler, wherby she tooke occasion both to expell him, and also to beare hym futch displeasure, as then she conspired his death, as afterwards you shall perceyue. This greate hatred was the cause that she fell in loue as you haue harde wyth the Counte of Gaiazzo, who shewed vnto him all signe of Amitye, and seeing that hee made no greate fute vnto hir, she wrote vnto him in this manner.

The Letter of Bianca Marie, to the Counte of Gaiazzo.

SIR, I doubt not by knowing the state of my degree, but that ye blushe to see the violence of my mynd, which paffing the limites of modesty, that ought to guard futch a Lady as I am, forceth me (vncertayn of the cause) to doe you vnderstand the gryef that doeth torment me, which is of futch constrainyt, as if of curtefie ye do not vouchsafe to come vnto me, you shall commyt two faults, the one leauing the thing worthy for you to loue and regard, and which deserueth not to be cast of, the other in causing the Death of hir, that for Loue of you, is bereft of rest: wherby loue hath uery little in me to fease vpon, either of heart or liberty. The easse of which gryef proceedeth from your only grace, which is able to vanquyshe hir, whose victorious hap hath conquered all other, and who attending your resolut aunswere, shal rest vnder the mercifull refuge of hope, whych deceiuing hir, shal se by that very meanes the wretched end of hir that is al your owne.

Bianca Maria Countesse of Celant.

The yong Lorde mutch maruelled at this message, were it for that already hee was in loue with hir, and that for loue of his friend Ardizzino, durst not be known therof, or for that he feared she wold be straught of wits, if she were despised, he determined to goe vnto hir, and yet stayed thinking it not to be the part of a faythfull companyon to deceiue his Friend: but in the end pleasure surmounting reason, and the beauty ioyned wyth the good grace of the Lady hauing blinded him, and bewitched his wits so wel as Ardizzino, he toke his way towards hir house, who waited for him wyth good deuotion, whither being arriued, he failed not to vse like spech that Valperga did, either of them (after certain reuerences and other fewe words) minding and desyringe one kinde of intertayne-

ment. This practice dured certayn months, and the Countesse was so farre rapt with her new louer, as she only employed hir selfe to please him, and he shewed himself so affected as therby she thought to rule and gourne him in all things: wherof she was afterwards deceiued as you shall vnderstand the maner. Ardizzino seing himself wholly abandoned the presence and loue of his Lady, knowing that she railed vpon him in al places where she came, departed Pavia halfe out of his wittes for Anger, and so strayed from comely ordyr by reasoun of his rage, as hee displayed the Countesse thre times more liuely in hir colours, than she could be paynted, and reprooved hir wyth the termes of the vileft and mooste common strumpet that euer ran at rouers, or shot at random. Bianca Maria vnderstode hereof, and was aduertised of the vile report that Ardizzino spread of hir, throughout Lombardie, which chaffed hir in sutch wyfe as she fared like the Bedlem fury, ceafing night nor day to playne the vnkindnes and folly of hir reieected louer: somtimes saying, that she had iust cause so to do, then flattering hir selfe, alledged, that men were made of purpose to suffer sutch follyes as were wroughte by hir, and where they termed themselues to bee Women's Seruautes, they ought at theyr Mystresse Handes to endure what pleased them. In the end, not able any longer to restrayne hir choler, ne vanquish the appetite of reuenge, purposed at all aduenture to prouide for the death of her auncient Enimy, and that by meanes of him whom she had now tangled in her Nettes. See the vnshamefastnesse of this mastife bitche, and the rage of that Female Tiger, howe shhee goeth about to arme one friend against an other, and was not content onely to abuse the Counte Gaiazzo, but deuised how to make him the manqueller. And as one night they were in the middest of their embracemens, she began pitifully to weepe and sigh, in sutch wise as a man would haue thought (by the vexation of hir hearte) that the soule and body would haue parted. The younge Lorde louingly enquired the cause of hir heauinessse: and sayd vnto hir, that if any had done hir displeasure, hee would reuenge hir cause to hir contentment. She hearing him say so, (then in studie vpon the deuice of hir Enimie's death) spake to the Counte in this manner: "You know sir, that the thing whych mooste tormenteth the

Gentle heart and minde that can abide no wronge, is defamacion of honoure and infamous reporte. Thus mutch I say for that the Lord of Maffino, (who to say the trouth, was fauoured of me in like forte as you be now) hath not been ashamed to publishe open flaunders agaynst me, as though I were the arrantest Whore that euer had giuen her self ouer to the Galley flaues alongs the shore of Scicile. If he had vaunted the fauour which I haue done him but to certayne of his privat Friendes, I had incurred no flaunder at all, mutch lesse any lyttle suspition, but hearyng the common reportes, the wrongfull Woordes and wycked brutes that he hath rayfed on me: I beseech you syr, to do me reason that he may feele his offence and the smart for his committed fault against hir that is al yours." The Lord Sanseuerino hearyng this discourse, promised hir to do hys best, and to teache Valperga to talke more soberly of hir, whom he was not worthy for to serue, but in thought. Notwithstandyng, he sayde more than he ment to do, for he knew Ardizzino to be so honest, sage and curteous a personage, as hee would neyther doe nor say any thing without good cause, and that Ardizzino had iuster quarell agaynst him, by takyng that from hym whych hee loued (aloughue it was after his discontinuance from that place, and vpon the onely request of hir.) Thus he concluded in mind styl to remayne the fryend of Ardizzino, and yet to spend his time with the Countesse, which he did the space of certayn months without quarelling with Valperga, that was retired to Pauie, with whom he was conuersant, and liued familiarly, and most commonly vsed one table and bed togither. Bianca Maria seeing that the Lord of Gaiazzo cared not mutch for hir, but onely for his pleasure, determined to vse like practise against him, as she did to hir former louer, and to banish him from hir House. So that when he came to see hir, either she was sicke, or hir affaires were sutch, as she could not kepe hym company: or else hir gate was shut vpon him. In the end (playing double or quit) she prayed the sayd Lord to shewe hir sutch pleasure and friendship, as to come no more vnto hir, bicaufe she was in termes to goe home to hir husband the Counte of Celant, who had sent for hir, and feared least his seruaunts shoulde finde her house ful of futers, alleaging that she had liued long inouge in

that most sinful life, the lightest faultes whereof were to heynous for dames of hir port and calling, concluding that so long as she lyued she would beare him good affection for the Honest Company and conuersation had betwene them, and for hys curtesie towards hir. The yong Earle, were it that he gaue credite vnto hir tale or not, made as though he did beleue the same, and without longer dyscourse, forbare approche vnto hir house, and droue out of his heade al the Amorous affection which he caried to the Piedmont Circes. And to the ende he might haue no cause to thinke vpon hir, or that his presence should make hym flauie againe to hir that first pursued him, he retired in good time to Millan: by which retire hee avoided that mishap, wherwith at length this Pestilent women would haue cut him ouer the shinnenes, euen when his mind was least theron. Such was the malice and mischief of hir heart, who ceasing to play the whore, applied hir whole pastime to murder. Gaiazzo being departed from Pauie, thys Venus once agayne assayed the embracements of hir Ardizzino, and knew not wel how to recouer hym agayne, bycause she feared that the other had discouered the Enterpryse of his Murder. But what dare not shee attempte whose mynde is flauie to finne? The first assayes be harde, and the minde doubtfull, and conscience gnaweth vpon the worme of repentaunce, but the same once nouisled in vice, and rooted in the heart, it is more pleasaunte, and gladsome for the wicked to execute, than vertue is familiar to thosse that follow hir: So that shame separate from before the eyes of youth, riper age nourised in impudency, their sight is so daseled, as they can see nothing that eyther shame or feare can make them blush, which was the cause that this Lady, continuinge still in hir mischiefe, so mutch practised the freendes of hym whom she desired to kill, and made sutch fit excuse by hir Ambaffades, as hee was content to speake to hir, and to here hir Iustifications, whych were easy inough to doe, the Judge being not very guilty. Shee promised and fwores that if the fault were proued not to be in him, neuer man should see Bianca Maria, (so long as she lyued) to be other than a friend and flauie to the Lord Ardizzino, wholly submitting hirselfe vnto his will and pleasure. See how peace was capitulated betwene the two reconciled Louers, and what were the articles of

the same, the Lorde of Maffino entringe Possession agayne of the fort that was reuolte, and was long tyme in the power of another. But when he was seized agayne, the Lady saw full wel, that hir recouered friend was not so hard to please, as the other was, and that wyth him she liued at greater liberty. Continuing then their amorous Daunce, and Ardizzino haning no more care but to reioyce himselfe, nor hys Lady, but to cherishe and make mutch of hir friend, beholde eftsoones the desire of Bloud and wyll of murder, newly reuined in that new Megera, who incited (I knowe not with what rage,) fanfied to haue him slayne, whych refused to kill hym, whom at this present shee loued as hirselfe. And he that had inquired the cause thereof, I thyncke none other reason coulde be rendred, but that a braynelesse heade and reasonlesse minde, doe thincke most notable murders, and myschiefe be easie to be brought to passe, who so strangely proceeded in disordred Lustes, which in fine caused their myserable shame, and ruine, wyth the death of hirselfe and hym, whom shee had stirred to the fact, boldeninge him by persuasion, to make him belene Vyce to bee Vertue, and Glorioufly commended hym in hys follies, whych you shall heare by readinge at lengthe the discourse of thys Hystory. Bianca Maria, seeing hirselfe in full possession of hir Ardizzino, purposed to make hym chiefe executioner of the murder, by hir intended, vpon Gaiazzo, for the doing whereof one night holdinge hym betwene hir armes, after shee had long time dalyed with hym, like a cunninge Maistresse of hir Art, in the ende weauinge and trayninge hir treason at large, she sayd thus vnto him: “Syr, of long time I haue bene desirous to require a good turne at your hands, but fearing to trouble you, and thereupon to be denied, I thought not to be importunate: and albeit the matter toucheth you, yet did I rather holde my peace then to here refusall of a thinge, which your selfe ought to profer, the same concerning you.” “Madame,” sayd hir Louer, “you know the matter neede to be haynous and of great importaunce, that I should deny you, specially if it concerne the bleamish of your honor. But you say the same doth touch mee somewhat neerely, and therefore if ability be in me, spare not to vtter it, and I wyll assay your satissfaction to the vttermost of my power.” “Syr,” sayd she, “is the Counte

of Gaiazzo one of your very frends?" "I thinke" (aunswered Valperga) "that he is one of the surest frends I haue, and in respect of whose frendship, I will hazarde my selfe for him no lesse than for my Brother, being certaine that if I have neede of him, he will not fayle to do the like for me. But wherefore doe you aske me that question?" "I will then tel you," sayd the Traytresse (kissing him so sweetely as euer he felt the like of any Woman,) "for somutch as you be so deceyued of your opinion in him who is wicked in dissembling of that, which maliciously lieth hidden in hys heart. And briefly to say the effect: assure your selfe hee is the greatest and most mortall Ennemy that you haue in the Worlde. And to the intent that you do not think this to be some forged Tale, of light inuention, or that I heard the report of some not worthy of credit, I will say nothinge but that whych hymselfe did tell me, when in your absence he vsed my company. He sware vnto me, without declaration of the cause, that hee coulde neuer bee mery, nor hys mynde in rest, before hee saw you cut in pieces, and shortly woulde giue you sutch assaulte, as al the dayes of our lyfe, you shoulde neuer haue lust or mynde on Ladies loue. And albeit then, I was in choler agaynst you, and that you had ministred some cause, and reason of hatred, yet our first loue had taken sutch force in my hart, and I besought him not to do that enterprize so long as I was in place where you did remayne, because I cannot abide (wythout present death) to see your finger ake, mutch lesse your lyfe berieuued from you. Vnto which my sute his Eare was deafe, swearing still and protesting that either he would be slayne himselfe, or else dispatch the Countee Ardiz-zino. I durst not" (quod she) "ne wel could as then aduertise you thereof, for the smal acceſſe that my seruants had vnto your lodg-ing, but now I pray you to take good heede by preuenting his diuelishe purpose: For better it were for you to take his lyfe, than he to kill and murder you, or otherwyse work you mischiefe, and you shal be esteemed the wiser man, and he pronounced a traytor to seeke the death of him, that bare him sutch good will. Doe then accordeinge to myne aduice, and before he begin, doe you kill hym, by the which you shall sauе your selfe, and doe the part of a valyaunt knight, bifides, the satiffying of the mynde of hir that

aboue al pleasures of the World doth chiefly defire the same. Experience now will let me proue whether you loue me ornot, and what you will do for hir that loueth you so dearly, who openeth this conspired murder, aswell for your safety, as for lengthening of the lyfe of hir, which wythout yours cannot endure: graunt this my fute (O friend most deare) and suffer me not in sorrowfull plignt to be despoyled of thy presence: and wilt thou suffer that I shoulde dy, and that yonder Proude, Trayterous, and vnfaythfull varlet should liue to laugh mee to scorne?" If the Lady had not added those last words to hir foolish sermon, perchaunce she might haue prouoked Ardizzino to folow hir Counsell: but seeing hir so obstinately continue hir request, and to prosecute the fame with futch violence, concluding vpon hir owne quarrel, his conscience throbbed, and his minde measured the malice of that Woman, with the honesty of him, against whom that tale was told, who knew his frend to be so sound and trusty, as willingly he would not do the thinge that should offend him, and therefore would gene no credit to false report without good, and apparant proofoe: for which cause hee was perswaded that it was a malicious tale deuised by some that went about to sowe debate betweene those two friendly earles. Notwithstanding, vpon further pause, and not to make hir chafe, or force hir into rage, he promised the execution of hir cursed wil, thanking hir for hir aduertisement, and that he would prouide for hys defence and surety: and to the intent that shee might thyncke he went about to performe his promise, he tooke his leaue of hir to goe to Millan, which hee did, not to follow the abhomina ble will of that rauenous Mastife, but to reueale the matter to his companion, and direct the fame as it deserued. Being arriued at Millan, the chiefe Citye of Lombardy, he imparted to Gaiazzo from poynct to poynct the discourse of the Countesse, and the peticion shee made vnto hym, vpon the conclusion of hir Tale: "O God" (sayd the lord Sanfeuerino,) "who can beware the traps of Whoores, if by thy grace our hands be not forbidden, and our hearts and thoughts guided by thy goodnes? Is it possible that the Earth can breed a Monster more pernicious than this most Pestilent Beast? Thys is truely the grift of hir Father's vsury, and the stench of all hir Predecessours villanyes: it is impossible of a

Kyte or Cormerant to make a good Sparhauk, or Tercle gentle. This carion no doubt is the Daughter of a Vilayne, sprung of the basest race amongs the common people, whose mother was more fine than chaste, more subtile than sober: this minion hath forfaken hir husband, to erect bloudy Skaffoldes of murder amid the Nobles of Italy: and were it not for the dishonour which I should get to soyle my hands in the blonde of a Beast so corrupt, I woulde teare hir with my Teeth in a hundred Thousand peeces: how many times hath she entreated mee before: in how many sundry fortes with ioyned handes hath she besought mee to kill the Lorde Ardizzino? Ah, my Companion, and right well beloued Freende, can you thincke mee to bee so Trayterous, and Cowarde a Knaue, as that I dare not tell to them to whome I heare displeaseure what mallice lurketh in my heart?" "By the fayth of a Gentleman," (sayd Ardizzino,) "I would be fory my mynd should feaze on sutch Folly, but I am come to reueale thys vnto you, that the Song might sound no more wythin myne eares. It behoueth vs then, sith God hath kept vs hytherto, to avoyde the ayre of that infecction, that our braynes be not putrified, and from henceforth to fly thofe Blondfuckers, the Schollers of Venus: and truely great dishonour would redound to vs, to kill one an other for the onely pastime and sottish fansie of that mynion: I haue repented me an hundred times when she first mooued mee of the deuice to kill you, that I did not geeue a hundred Poignaladoes wyth my Dagger, to stop the way by that example for all other to attempt sutch Butcheries: for I am well assured that the mallyce whynch shee beareth you, proceedeth but of the delay you made for satisfaction of hir murderous desyre, whereof I thancke you, and yelde my selfe in all causes to imploy my lyfe, and that I haue, to do you seruice." "Leauwe we of that talk" (sayd Gaiazzo) "for I haue done but my duety, and that which ech Noble heart ought to euery wight, doing wrong to none, but prone to help, and doe good to all: whynch is the true marke and Badge of Nobility. Touching that malignant Strumpet, hir owne lyfe shall reuenge the wrongs which she hath gone about to venge on vs. In meane while let vs reioyce, and thincke the goods, and richeſſe ſhee hath gotten of vs, wil not cauſe hir Bagges mutch to Strout and Swel.

To be short, she hath nothing whereby she may greatly laugh vs to scorne, except our good entertainment of hir night and day do prouoke hir: let other coyne the pence henceforth to fill her Coafers, for of vs (so farre as I see) she is deceyued." Thus the two Lordes pased forth their tyme, and in all Companies where they came, they spent their Talke, and Communication of the disordered lyfe of the Countesse of Celant. The whole Citty also rang of the sleights and meanes she vised to trappe the Noblemen, and of her pollicies to be rid of them when her thirst was stanched, or diet grew lothefome for want of chaunge. And that whych greued hir most, an Italian Epigram blaſed forth hir prowes to hir great dishonour, whereof the Copy I cannot get, and some say that Ardizzino was the author: for it was composed, when he was dispossessed of pacience: and if shee coulde haue wreaked hir will on the knights, I beleue in hir rage she would haue made an Anathomy of their Bones. Of whych hir two enimies, Ardizzino was the greatest, agaynst whom hir displeasure was the more, for that he was the first with whom she entred skirmish. Nothing was more frequent in Pauy, than villanous Iefts, and Playes vpon the filthy Behauour of the Countesse, which made hir ashamed to goe out of hir Gates. In the ende shee purposed to chaunge the Ayre and place, hoping by that alteration to stay the Infamous Brute, and Slaunder: so she came to Millan, where first she was inuested wyth state of honour, in honest Fame of Chaste lyfe so longe as Vicount Hermes liued, and then was not pursued to staunch the thirst of those that did ordinarily draw at hir Fountaine. About the tyme that she departed from Pauy, Dom Pietro de Cardone a Scicilian, the Bastard Brother of the Counte of Colifano, whose Lieuetenaunt he was, and their father slayn at the Battayle of Bicocca wyth a band of horsemen arriued at Milan. This Scicilian was about the age of one or two and twenty yeres, somewhat black of face, but well made and sterne of countenance: whiles the Countesse foiorned at Milan, this gentleman fell in lone with hir, and searched all meanes he coulde to make hir hys friende, and to enjoy hir: who perceyuing him to be young, and a Nouice in Skirmishes of Loue, lyke a Pigeon of the first coate, determined

to lure him, and to serue hir turne in that which shee purposed to doe on those agaynst whom shee was outragiously offended. Now the better to entice thys younge Lorde vnto her Fantasye, and to catch hym wyth hir bayte, when hee pased through the Streate, and saluted hir, and when he Syghed after the manner of the Spaniard, rominge before hys Lady, shee shewed him an indifferent mery Coun-tenaunce, and sodaynely restrayned that Cheere, to make hym taste the pleasure mingled with the soure of one desire, which he could not tel how to accomplish: and the more faynt was his hardines for that he was neuer practised in the daliance and seruice of Lady of noble house or calling, who thincking that the Gentlewoman was one of the Principall of Millan, he was straungely vexed, and tormented for hir loue, in sutch wyse as in the night he could not rest for fanta-fing, and thynking vpon hir, and in the Day pased up and downe before the Doore of her lodging. One eueninge for his disport hee went forth to walke in company of another Gentleman, which well could play vpon the Lute, and desired him to gieue awake vnto hys Lady, that then for ialousie was harkeninge at hir window, both of the founde of the Instrument, and the Ditty of hir amorous Knight, where the Gentleman song thys Sonet.

The death with trenchant dart, doth brede in brest sutch il,
As I cannot forget the smart, that thereby rifeth fil.
Yet neertheleffe I am, the ill it selfe in deede,
That death with daily dolours deepe, within my breast doth breed.

I am my Mistresse thrall, and yet I doe not kno,
If she beare me good will at all, or if she loue or no.
My wound is made so large, with bitter wo in brest,
That still my heart prepares a place to lodge a carefull gueſt.

O dame that hath my lyfe and death at thy desire.
Come ease my mind, wher fancies flames doth burne like Ethn:
fire,
For wanting thee my life is death and doleful cheere,
And finding fauor in thy fight, my dayes are happy heere.

Then he began to sigh so terribly, as if already she had geuen sentence, and disfinitiue Iudgement of his farewell, and disputed with his fellow in futch sort, and wyth Opinion so assured of hys contempt, as if he had bene in loue with some one of the Infants of Spayne: for which cause he began very pitifully to sing these verses.

That God that made my soule, and knows what I haue felt,
Who causeth fighes and forows oft, the fely soule to swelt,
Doth see my tormentes now, and what I suffer still,
And vnderstands I taſt mo griefs, than I can shew by ſkill.

Hee doth conſent I wot, to my ill hap and woe,
And hath accorded with the dame that is my pleasaunt foe,
To make my boyling brest abound in bitter bliſſe,
And ſo bereue me of my reſt, when heart his hope ſhall miſſe.

O what are not the ſongs, and ſighs that louers haue,
When night and day with ſweete diſires, they draw vnto their
graue,
Their grief by frendſhip growes, where ruth nor pity raynes,
And ſo like ſnow againſt the Sun, they melt away with pains.

My dayes muſt finiſh ſo, my deſtny hath it ſet,
And as the candle out I goe, before hir grace I get.
Before my ſute be heard, my ſeruice throughly knowne,
I ſhalbe layd in Toumbe ful low, ſo colde as Marble ſtone.

To thee fayre Dame I cry, that makes my ſenſes arre,
And plantest peace within my brest and then makes fodain war:
Yet at thy pleaſure ſtill, thou muſt my fowre make ſweete,
In graunting me the fauour due, for faythfull Louers meete.

Which fauor geue me now, and to thy Noble mynde,
I doe remayne a Galley flauē, as thou by prooſe ſhall finde.
And ſo thou ſhalt reſeaſe my heart from cruell bandes,
And haue his fredome at thy wil that yelds into thy handes.

So rending all to thee, the gods may ioyne vs both
Within one lawe and league of loue, through force of constant
troth.

Then shalt thou mistresse be, of lyfe, of Limme and all,
My goods, my golde, and honour, loe! shall so be at thy call.

Thys gentle order of loue greatly pleased the Lady, and therefore opened hir gate to let the Scicilian lorde, who seeing hymselfe fauoured (beyond all hope) of his Lady, and cheerefully intertayned, and welcommmed with great curtefie stooode so still astonned, as if hee had beene fallen from the Cloudes: but she which coulde teache hym good manner, to make hym the minister of hir myschiefe, takynge hym by the hande, made hym fit downe vpon a greene Bed besydes hir, and seeing that he was not yet imbolde ned, for all hee was a Souldiour, shee shewed hir selfe more hardy than hee, and firste assayled hym wyth talke, sayinge: "Syr, I praye you thinke it not straunge, if at thys houre of the nyght, I am bolde to cause you enter my house, beinge of no great ac quayntaunce wyth you, but by hearinge your curteous saluta tions: and wee of thys Countrey bee somewhat more at liberty than they in those partes from whence you come: besides it lyketh mee well (as I am able) to honour straunge gentlemen, and to retayne theym with right good willinge heart, sith it pleafeth theym to honour mee wyth repaire vnto my house: so shall you be welcome styll when you please to knocke at my Gate, whych at all tymes I wyll to be opened for you, wyth no leffe good wyll than if yee were my naturall Brother, the same wyth all the thinges therein, it may please you to dispose as if they were your own." Dom Pietro of Cardonne well satisfied, and contented wyth thys vnlooked for kyndnesse, thanked her very Curteously, humbly pray ing hir besides to dayne it in good parte, if he were so bolde to make requeste of loue, and that it was the onelye thynge which hee aboue all other defyred moste, so that if shee would receiue him for hir friende and Seruaunt, shee shoulde vnderstande him to be a Gentleman, which lightly woulde promise nothing excepte the accomplishment did followe: she that sawe a greater onset than she loked for, answered hym smilyng with a very good grace:

“Sir, I haue knowne very many that haue vouched slipperie promyses, and proffered lordly seruices vnto Ladies, the effect wherof if I myght once see, I would not thinke that they coulde vanishe so soone, and consume like smoake.” “Madame” (fayde the Scicilian) “yf I fayle in any thing which you commaunde mee, I praye to God neuer to receiue any fauor or grace of those Curtesies whych I craue.” “If then” (quod shee) “you wyl promise to employ your selfe aboute a businesse that I haue to do when I make request, I wyll also to accept you for a friende, and graunt futch fecrecie as a faithful louer can desyre of his Lady.” Dom Pietro which would have offred hym selfe in Sacrifice for hir, not knowyng hir demaunde, tooke an othe, and promyfed hir so lyghtly as madly afterwardes he did put the same in proofe. Beholde the preparatiues of the obsequies of their first loue, and the guages of a bloudie Bed: the one was prodigall of hir honoure, the other the tormente of his reputation, and neglected the duety and honor of his stafe, which the house wherof he came, commaunded hym to kepe. Thus all the nyght he remained with Bianca Maria, who made him so wel to like hir good entertaynement and imbracementes, as he neuer was out of her Company. And the warie Circes fayned her self so fare in loue wyth hym, and vsed so many toyes and gametricks of her filthy science, as he not onelye esteemed hym selfe the happiest Gentleman of Scicilia, but the most fortunate wight of all the Worlde, and by bibbing of hir Wyne was so straungely charmed with the Pleasures of his fayre Mystresse, as for hir sake he would haue taken vpon him the whole ouerthrowe of Milan, so well as Blose of Cumes to sette the Cittye of Rome on fire, if Tyberius Gracchus the fedicious, woulde haue giuen it him in charge. Sutch is the manner of wilde and foolish youth, whych suffreth it selfe to be caried beyonde the boundes of reason. The same in time past did ouerthrow many Realmes, and caused the chaunge of diuers Monarchies: and truely vnseemely it is for a man to be subdued to the will of a common strumpet. And as it is vncomly to submit him selfe to futch one, so not requisite to an honest and vertuous Dame, his maried Wyfe. Which vnmanly deedes, be occasions that diuers Foolishe Women commit futch filthy factes, with

their inspekable trumperies begiling the simple man, and perchance through to mutch losing the Bridle raynes to the lawfull Wyfe, the poore man is strangely deceyued by some adulterous varlet, whych at the Wyue's commaundment, when she feeth oportunity, wil not shrinke to hazarde the honour of them both, in sutch wife as they serue for an example vppon a common Scaffold to a whole generation and Posterity. I wyll not seeke farre of for examples, being satissified with the folly of the Bastard Cardonne, to please the cruelty and malice of that infernall fury the Countesse, who hauinge lulled, flattered, and bewitched with hir louetrickes (and peraduenture with some charmed drinke) her new Pigeon, seeinge it time to solicite his promise, to be reuenged of thosse, whych thought no more of hir conspiracies and trayterous deuises, and also when the time was come for punishinge of hir whoredome, and chastising of the breach of fayth made to hir husbande, and of hir intended murders, and some of them put in execution, she I say, desirous to see the ende of that, which in thought she had contruyed, vppon a day tooke Dom Pietro aside, and secretly began this Oration: "I take God to witnes (fir) that the request which I pretend presently to make, proceedeth of desire rather that the Worlde may know how iustly I seeke meanes to mayntayne myne honour, than for desire of reuenge, knowinge very well, that there is nothing so precious, and deere vnto a woman, as the preferuacion of that inestimable Iewell, specially in a Lady of that honourable degré whych I mayntayne amonge the best. And to the intent I seeme not tedious with prolixity of words, or vse other than direct circumstancies before him that hath offred iust reuenge for the wrongs I haue receyued: knowe you fir, that for a certain tyme I continued at Pauie, kepynge a house and Trayne so honest, as the best Lords were contented wyth myne ordinarye: It chaunced that two honest Gentlemen of Noble House haunted my Palace in lyke sort, and with the same intertainment whych as you see, I doe receiue ech Gentleman, who beyng well intreated and honoured of me, in the ende forgat them selues so farre, as without respect of my state and callinge, wythout regard of the race and family wheroft they come, haue attempted the flaunder of my good name, and vtter subuersion of my

renoume: and sufficient it was not for them thus to deale with mee poore Gentlewoman, without desert (excepte it were for admityng them to haue acceſſe vnto my house) but also to continue their Blasphemies, to myne extreame reproach and shame: and howe true the same is, they that know mee can well declare, by reaſon whereof, the vulgar people prone and ready to wycked reportes, haue conceiued futch opynion of me, as for that they see mee braue and fine in Apparell, and ſpecyally throughe the flaundrous ſpeache of thofe gallantes, do deeme and repute me for a common Whoore, wherof I craue none other wytnesse than your ſelfe and my conſcience. And I ſweare vnto you, that ſith I came to Milan, it is you alone that hath vanquished, and made the Triumphe of my Chaſtytye: and yf you were abſent from this Citye, I affiure you on my fayth that I would not tarry heere xxiiii. houres. Theſe infamoſe ruffians I ſay, theſe perſecuters and termagantes of my good name, haue chafed mee out of all good Cityes, and made me to be abhorred of ech honest company, that weary I am of my lyfe, and lothe to lyue any longer except ſpedye redrefſe bee had for reuengement of thys wronge: wherefore except I finde ſome Noble Champion and Valyaunte Perfonage to requyte theſe Vyllains for their ſpitefull Speach blaſed on me in euerye Corner of Towne and Countreye, and to paye them theyr rewarde and hire that I may lyue at Lybertye and quyet, Sorrowe wyll eyther conſume mee or myne owne handes ſhall haſten ſpedye Death." And in ſpeakyng theſe Woordes, ſhee beganne to weepe with futch abundance of teares ſtreaming downe hir Cheekeſ and Necke of Alabaster hewe, as the Scicilian whych almoſt had none other God but the Counteffe, ſayd vnto hir: "And what is he, that dare moleſt and ſlaundur hir that hath in hir puiffaunce ſo many Souldiers and men of Warre? I make a vow to God, that if I know the names of thofe two arrant vilaynes, the which haue ſo defamed my Myſtrefſe name, the whole worlde ſhall not ſauē their liues, whose carriōn Bodies I will hew into ſo many gobbeſts, as they haue members vpon the fame: wherefore Madame" (ſayd he, imbracing her) "I pray you to grieue your ſelfe no more, commit your wronges to me, only tell me the names of thofe Gallaunts, and afterwards you ſhall vnderſtande

what difference I make of woerde and deede, and if I doe not trimme and dresse theym so finely, as hereafter they shall haue no neede of Barber, neuer trust me any more.” Shee, as reviued from death to lyfe, kyssed and embraced him a thousand tymes, thankinge hym for his good will, and offering him all that she had. In the ende she tolde him that hir enimies were the countes of Maffino and Gaiazzo, which but by theyr deaths alone were not able to amend and repayre hir honour. “Care not you” (sayde hee) “for before that the Sunne shall spreade his Beames twice 24 houres vpon the earth, you shall heare newes, and know what I am able to do for the chastifement of thosse deuils.” As he promised, hee fayled not to do: for wythin a whyle after as Ardizzino was goinge to supper into the Citty, he was espyed by hym, that had in company attendaunt vpon hym fyue and twenty men of Armes, which waited for Ardizzino, in a Lane on the left hand of the Streate called Merauegli, leading towards the church of Sainct Iames, through which the Countee must needs passe. Who as he was goinge very pleasantly disposed with his brother, and 5 or 6 of his men, was immediately assayled on euery side, and not knowinge what it ment, would haue fled, but the Wayes, and Passages were stopped rounde aboue: to defende himselfe it auayled not hauing but their singe Swords, and amid the troupe of futch a bande that were throughly armed, which in a moment had murdred, and cut in peeces all that company. And although it was late, yet the Countie Ardizzino many times named Dom Pietro, which caused hym to be taken, and imprisoned by the Duke of Bourbon, that was fled out of Fraunce, and then was Lieutenaunt for the Emperour Charles the fifth in Milan. Whosoever was astonned and amazed with that Imprisonment, it is to bee thoughte that the Scicilan was not greatly at his ease and quiet, who needed no torments to force him confess the fact, for of his owne accorde voluntarily he dysclosed the same, but he sayde he was prouoked therunto by the persuasion of Bianca Maria telling the whole discourse as you haue heard before. She had already intelligence of this chaunce, and might haue fled and sauied hir selfe before the fact (by the confession of Dom Pietro) had ben discouered, and attended in some secrete place till that stormie

time had bene calmed and appeased. But God which is a rightfull iudge woulde not suffer hir wickednesse stretch any further, sith she hauing found out futch a nimble and wilful executioner, the Countee of Gaiazzo could not long haue remained aliue, who then in good time and happy houre was absent out of the City. So soone as Dom Pietro had accused the Countesse, the Lord of Bourbon sente her to pryson, and being examined, confessed the whole matter, trustinge that hir infinite numbre of Crownes woulde haue corrupted the Duke, or those that represented his person. But hir Crownes and Lyfe pased all one way. For the day after hir imprisonment shee was condempned to lose hir heade: and in the meane time Dom Pietro was faued, by the diligence and suite of the Captaynes, and was employed in other Warres, to whom the Duke gaue him, for that he was lothe to lose so notable a Souldiour, the very right hand of his Brother the Countee of Colisano. The Countesse hauing sentence pronounced vppon hir, but trusting for pardon, would not prepare hir selfe to dy, ne yet by any meanes craue forgiuenes of hir faults at the hands of God, vntil she was conueyed out of the Castell, and ledde to the common place of execution, where a Scaffolde was prepared for hir to play the last A^ete of thys Tragedy. Then the miserable Lady began to know hirselfe, and to confesse hir faults before the people, deuoutly praying God, not to haue regard to hir demerites, ne yet to determine his wrath agaynst hir, or enter with hir in iudgement, for so mucht as if the same were decreed accordeinge to hir iniquity, no saluation was to be looked for. She besought the people to pray for hir, and the countee of Gaiazzo that was absent, to pardon hir malice, and treason which she had deuised agaynst him. Thus miserably and repentantly dyed the Countesse, which in hir lyfe refused not to imbrace and follow any wickednes, no mischiefe shee accompted euill done, so the same were imployed for hir pleasure and pastime. A goodly example truely for the youth of our present time, sith the most part indifferently do launch into the gulfe of disordred lyfe, suffring themselues to bee plunged in the puddles of their owne vayne conceiptes, without consideracion of the mischieues that may ensue. If the Lord of Cardonne had not bene beloued of his generall, into what calamity had he fallen for

yeldinge himselfe a pray to that bloody Woman who had more regarde to the light, and wilfull fanfie of hir, whom he serued like a flauue, than to his duety and estimation? And truely all futch be voyde of their right wits, which thincke themselues beloued of a Whore. For their amity endureth no longer than they fucke from their purfes and bodies any profit or pleasure. And because almost euery day semblable examples be seene, I will leauue of this discourse, to take me to a matter, not farre more pleasaunt than this, although founded vpon better grounde, and stablished upon loue, the first onset of lawfull mariage, the successe whereof chaunced to murderous ende, and yet the same intended by neyther of the beloned: as you shall be iudge by the continuance of reading of the history ensuing. Beare with me good Ladyes (for of you alone I craue this pardon) for introducing the Whoorish lyfe of the Countesse, and hir bloody enterprise: bicause I know right wel, that recitall of murders, and bloody fa&cts wearieh the mindes of those that loue to lyue at rest, and wish for fayre weather after the troublesome stormes of raging Seas, no leſſe than the Pilote and wife Mariner, hauing long time endured and cut the perillous straights of the Ocean Sea. And albeit the corruption of our nature be so great, as follies delighte vs more than ernest matters fraught wyth reason and wisedome, yet I thinke not that our mindes be so peruerted and diuided from trouth, but sometimes wee care and seeke to speake more grauely than the countrey Hynde, or more soberly than they, whose lyues do beare the marke of infamy, and be to euery wight notorious for the onely name of their vocation. Suffiseth vs that an Hystory, be it neuer so full of sporte and pleasure, do bring with it instruction of our lyfe, and amendment of our maners. And wee ought not to be so curious or scrupulous, to reiect merry and pleasant deuises that be voide of harmful talke, or wythout futch glee as may hynder the education of Youth proclive, and ready to choose that is corrupt, and naught. The very bookeſ of holy ſcriptures doe deſcribe vnto vs perſons that bee vicious, and ſo detestable as nothing more, whose factes vnto the ſimple may ſeeme vnſeemely, vpon the leaſt recitall of the ſame. And ſhall wee therefore reiect the readinge, and eſchue thoſe holy bookeſ? God forbiid, but with diligēce to

beware, that we do not resemble those that be remembred there for example, for somutch as speedely after finne, ensueth grieuous, and as fodayne punishment. For which cause I haue selected these Historyes, of purpose to aduertise Youth, how they that follow the way of damnable iniquity, fayle not shortly after their great offences, and execution of their outragious vices, to feele the iust and mighty hand of God, who guerdoneth the good for their good works and deedes, and rewardeth the euil for their wickednes and mischiefe. Now turne we then to the Hystory of two, the rareft Louers that euer were, the performaunce, and finishinge whereof, had it bene so prosperous as the beginning, they had ioyed ioyfully the Fruictes of their intent, and two noble houses of one City reconciled to perpetuall frendship.

THE TWENTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The goodly Hystory of the true, and constant Loue between Rhomeo and Iuiletta, the one of whom died of Poyson, and the other of sorrow, and heuineffe: wherein be compryfed many aduentures of Loue, and other deuises touchinge the same.

I AM sure that they which measure the Greatnesse of Goddes workes accordinge to the capacity of their Rude, and simple vnderstandinge, wyl not lightly adhibite credite vnto thys History, so wel for the variety of straunge Accidents which be therein described, as for the nouelty of so rare, and perfect amity. But they that haue read Plinie, Valerius Maximus, Plutarche, and diuers other Writers, do finde, that in olde time a great number of Men and Women haue died, some of exceſſive ioy, some of ouermutch sorrow, and some of other paffions: and amonſt the ſame, Loue is not the leaſt, whych when it feazeth vpon any kynde and gentle ſubiect, and findeth no refiſtance to ferue for a rampart to ſtay the violence of his courſe, by little and little vndermineth, melteth and conſumeth the vertues of naturall powers in futch wyſe as the ſpyrite yealdinge to the burden, abandoneth the place of lyfe: which is verified by the pitifull, and infortunate death of two Louers that ſurrendered their laſt Breath in one Toumbe at Verona a City of Italy, wherein repoſe yet to thys day (with great maruell) the Bones, and remnauntes of their late louing bodies: an hystory no leſſe wonderfull than true. If then perticular affection which of good right euery man ought to beare to the place where he was borne, doe not deceyue thoſe that trauayle, I thincke they will confeſſe wyth me, that few Citties in Italy, can ſurpaſſe the ſayd City of Verona, aſwell for the Nauigable riuer called Adiſſa, which paſſeth almoſt through the midſt of the ſame, and thereby a great traſique into Almayne, as alſo for the proſpect towards the Fertile Mountaynes, and pleaſant valeys whych do enuiron the ſame, with a great number of very clere and lyuely fountaynes, that ferue for the eaſe and commodity of the place. Omittinge (biſides many other ſingularities) foure Bridges, and an

infinite number of other honourable Antiquities dayly apparaunt vnto thosse, that be to curious to viewe and looke vpon them. Which places I haue somewhat touched, because thys most true History which I purpose hereafter to recite, dependeth thereupon, the memory whereof to thys day is so wel known at Verona, as vnneths their blubbred Eyes be yet dry, that saw and beheld that lamentable fight. When the Senior Escala was Lord of Verona, there were two families in the Citty, of farre greater fame than the rest, aswell for riches as Nobility: the one called the Monteschs, and the other the Capellets: but lyke as most commonly there is discorde amongs theym which be of semblable degree in honour, euen so there hapned a certayne enmity betweene them: and for so mutch as the beginning thereof was vnlawfull, and of ill foundation, so lykewyse in processe of time it kindled to futch flame, as by diuers and sundry deuyfes practised on both fides, many lost their lyues. The Lord Bartholmew of Escala, (of whom we haue already spoken) being Lord of Verona, and seeing futch disorder in his common weale, assayed diuers and sundry waies to reconcile those two houses, but all in vayne: for their hatred had taken futch roote, as the same could not be moderated by any wyse counsell or good aduice: betweene whom no other thing could be accorded, but geuing ouer Armour, and Weapon for the time, attending some other seafon more conuenient, and wyth better leyisure to appeafe the rest. In the time that these thinges were adoing, one of the family of Monteschs called Rhomeo, of the age of 20 or 21. yeares, the comliest and best conditioned Gentleman that was amonges the Veronian youth, fell in loue with a yong Gentlewoman of Verona, and in few dayes was attached with hir Beauty, and good behauour, as he abandoned all other affaires and busines, to serue and honour hir: and after many Letters, Ambassades, and presents, he determined in the ende to speake vnto hir, and to disclose hys passions, which he did without any other practise. But she which was vertuously brought vp, knew how to make him so good answer to cut of his amorous affections, as he had no lust after that time to returne any more, and shewed hir self so austere, and sharpe of Speach, as she vouchsafed not with one looke to behold him. But how mutch the young Gentleman saw hir whist,

and silent, the more he was inflamed: and after he had continued certayne months in that seruice wythout remedy of his griefe, he determined in the ende to depart Verona, for prooife if by chaunge of the place he might alter his affection, saying to himselfe: "What do I meane to loue one that is so vnkinde, and thus doth disdayn me: I am all hir owne, and yet she flieth from me: I can no longer liue, except hir presence I doe enjoy: and she hath no contented mynde, but when she is furthest from me: I will then from henceforth Estrange my selfe from hir, for it may so come to passe by not beholding hir, that thys fire in me which taketh increase and nourishment by hir fayre Eyes, by little and little may dy and quench." But minding to put in prooife what he thought, at one instant hee was reduced to the contrary, who not knowing whereupon to resolute, passed dayes and nights in marueilous Playnts, and Lamentations: for Loue vexed him so neare, and had so well fixed the Gentlewoman's Beauty within the Bowels of his heart, and mynde, as not able to resist, hee faynted with the charge, and consumed by little and little as the Snow agaynst the Sunne: whereof hys parenttes, and kinred did maruayle greatly, bewaylinge hys misfortune, but aboue all other one of hys Companyons of riper Age, and Counsell than hee, began sharply to rebuke him: for the loue that he bare him was so great as hee felt hys Martirdome, and was pertaker of hys passion: which caused him by ofte viewyng his friend's disquietnesse in amorous panges, to say thus vnto him: "Rhomeo, I maruell much that thou spendest the best time of thine age, in pursute of a thing, from which thou feest thy self despised and banished, wythout respecte either to thy prodigall dispense, to thine honor, to thy teares, or to thy myserable lyfe, which be able to moue the most constant to pity: wherefore I pray thee for the Loue of our auncient amity, and for thyne health sake, that thou wilt learn to be thine owne man, and not to alyenat thy lyberty to any so ingrate as she is: for so farre as I conieecture by things that are pased betwene you, either she is in loue wyth some other, or else determineth never to loue any. Thou arte yong, rich in goods and fortune, and more excellent in beauty than any Gentleman in thys Cyty: thou art well learned, and the onely sonne of the house wherof thou commest: what gryef would

it bee to thy poore olde Father and other thy parentes, to see the so drowned in this dongeon of Vyce, specially at that age wherein thou oughtest rather to put them in some Hope of thy Vertue? begyn then from henceforth to acknowledge thyne error, wherein thou haft hitherto lyued, doe away that amorous vaile or couerture whych blyndeth thyne Eyes and letteth thee to folow the ryghte path, wherein thine auncestors haue walked: or else if thou do feele thy self so subiect to thyne owne wyll, yelde thy hearte to some other place, and chose some Mistresse accordyng to thy worthyneſſe, and henceforth doe not sow thy Paynes in a Soyle fo harrayne whereof thou reapeſt no Fruycte: the tyme approcheth when al the Dames of the Cyty ſhal assemble, where thou mayſt behold futch one as ſhall make thee forget thy former gryefs.” Thys younge Gentleman attentyuely hearyng all the perſuadynge reaſons of hys fryend, began ſomewhaſt to moderate that heate and to acknowledge all the exhortatyonſ which hee had made to be directed to good purpose: and then determined to put them in prooſe, and to be preſent indifferently at al the feaſts and aſſemblyes of the City, without bearing aſſection more to one Woman than to an other: and continued in thys manner of Lyfe, II. or III. montheſ, thinking by that meaſes to quench the ſparks of auncient flames. It chaunced then within few dayes after, about the eaſt of Chryſtmaſſe, when feaſts and bankets moſt commonly be vſed, and maskes accordyng to the cuſtome frequented, that Anthonie Capellet being the Chief of that Familye, and one of the principall Lords of the City too, made a banket, and for the better Solempnization thereof, inuited all the Noble men and dames, to which Feaſt reſorted the moſt part of the youth of Verona. The family of the Capellets (as we haue declared in the beginninge of thys Hystory) was at variance with the Monteches, which was the caufe that none of that family repaired to that Banket, but onelye the yong Gentleman Rhomeo, who came in a maske after ſupper with certayne other yong Gentlemen: and after they had remained a certayne ſpace with their viſards on, at length they did put of the ſame, and Rhomeo very shamefaſt, withdrew himſelf into a Corner of the Hall: but by reaſon of the light of the Torches which burned very bright, he was by and by

knownen and loked vpon of the whole Company, but specially of the Ladies, for besides his Natvie Beauty wherewyth Nature had adorned him, they maruelled at his audacity how hee durst presume to enter so secretly into the House of that Famillye which had little cause to do him any good. Notwithstanding, the Capellets dissembling their mallice, either for the honor of the company, or else for respect of his Age, did not misuse him eyther in Worde or Deede: by meanes whereof wyth free liberty he behelde and viewed the Ladies at hys Pleasure, which hee dyd so well, and wyth grace so good, as there was none but did very well lyke the presence of his person: and after he had particularly giuen Iudgement vpon the excellency of each one, according to his affection, hee sawe one Gentlewoman amonges the reste of surpassinge Beautye who (althoughe hee had neuer seene hir tofore) pleased him aboue the rest, and attributed vnto hir in heart the Chyefest place for all perfection in Beautye: and feastyng hir incessantlye with piteous lookes, the Loue whynch hee bare to his first Gentlewoman, was ouercomen with this newe fire, that toke sutch norisiment and vigor in his hart, as he was not able neuer to quench the same but by Death only: as you may vnderstande by one of the strangest discourses, that euer any mortal man deuised. The yong Rhomeo then felyng himselfe thus tossed wyth thys newe Tempeste, could not tell what countenaunce to vse, but was so surpised and chaunged with these last flames, as he had almost forgotten himselfe, in sutch wise as he had not audacity to enquyre what she was, and wholly bente himselfe to feede hys Eyes with hir fighte, wherewyth he moystened the sweete amorous venome, which dyd so empoyson him, as hee ended hys Dayes with a kinde of most cruell death. The Gentlewoman that dydde put Rhomeo to sutch payne was called Iulietta, and was the Daughter of Capellet, the mayster of the house wher that asssembly was, who as hir Eyes did rolle and wander too and fro, by chaunce espied Rhomeo, which vnto hir seemed to be the goodliest personage that euer shee sawe: and Loue (which lay in wayte neuer vntill that time,) assayling the tender heart of that yong Gentlewoman, touched hir so at the quicke, as for any resistance she coulde make, was not able to defende his forces, and then began to set at naught

the royalties of the feast, and felt no pleasure in hir heart, but when she had a glimpse by throwing or receiuing some fight or looke of Rhomeo. And after they had contented eche others troubled heart with millions of amorous lookes which oftentimes interchangeably encountered and met together, the burning Beames gaue sufficient testimony of loue's priuy onfettes. Loue hauing made the heartes breache of those two louers, as they two sought meanes to speake together, Fortune offered them a very meete and apt occasion. A certayne Lord of that troupe and companye tooke Iulietta by the Hande to Daunce, wherein shee behaued hir selfe so well, and wyth so excellent grace, as shée wannte that Daye the prise of Honour from all the Damofels of Verona. Rhomeo hauynge foreseen the place wherewnto shée mynded to retire, approched the same, and so dyscretelye vsed the matter, as hee founde the meanes at hir retурne to fit beside hir: Iulietta when the daunce was finished, returned to the very place where shē was set before, and was placed betwene Rhomeo and an other gentleman called Mercutio, which was a courtlyke Gentleman, very well be loued of all men, and by reason of his pleasaunt and curteous behauior was in euery company wel intertayned. Mercutio that was of audacity among Maydens, as a Lyon is among Lambes, seazed incontynently vpon the hande of Iulietta, whose hands wontedly were so cold both in Wynter and Sommer as the Mountayne yce, although the fire's heat did warm the same. Rhomeo whynch sat vpon the left fide of Iulietta, seynge that Mercutio held hir by the right hand, toke hir by the other that he myght not be deceiued of his purpose, and strayning the same a little, he felt himself so prest wyth that newe fauor, as he remayned mute, not able to aunswer: but shē perceyuyng by his chaunge of color, that the fault proceded of the vehemence of loue, defyryng to speake vnto hym, turned hir selfe towards hym, and wyth tremblyng voyce ioyned with virginal shamefastnesse, intermedled with a certayn bashfulnesse, sayd to hym: "Blessed be the houre of your neare approche:" but mynding to procede in further talke, loue had so closed vp hir mouth, as shē was not able to end hir Tale. Wherunto the yong Gentleman all rauished with ioy and contentation, fighing, asked hir what was the cause of that ryght fortunate

bleffing: Iulietta, somwhat more emboldened with pytyful loke and fmyling countenance, said vnto him: "Syr, do not maruell yf I do bleffe your comminge hither, because fir Mercutio a good tyme wyth frosty hand hath wholly frosen mine, and you of your curtesy haue warined the same agayne." Wherunto immediatly Rhomeo replied: "Madame, if the heauens haue ben so fauorable to employe me to do you some agreeable seruice, being repaired hither by chance amongs other Gentlemen, I esteeme the same well bestowed, crauyng no greater benefite for satiffaction of all my contentations receiued in this World, than to serue obey and honor you so long as my lyfe doth last, as experience shall yeld more ample prooef when it shall please you to geue further assay: moreouer, if you haue received any Heat by touche of my Hand, you may be well assured that those flames be dead in respect of the lyuely Sparkes and violent fire which sorteth from you fayre Eyes, which fire hath so fiercely inflamed all the most sensible parts of my body, as if I be not succored by the fauoure of your good graces, I do attend the time to be consumed to duff." Scarfe had he made an ende of those last words but the daunce of the Torche was at an end: whereby Iulietta, which wholly burnt in loue, straightly claspyng her Hand with hys, had no leyisure to make other aunswere, but softly thus to say: "My deare frend, I know not what other assured wytnesse you desire of loue, but that I let you vnderstand that you be no more your own, than I am yours, beying ready and dysposed to obey you so farre as honour shal permitt, befeechyng you for the present tyme to content your selfe wyth thys aunswere, vntyll some other season meeter to Com-mvnicate more secretly of our affaires." Rhomeo seeing himselfe pressed to part of the Company, and for that hee knew not by what meanes he myght see hir agayne that was hys Life and Death, demaunded of one of his friends what shee was, who made aunswere that she was the Daughter of Capellet, the Lord of the house, and Mayster of that daye's feast (who wroth beyonde meaure that Fortune had sent him to so daungerous a place, thought it impossible to bring to end his enterprise begon.) Iulietta couetous on the other side, to know what yong Gentleman he was which had so curteously intertayned hir that Nyght, and of whome shee felt

the new wound in hir heart, called an olde Gentlewoman of honor which had nursed hir and brought her vp, vnto whom she sayd leaning vpon hir shoulder: "Mother, what two young Gentlemen be they which first goe forth with the two Torches before them." Vnto whome the old Gentlewoman told the name of the houses wherof they came. Then she asked hir againe, what young gentleman that was which holdeth the visarde in his hand, wyth the damaske cloke about him. "It is" (quod she) "Romeo Montesche, the sonne of youre Father's capytall Enimye and deadly foe to all your kinne." But the Mayden at the onely Name of Montesche was altogither amazed, despayrynge for euer to attayne to husband hir great affe^tyoned fryend Rhomeo, for the auncyent hatreds betweene thosse two Families. Neuerthelesse she knewe so well how to dissemble hir grief and discontented Minde, as the olde Gentlewoman perceiued nothing, who then began to persuade hir to retire into hir Chamber: whom she obeyed, and being in bed, thinking to take hir wonted rest, a great tempest of diuers thoughtes began to enuiron and trouble hir Mynde, in sutch wyfe as shee was not able to close hir Eyes, but turninge heere and there, fanta- fied diuers things in hir thought, sometimes purposed to cut of the whole attempte of that amorous practise, sometimes to continue the same. Thus was the poor pucell vexed with two contraries, the one comforted hir to pursue hir intent, the other proposed the immynente Perill wherevnto vndyscreetly shee headlong threwe hir self: and after shee had wandred of long time in this amorous Labe- rinth, shee knew not whereupon to resolute, but wept incessantly, and accused hir selfe, saying: "Ah, Caitife and myserable Creature, from whence do rise these vnaccustomed Trauayles which I feele in Mynde, prouokynge mee to loose my rest: but infortunate wretch, what doe I know if that yong Gentleman doe loue mee as hee fayeth. It may be vnder the vaile of sugred woordes he goeth about to steale away mine honore, to be reuenged of my Parentes whych haue offended his, and by that meanes to my euerlastinge reproche to make me the fable of the Verona people." Afterwardes sodainly as shee condempned that which shee suspected in the beginning, sayd: "Is it possible that vnder sutch beautye and rare comelynesse, dysloyaltye and treason may haue theyr

Syedge and Lodgynge? If it bee true that the Face is the faythfull Messanger of the Mynde's Conceypte, I may bee assured that hee doeth loue mee: for I marked so many chaunged Colours in his Face in time of his talke with me, and sawe hym so transported and besides himselfe, as I cannot wythe any other more certayne lucke of Loue, wherein I wyll perfyft immutable to the laste gaspe of Lyfe, to the intente I may haue hym to bee my husband: for it maye so come to passe, as this newe aliaunce shall engender a perpetuall peace and Amity betweene hys Houfe and mine." Arrestinge then vpon this determinyation styll, as she saw Rhomeo passinge before hir Father's Gate, she shewed hir selfe with merry countenance, and followed him so with loke of Eye, vntill she had lost his sight. And continuing this manner of Lyfe for certaine Dayes, Rhomeo not able to content himself with lookes, daily did behold and marke the situation of the house, and one day amongs others hee espied Iulieta at hir Chamber Window, bounding vpon a narrow Lane, ryght ouer against which Chamber he had a Gardein which was the cause that Rhomeo fearing discouery of their loue, began the day time to passe no more before the Gate, but so soone as the Night with his browne Mantell had couered the Earth, hee walked alone vp and downe that little streat: and after he had bene there many times, misſing the chiefeſt cauſe of his comming, Iulieta impacient of hir euill, one night repaireſt to hir window, and perceiued throughe the bryghtnesſe of the Moone hir friend Rhomeo vnder hir window, no leſſe attended for, than hee hymſelfe was waighting. Then ſhe ſecrely with Teares in hir Eyes, and wyth voyce interrupted by ſighes, ſayd: "Signior Rhomeo, me thinke that you hazarde your person to mutch, and commyt the ſame into great Daunger at thys time of the Nyght, to protrude your ſelf to the Mercy of them which meane you little good. Who yf they had taken would haue cut you in pieces, and mine honor (which I eſteeme dearer than my lyfe,) hindred and ſuſpected for euer." "Madame" aunſwered Rhomeo, "my Lyfe is in the Hand of God, who only can diſpoſe the ſame: howbeyt yf any Man had ſougheſt menes to beryeue mee of my Lyfe, I ſhould (in the preſence of you) haue made him knownen what mine ability had ben to defend the ſame. Notwythſtandynge Lyfe is not ſo deare, and

of futch estimation wyth me, but that I coulde vouchsafe to facryfice the same for your sake: and althoughe my myshappe had bene so greate, as to bee dyspatched in that Place, yet had I no cause to be forrye therefore, excepte it had bene by losynge the meanes, and way how to make you vnderstante the good wyll and duety which I beare you, defyryng not to conferue the same for anye commodytye that I hope to haue thereby, nor for anye other respecte, but onelye to Loue, Serue, and Honor you, so long as breath shal remaine in me.” So foone as he had made an end of his talke, loue and pity began to feaze vpon the heart of Iulietta, and leaning hir head vpon hir hand, hauing hir face all besprent wyth teares, she said vnto Rhomeo: “Syr Rhomeo, I pray you not to renue that grief agayne: for the onely Memory of futch inconuenyence, maketh me to counterpoyse betwene death and Lyfe, my heart being so vnited with yours, as you cannot receyue the least Iniury in this world, wherein I shall not be so great a Partaker as your self: beseechyng you for conclusion, that if you desire your owne health and mine, to declare vnto me in fewe Wordes what youre determinyation is to attaine: for if you couetany other secrete thing at my Handes, more than myne Honoure can well allowe, you are maruelously deceiued: but if your desire be godly, and that the frendship which you protest to beare mee, be founded vpon Vertue, and to bee concluded by Maryage, receiuing me for your wyfe and lawfull Spouse, you shall haue futch part in me, as whereof without any regard to the obedience and reuerence that I owe to my Parentes, or to the auncient Enimy of oure Famylyes, I wyll make you the onely Lord and Mayster [ouer me], and of all the thyngys that I posseſſe, being prest and ready in all poyntes to folow your commaundement: but if your intent be otherwyſe, and thinke to reape the Fruycte of my Virginity, vnder pretense of wanton Amity, you be greatly deceiued, and doe pray you to auoide and suffer me from henceforth to lyue and rest amonſt myne equals.” Rhomeo whych looked for none other thyng, holding vp his Handes to the Heauens, wyth incredible ioy and contentation, aunſwered: “Madame, for ſo mucht as it hath pleafed you to doe me that honour to accepte me for futch a one, I accorde and conſent to your request, and doe offer vnto you the beſt part

of my heart, which shall remayn with you for guage and sure testimony of my saying, vntill futch tyme as God shall giue me leaue to make you the entier owner and poffessor of the fame. And to the intent I may begyn myn enterpryse, to morrow I will to the Frier Laurence for counsell in the fame, who besides that he is my ghostly father is accustomed to giue me instruⁿction in al my other secret affaires, and fayle not (if you please) to meete me agayne in this place at this very hour, to the intent I may giue you to vnderſtand the deuice betwene him and me.” Which she lyked very well, and ended their talke for that time. Rhomeo receyuing none other fauour at hir hands for that night, but only Wordes. Thys Fryer Laurence, of whom hereafter wee shall make more ample mention, was an auncient Doctor of Diuinity, of the order of the Fryers Minors, who besides the happy profeſſion which he had made in ſtudy of holy writ, was very ſkilful in Philofophy, and a great ſearcher of nature’s ſecrets, and exceeding famous in Magike knowledge, and other hidden and ſecret ſciences, which nothing diuineſhēd his reputation, bicaufe hee did not abuse the fame. And this Frier through his vertue and piety, had ſo well won the citizens hearts of Verona, as he was almoſt the Confeffor to them all, and of all men generally reuerenced and beloued: and many tymes for his great prudence was called by the lords of the Citty, to the hearing of their weighty cauſes. And amonſt other he was greatly fauored by the Lorde of Escale, that tyme the principall gouernor of Verona, and of all the Family of Montefches, and of the Capellets, and of many other. The young Rhomeo (as we haue already declared) from his tender age, bare a certayne particuler amity to Frier Laurence, and departed to him his ſecrets, by meanes whereof ſo foone as he was gone from Iulietta, went ſtrayght to the Fryers Francifcians, where from poinct to poinct he diſcourſed the ſucceſſe of his loue to that good father, and the concluſion of mariage betwene him and Iulietta, adding vpon the ende of talke, that hee woulde rather choose shamefull death, than to fayle hir of his promife. To whom the good Frier after he had debated diuers matters, and propoſed al the inconueniences of that ſecret mariage, exhorted hym to more mature deliberation of the fame: notwithstandinge, all the alleged perſua-

sions were not able to reuoke his promyse. Wherefore the Frier vanquished with his stubborneſſe, and also forecasting in his mynde that the mariage might be ſome meanes of reconciliation of thoſe two houſes, in th'end agreed to his request, intreating him, that he myght haue one dayes reſpit for leuſure to excogitate what was beſt to be done. But if Rhomeo for his part was carefull to prouide for his affayres, Iulietta lykewiſe did her indeuour. For ſeeing that ſhee had none about her to whom ſhe might diſcouer her paſſions, ſhee deuized to impart the whole to hir Nurſe which lay in her Chamber, appoyncted to wayte vpon hir, to whom ſhe committed the intier ſecrets of the loue between Rhomeo and hir. And althoſh the olde Woman in the beginninge refiſted Iulietta hir intent, yet in the ende ſhe knew ſo wel how to perſuade and win hir, that ſhe promiſed in all that ſhe was able to do, to be at hir commaundement. And then ſhe ſent hir with all diligēce to ſpeakē to Rhomeo, and to know of him by what meanes they miſt be maried, and that he would do hir to vnderſtand the determination betwene Fryer Laurence and him. Whom Rhomeo aūſwered, how the firſt day wherein he had informed Fryer Laurence of the matter, the ſayde Fryer deferred aūſwerē vntil the next, which was the very fame, and that it was not paſt one houre fithens he returned with finall reſolution, and that Frier Laurence and he had deuized, that ſhe the Saterday following, ſhould craue leauē of hir mother to go to confeſſion, and to repayre to the Churche of Saynct Francis, where in a certayne Chappell ſecretly they ſhould be maried, praying hir in any wyſe not to fayle to be there. Which thiſe ſhe brought to paſſe with ſutche discretion, as hir mother agreed to hir request: and accompanied onely wyth hir gouerneſſe, and a young mayden, ſhe repayred thither at the determined day and tyme. And ſo ſoone as ſhe was entred the Churche, ſhe caſt for the good Doctor Fryer Laurence, vnto whom anſwerē was made that he was in the ſhriuing Chappell, and forthwith aduertiſement was gieuen him of hir comming. So ſoone as Fryer Laurence was certiſed of Iulietta, hee went into the body of the Churche, and willed the olde Woman and yong mayden to go heare ſeruice, and that when hee had heard the confeſſion of Iulietta, he would ſend for them agayn. Iulietta beinge entred a little Cell wyth Frier Laurence,

he shut fast the dore as he was wont to do, where Rhomeo and he had bin together shut fast in, the space of one whole hour before. Then Frier Laurence after that he had shriued them, sayd to Iulietta: "Daughter, as Rhomeo here present hath certified me, you be agreed, and contented to take him to husband, and he likewise you for his Esposue and Wyfe. Do you now still perfist and continue in that mynde?" The Loners aunswerved that they desired none other thing. The Fryer seeing theyr conformed and agreeable willes, after he had discoursed somewhat vpon the commendation of mariage dignity, pronounced the vsuall woordes of the Church, and she hauing receyued the Ring from Rhomeo, they rose vp before the Fryer, who sayd vnto them: "If you haue any other thing to conferre together, do the same wyth speede: for I purpose that Rhomeo shall goe from hence so secretly as he can." Rhomeo sory to goe from Iulietta sayde secretly vnto hir, that shee should fende vnto hym after dinner the old Woman, and that he would cause to be made a corded Ladder the same euening, thereby to climbe vp to her Chamber window, where at more leisure they would deuise of their affaires. Things determined betwene them, either of them retyred to their house with incredible contention, attendinge the happy houre for consummation of their mariage. When Rhomeo was come home to his house, he declared wholly what had passed between him and Iulietta, vnto a Seruaunt of his called Pietro, whose fidelity he had so greatly tryed, as he durst haue trusted him with hys life, and commaunded hym wyth expedition to prouide a Ladder of Cordes wyth 2 strong Hookes of Iron fastned to both endes, which he easilly did, because they were mutch vsed in Italy. Iulietta did not forget in the Euening about fие of the Clocke, to send the olde Woman to Rhomeo, who hauing prepared all things necessary, caused the Ladder to be deliuered vnto her, and prayed hir to require Iulietta the same euening not to fayle to bee at the accustomed place. But if this Iorney seemed long to these two passioned Louers, let other Iudge, that haue at other tymes assayed the lyke: for euery minute of an houre seemed to them a Thousande yeares, so that if they had power to commaund the Heauens (as Iosua did the Sunne) the Earth had incontinently bene shadowed wyth darkeft Cloudes. The

apoyncted houre come, Rhomeo put on the most sumptuous apparell hee had, and conducted by good fortune neere to the place where his heart tooke lyfe, was so fully determined of hys purpose, as easilly hee clymed vp the Garden wall. Beinge arriued hard to the wyndow, he perceyued Iulietta, who had already so well fastned the Ladder to draw him vp, as without any daunger at all, he entred hir chambre, which was so clere as the day, by reason of the Tapers of virgin Wax, which Iulietta had caused to be lighted, that she might the better beholde hir Rhomeo. Iulietta for hir part, was but in hir night kerchief: who so soon as she perceyued him colled him about the Neck, and after shee had kissted and re-kissted hym a million of times, began to imbrace hym betwene hir armes, hauing no power to speake vnto him, but by Sighes only, holding hir mouth close against his, and being in this traunce beheld him with pitifull eye, which made him to liue and die together. And afterwards somewhat come to hir selfe, she sayd with fighes deeplye fetched from the bottom of hir heart: "Ah Rhomeo, the exemplar of al vertue and gentlenes, most hartely welcome to this place, wherein for your lacke, and absence, and for feare of your person, I hane gushed forth so many Teares as the spring is almost dry: but now that I hold you betwen my armes, let death and fortune doe what they list. For I count my selfe more than satissified of all my sorrowes past, by the fauour alone of your presence." Whom Rhomeo with weeping eye, giuing ouer silence aunswered: "Madame, for somutch as I neuer receyued so mucht of fortune's grace, as to make you feele by liuely experiance what power you had ouer me, and the torment every minute of the day sustained for your occasion, I do assure you the least grief that vexeth me for your absence, is a thousand times more paynefull than death, which long time or this had cut of the threede of my lyfe, if the hope of this happy Iourney had not bene, which paying mee now the iust Tribute of my weepings past, maketh me better content, and more glad, than if the whole Worlde were at my commaundement, befeeching you (without further memory of auncient griefe) to take aduice in tyme to come how we may content our passionate hearts, and to fort our affayres with sutch Wysedome and discretion, as our enimies without aduantage may

let vs continue the remnant of our dayes in rest and quiet." And as Iulietta was about to make answere, the Olde woman came in the meane time, and sayd vnto them: " He that wasteth time in talke, recouereth the same to late. But for so mucht as eyther of you hath endured futch mutuall paynes, behold (quoth shee) a campe which I haue made ready :" (hewing them the Fielde bed which shee had prepared and furnished,) whereunto they easly agreed, and being then betwene the Sheets in priuy bed, after they had gladded and cherished themselues with al kinde of delicate embracements which loue was able to deuise, Rhomeo vnloosing the holy lines of virginity, tooke possession of the place, which was not yet besieged with futch ioy and contention as they can iudge which haue assayed like delites. Their marriage thus consummate, Rhomeo perceyuing the morning make to hafty approch, tooke his leaue, making promise that he would not fayle wythin a day or two to resort agayne to the place by lyke meanes, and semblable time, vntil Fortune had prouided sure occasion vnfearfully to manyfest their marriage to the whole Worlde. And thus a month or twayne, they continued their ioyful mindes to their incredible satissfaction, vntil lady Fortune eniuious of their prosperity, turned hir Wheele to tumble them into such a bottomleffe pit, as they payed hir vsury for their pleasures past, by a certaine most cruell and pitifull death, as you shal vnderstand hereafter by the discourse that followeth. Now as we haue before declared, the Capellets and the Monteschies were not so well reconciled by the Lord of Verona, but that there rested in them futch sparks of auncient displeasures, as either partes waited but for some light occasion to draw togethers, which they did in the Easter holy dayes, (as bloudy men commonly be most willingly disposed after a good time to commit some nefarious deede) besides the Gate of Bourfarie leading to the olde castel of Verona, a troupe of Capellets renountred with certayne of the Monteschies, and without other woordes began to set vpon them. And the Capellets had for Chiefe of their glorious enterprise one called Thibault, cosin Germayne to Iulietta, a yong man strongly made, and of good experiance of armes, who exhorted his Companions with stout Stomakes to represe the boldnes of the Monteschies, that ther

might from that time forth no memory of them be left at all. The rumoure of this fray was dispersed throughout al the corners of Verona, that succour might come from all partes of the Citty to depart the same. Whereof Rhomeo aduertized, who walked alonges the Citty with certayne of his Companions, hasted him speadily to the place where the slaughter of his Parents and alies were committed: and after he had well aduised and beholden many wounded and hurt on both fides, he sayd to hys Companions: "My frends let vs part them, for they be so flesht one vpon an other, as will all be hewed to pieces before the game be done." And saying so, he thrust himselfe amids the troupe, and did no more but part the blowes on eyther fide, crying vpon them aloud: "My frends, no more, it is time henceforth that our quarel cease. For besides the prouocation of God's iust wrath, our two families be flaunderous to the whole World, and are the cause that this common wealth doth grow vnto disorder." But they were so egre and furious one agaynst the other, as they gaue no audience to Rhomeo his councel, and bent theymselues too kyll, dysmember and teare eche other iiii pieces. And the fyght was so cruell and outragious betweene them as they which looked on, were amased to see theym endure those blowes, for the grounde was all couered with armes, legges, thighes, and bloude, wherein no signe of cowardnes appeared, and mayntayned their feyghe so longe, that none was able to iudge who hadde the better, vntill that Thibault Coufin to Iulietta inflamed with ire and rage, turned towardes Rhomeo thinkinge with a pricke to runne him through. But he was so wel armed and defended with a priuye coat whiche he wore ordinarily for the doubt he had of the Capellets, as the pricke rebounded: vnto whoin Rhomeo made answeare: "Thibault thou maiest know by the pacience which I haue had vntill this present tyme, that I came not hether to fyght with thee or thyne, but to seeke peace and attonemente betweene vs, and if thou thinkest that for defaulte of courage I hane fayled myne endeuer, thou doest greate wronge to my reputacion. And impute thys my suffrance to some other particular respecte, rather than to wante of stomacke. Wherfore abuse mee not but be content with this greate effusion of Bloude and murders already committed. And

prouoke mee not I beseeche thee to passe the boundes of my good will and mynde.” “ Ah Traitor,” sayd Thibaulte, “ thou thinkest to faue thy selfe by the plotte of thy pleasaunt toungue, but see that thou defende thy selfe, els presently I will make thee feele that thy toungue shal not gard thy corps, nor yet be the Buckler to defende the same from present death.” And saying so, he gaue him a blow with such furye, as hadde not other warded the same hee had cutte of his heade from his shoulders, and the one was no readyer to lende, but the other incontinentlye was able to paye agayne, for hee being not onelye wroth with the blowe that hee had receiued, but offended with the iniury which the other had don, began to pursue his ennemy with suche courage and viuacity, as at the third blowe with his fwerd hee caused him to fall backewarde starke deade vpon the grounde with a pricke vehementlye thruste into his throte, whiche hee followed till hys Sworde appeared throughe the hynder parte of the same, by reason wherof the confiict ceassed. For besides that Thibault was the chiefe of his compayne he was also borne of one of the Noblest hou ses within the Cittye, which caused the Potestate to assenble his Souldiers with diligence for the apprehension and imprisonment of Rhomeo, who feyeng yl fortune at hande, in secrete wise conuayed him selfe to Fryer Laurence at the Friers Franciscanes. And the Fryer vnderstandinge of his faëte, kepte him in a certayne secrete place of his couente vntil fortune did otherwyse prouyde for his safe goinge abroade. The bruite spred throughout the city, of this chaunce don vpon the Lorde Thibault, the Capellets in mourning weedes caused the deade bodye to be caryed before the sygnory of Verona, so well to moue them to pytty, as to demaunde iustice for the murder: before whom came also the Monteschies, declarynge the innocencye of Rhomeo, and the wilfull assault of the other. The councell assenbled and witnes ses heard on both partes a straight commaundemente was geuen by the Lorde of the Cittye to geeue ouer theire weapons, and touchinge the offence of Rhomeo, because he hadde killed the other in his owne defence, he was banished Verona for euer. This common misfortune published throughout the City, was generally forowed and lamented. Som complayneth the death of the Lorde Thibault, so well for his dexterite in armes as for the

hope of his great good seruice in time to come, if hee hadde not bene preuented by futch cruell Death. Other hewailed (specially the Ladies and Gentlewomen) the ouerthrow of yong Rhomeo, who besides his beauty and good grace wherwith he was enriched, had a certayne naturall allurement, by vertue whereof he drew vnto him the hearts of eche man, like as the stony Adamante doth the cancred iron, in futch wife as the whole nation and people of Verona lamented his mischaunce: but aboue all infortunate Iulietta, who aduertised both of the death of hir cosin Thibault, and of the banishment of hir husband, made the Ayre found with infinite number of mornefull playnts and miserable lamentations. Then feeling hirselfe to mutch outraged with extreeme passion, she went into hir chamber, and ouercome with forrowe threwe hir selfe vpon hir bed, where she began to reinforce hir dolor after so straunge fashion, as the most constant would haue bene moued to pitty. Then like one out of hir wits, she gazed heere and there, and by fortune beholding the Window whereat Rhomeo was wont to enter into hir chamber, cried out: "Oh vnhappy Windowe, oh entry most vnlucky, wherein were wounen the bitter toyle of my former mishaps, if by thy meanes I haue receyued at other tymes some light pleasure or transitory contentation, thou now makest me pay a tribute so rigorous and paynefull, as my tender body not able any longer to support the same, shall henceforth open the Gate to that lyfe where the ghost discharged from this mortal burden, shal seeke in some place els more assured rest. Ah Rhomeo, Rhomeo, when acquayntaunce first began betweene vs, and reclined myne eares vnto thy suborned promises, confirmed with so many othes, I would neuer haue beleueed that in place of our continued amyty, and in appeasing of the hatred of our houses, thou woldest haue sought occasion to breake the same by an acte so shamefull, whereby thy fame shall be spotted for euer, and I miserable wretch desolate of Spouse and Companion. But if thou haddest beene so gready after the Cappellets bloud, wherefore didst thou spare the deare bloud of mine owne heart when so many tymes, and in futch secret place the same was at the mercy of thy cruell handes? The victory which thou shouldest haue gotten ouer me, had it not bene glorious inough for thine ambitious minde, but for more trium-

phant solemnynity to bee crowned wyth the bloude of my dearest
kinsman? Now get thee hence therefore into some other place to
deceiue some other, so vnhappy as my selfe. Neuer come agayne
in place where I am, for no excuse shall heereafter take holde to
affwage mine offended minde: in the meane tyme I shall lament
the rest of my heauy lyfe, with futch store of teares, as my body
dried vp from all humidity, shall shortly search relieve in Earth.”
And hauing made an ende of those hir wordes, hir heart was so
grieuously strayned, as shee coulde neyther weepe nor speake, and
stoode so immoueable, as if she had bene in a traunce. Then
being somewhat come agayne vnto hirselfe, with feeble voyce shee
sayd: “Ah, murderous tongue of other men’s honor, how darest
thou so infamously to speake of him whom his very enimies doe
commend and prayse? How presumest thou to impute the blame
vpon Rhomeo, whose vnguiltines and innocent deede euery man
alloweth? Where from henceforth shall be hys refuge, sith she
which ought to bee the onely Bulwarke, and assured rampire of his
distresse, doth pursue and defame him? Receyue, receyue then
Rhomeo the satissfaction of mine ingratitudo by the sacrifice which
I shal make of my proper lyfe, and so the faulte which I haue
committed agaynst thy loyaltye, shall bee made open to the Worlde,
thou being reuenged and my selfe punished.” And thinking to
vse some further talke, all the powers of hir body fayled hir wyth
signes of present death. But the good olde Woman whych could
not imagine the cause of Iulietta hir longe absence, doubted very
mutch that she suffred some passion, and sought hir vp and downe
in euery place wythin hir Father’s Pallace, vntill at length shee
founde hir lyinge a long vpon hir Bed, all the outwarde parts of
hir body so colde as Marble. But the goode Old woman which
thought hir to bee deade, began to cry like one out of hir Wittes,
saying: “Ah deare Daughter, and Noursechylde, howe mutch doeth
thy death now grieue mee at the very heart?” And as she was
feeling all the partes of hir body, shee perceyued some sparke of
Lyfe to bee yet within the same, whych caused hir to call hir many
tymes by her name, til at length she brought her oute of her
founde, then sayde vnto her: “Why Iulietta, myne owne deare
darelyng, what meane you by this tormoylinge of your selfe? I

cannot tel from whence this youre behauour and that immoderate heauines doe proceede, but wel I wot that within this houre I thought to haue accompanied you to the graue.” “Alas good mother” (aunswered woful Iulietta) “do you not most euidently perceiue and see what iust cause I haue too sorrow and complayne, loofyng at one instante two persons of the world which wer vnto mee most deare?” “Methinke,” aunsweread the good woman, “that it is not seemely for a gentlewoman of your degree to fall into such extremetye: for in tyme of tribulation wyfedom should most preuaile. And if the lord Thibault be deade do you thinke to get him agayn by teares? What is he that doth not accuse his ouermutch presumption: woulde you that Rhomeo hadd done that wronge to him, and hys house, to suffer himselfe outraged and assayed by one to whom in manhoode and proweſſe he is not inferioure? Sufficeth you that Rhomeo is alyue, and his affayres in futche estate whoe in tyme may be called home agayne from banishmente, for he is a greate lorde, and as you know well allied and fauored of all men, wherefore arme your ſelfe from henceforth with pacyence: for albeit that Fortune doth eſtrange him from you for a tyme, yet ſure I am, that hereafter ſhee will restore him vnto you agayne wyth greater ioye and Contentatyon than before. And to the Ende that wee bee better assured in what ſtate he is, yf you wyll promyſe me to gyue ouer your heauynelle, I wyll to Daye knowe of Fryer Laurence whether he is gone.” To which requeſt Iulietta agreed, and then the good woman repayred to S. Frauncis, wher ſhee founde Fryer Laurence who tolde her that the ſame nyghte Rhomeo would not fayle at hys accuſtomed houre to vifite Iulietta, and there to do hir to vnderſtande what he purpoſed to doe in tyme to come. This iorney then fared like the voiages of mariners, who after they haue ben toſt by greate and troublous tempeſt ſeeyng ſome Sunne beame pearce the heauens to lyghten the lande, affure themſelues agayne, and thinkinge to haue auoyded ſhipwracke, and ſodaynlye the feas begynne to ſwell, the waues do roare with ſutche vehemence and noyſe, as if they were fallen agayne into greater danger than before. The aſſigned hour come, Rhomeo fayled not accordinge to hys promiſe to bee in his Garden, where he founde his furniture preſt to mount

the Chamber of Iulietta, who with displayed armes, began so strayghtly to imbrace hym, as it seemed that the soule would haue abandoned hir body. And they two more than a large quarter of an hour were in futch agony, as they were not able to pronounce one word, and wetting ech others Face fast closed together, the teares trickeled downe in futch abundance as they seemed to be throughly bathed therein, which Rhomeo perceyuing, thinking to stay those immoderate teares, sayd vnto hir: " Myne owne deareſt freend Iulietta, I am not now determined to recite the particulars of the straung happes of frayle and inconstaunte Fortune, who in a moment hoifteth a man vp to the hyghest degree of hir wheele, and by and by, in leſſe ſpace than in the twynckeling of an eye, ſhe throweth hym downe agayne ſo lowe, as more misery is prepared for him in one day, than fauour in one hundred yeaſes: whych I now proue, and haue experience in my ſelfe, which haue bene nourished delicately amongeth my frends, and maynteyned in futch prosperous ſtate, as you doe little know, (hoping for the full perſection of my felicity) by meanes of our mariage to haue reconciled our Parents, and frends, and to conduet the reſidue of my lyfe, according to the ſcope and lot determined by Almighty God: and neuertheleſſe all myne enterprifes be put backe, and my purpoſes tourned cleane contrary, in futch wife as from henceforth I muſt wander lyke a vagabonde through diners Prouinces, and ſequeſtrate my ſelfe from my Frends, wythout assured place of myne abode, whych I deſire to let you weete, to the intent you may be exhorted in tyme to come, paciently to beare ſo well myne abſence, as that whych it ſhal pleafe God to appoint." But Iulietta, al affrighted wyth teares and mortal agonies, would not ſuffer hym to paſſe any further, but interruptinge his purpoſe, sayd vnto hym: " Rhomeo, how canſt thou be ſo harde hearted and voyde of all pity, to leaue mee heere lone, besieged with ſo manye deadlye myſteries? There is neyther houre nor Minute, wherein death doth not appeare a thouſand tymes before mee, and yet my miſſeſhappe is futch, as I can not dye, and therefore doe manyeſtlye perceyue, that the ſame death preſerueth my lyfe, of purpoſe to delight in my gryefes, and tryumphe ouer my euyls. And thou lyke the mynifter and tyrante of hir cruelty, doeft make

no conscience (for ought that I can fee) hauing atchieued the Summe of thy defyres and pleasures on me, to abandon and forsake me: whereby I well perceyue, that all the lawes of Amity are deade and vtterly extinguyshed, forsomutch as he in whom I had greatest hope and confidence, and for whose sake I am become an enimy to my self, doth disdayne and contemne me. No, no Rhomeo, thou must fully resolute thy selfe vpon one of these 11. points, either to see me incontinently throwen down headlong from this high Window after thee: or else to suffer me to accompany thee into that Countrey or Place whither Fortune shall guide thee: for my heart is so mutch transformed into thine, that so soone as I shall vnderstande of thy departure, prefently my lyfe will depart this wofull body: the continuance whereof I doe not desire for any other purpose, but only to delight my selfe in thy presence, to bee pertaker of thy misfortunes: and therefore if euer there lodged any pity in the heart of gentleman, I befeche the Rhomeo with al humility, that it may now finde place in thee, and that thou wilt vouchsafe to receyue me for thy seruaunt, and the faithful companion of thy mishaps: and if thou thinke that thou canst not conueniently receyue me in the estate and habite of a Wyfe, who shall let me to chaunge myne apparell? Shall I be the first that haue vsed like shiftestoescape the tyranny of parentes? Doste thou doubt that my seruice will not bee so good vnto thee as that of Petre thy seruaunte? Wyll my loyaltye and fidelity be leſſe than his? My beauty which at other tymes thou haſt ſo greatly commended, it is not eſteemed of thee? my teares, my loue, and the aunciente pleasures and delights that you haue taken in mee ſhal they be in obliuyon?" Rhomeo feing hir in these alterations, fearing that worſſe inconuenience would chaunce, tooke hir agayne betweene hys armes, and kissing her amorousfly, ſayd: Iulietta, the onely mistrefſe of my heart, I pray thee in the Name of God, and for the feruent Loue whych thou bearest vnto me, to doe away thofe vayne cogitations, excepte thou meane to ſeeke and hazard the deſtruction of vs both: for if thou perſeuer in this purpoſe, there is no remedye but wee muſte both periſh: for ſo ſoone as thyne abſence ſhalbe knownen, thy Father will make ſutchearnest purſuite after vs, that we cannot chooſe but be diſcried and taken, and in the ende cruelly

punished, I as a theefe and stealer of thee, and thou as a dysobedient Daughter to thy Father: and so in stead of pleasaunt and quiet Lyfe, our Dayes shalbe abridged by most shamefull Death. But if thou wylt recline thy self to reason, (the ryght rule of humane Lyfe,) and for the tyme abandon our mutuall delyghts, I will take futch order in the time of my banishment, as within three or foure Months wythoute any delay, I shalbe renoked home agayne: but if it fall out otherwyse (as I trust not,) howsoeuer it happen, I wyll come agayne vnto thee, and with the helpe of my Fryendes wyll fetch the from Verona by strong Hand, not in Counterfeitt Apparell as a straunger, but lyke my spouse and perpetuall companion: in the meane tyme quyet your selfe, and be sure that nothing else but death shall deuide and put vs a funder.” The reasons of Rhomeo so mutch preuailed with Iulietta, as shee made hym thys aunswere: “ My deare fryend, I wyll doe nothing contrary to your wyll and pleasure: and to what place so euer you repayre, my hearte shall bee your owne, in like sorte as you haue giuen yours to be mine: in the meane while I pray you not to faile oftentimes to aduertise me by Frier Laurence, in what state your affaires be, and specially of the place of your abode.” Thus these two pore louers passed the Night togither, vntil the day began to appeare which did dyuyde them, to their extreame sorrow and gryef. Rhomeo hauinge taken leaue of Iulietta, went to S. Fraunces, and after he hadde aduertyfed Frier Laurence of his affaires, departed from Verona in the habit of a Marchaunt straunger, and vsed futch expedytyon, as without hurt he arriued at Mantuona, (accompanied onely wyth Petre his Seruaunt, whome hee hastily sente backe agayne to Verona, to serue his Father) where he tooke a house: and lyuying in honorable companye, assayed certayne Monthes to put away the gryefe whych so tormented him. But duryng the tyme of his absence, miserable Iulietta could not so cloke hir sorrow, but that through the euyll colour of hir face, hir inwarde passion was discryed: by reasoun whereof hir Mother, who heard hir oftentimes fighing, and incessantly complaingning, coulde not forbeare to say vnto hir: “ Daughter, if you continue long after thys fort, you wyll hasten the Death of your good Father and me, who loue you so dearely as

our owne lyues: wherefore henceforth moderate your heauinesse, and endeuer your self to be mery: think no more vpon the Death of your cofin Thibault, whome (sith it pleased God to cal away) do you thinke to reuoke wyth Teares, and so withstande his Almightye will?" But the pore Gentlewoman not able to dyffemble hir grieve, sayd vnto hir: "Madame, long time it is fithens the last Teares for Thibault were poured forth, and I beleue that the fountayne is so well foked and dried vp, as no more will spryng in that place." The mother which could not tell to what effect those Woords were spoken held hir peace, for feare she should trouble hir Daughter: and certayne Dayes after seeing hir to continue in heauinesse and continuall griefs, assaied by al meanes possible to know, aswell of hir, as of other the housholde Seruautes, the occasion of their sorrow, but al in vayne: wherwith the pore mother vexed beyonde measure, purposed to let the Lord Antonio hir Husband to vnderstand the case of hir Daughter: and vpon a day seeing him at conuenient leisure, she sayd vnto him: "My Lord, if you haue marked the countenaunce of our daughter, and hir kinde of behauior fithens the Death of the Lord Thibault hir Cosyn, you shall perceiue so straunge mutation in hir, as it will make you to maruell, for she is not onely contented to forgoe meate, drinke and slepe, but she spendeth hir tyme in nothinge else then in Weeping and Lamentatyon, delighting to kepe hir self solytarye wthyn hir Chamber, where she tormenteth hir self so outrageously as yf wee take not heede, hir Lyfe is to be doubted, and not able to knowe the Oryginall of hir Payne, the more difficulte shall be the remedye: for albeit that I haue sought meanes by all extremity, yet cannot I learne the cause of hir ficknesse: and where I thought in the beginning, that it proceded vpon the Death of hir Cofin, now I doe manifestly perceiue the contrary, specially when she hir self did assyure me that she had already wept and shed the last teares for him that she was mynded to doe: and vncertayne whereupon to resolute, I do thinke verily that she mourneth for some despite, to see the most part of theyr companions maried, and she yet vnprouyded, persuading with hir selfe (it may be) that wee hir Parents do not care for hir: wherefore deare Husband, I heartely beseech you for our rest and hir quiet, that hereafter ye be carefull

to prouyde for hir some maryage worthy of our state." Whereunto the Lord Antonio, willingly agreed, saying vnto hir: "Wyfe, I haue many times thought vpon that whereof you speake, notwithstandingyng fith as yet shee is not attayned to the age of xviii. yeaeres, I thought to prouide a husband at leysure: neuerthelesse things beinge come to thele Termes, and knowing the Virgins chasfity is a dangerous Treasure, I wyll be mindfull of the fame to your contention, and she matched in futch wyfe, as she shall thynke the tyme hitherto well delayed. In the meane while marke dylgently whyther she bee in loue wthy any, to the end that we haue not so greate regarde to goodes, or the Nobylity of the house wherein we meane to bestow hir, as to the Lyfe and Health of our Daughter who is to me so deare as I had rather die a Begger without Landes or goods, than to bestow hir vpon one which shall vse and intreat hir il." Certayne dayes after that the Lorde Antonio had bruted the maryage of his daughter, many Gentlemen were suters, so wel for the excellency of hir Beauty, as for hir great Rycheffe and reuenuue. But aboue all others the alyaunce of a young Earle named Paris, the Counte of Lodronne, lyked the Lord Antonio: vnto whom lyberally he gaue his consent, and told his Wyfe the party vpon whom he dyd mean to bestow his Daughter. The mother very ioyful that they had found so honest a Gentleman for theyr Daughter, caused hir secretly to be called before hir, doyng hir to vnderstande what things had paffed betwen hir father and the Counte Paris, discoursing vnto hir the beauty and good grace of the yong Counte, the vertues for which he was commended of al men, ioyning therenvnto for conclusion the great richeffe and fauor which he had in the goods of fortune, by means whereof she and hir Fryends should liue in eternal honor: but Iulietta which had rather to haue ben torne in pieces than to agree to that maryage, answered hir mother with a more than accustomed stoutnesse: "Madame, I mutch maruel, and therewithal am astonned that you being a Ladye discrete and honorable, wil be so liberal ouer your Danghter as to commit hir to the pleasure and wil of an other, before you do know how hir mind is bent: you may do as it pleafeth you, but of one thing I do wel assure you, that if you bring it to passe, it shal be against my wil: and

touching the regard and estimation of Counte Paris, I shal first lose my Lyfe before he shal haue power to touch any part of my body : which being done, it is you that shal be counted the murderer, by deliueryng me into the handes of him, whome I neyther can, wil, or know whiche way to loue : wherefore I praye you to suffer me henceforth thus to lyue, wythout taking any further care of me, for so mutche as my cruell fortune hath otherwyse disposed of me.” The dolorous Mother which knewe not what Iudgement to fixe vpon hir daughter’s aunswere, lyke a woman confused and besides hir selfe went to seeke the Lord Antonio, vnto whom without conceyling any part of hir Daughter’s aunswere, she dyd him vnderstand the whole. The good olde man offendeth beyond measure, commaunded her incontinently by Force to be brought before him, if of hir own good will she would not come : so soone as she came before hir Father, hir eyes full of teares, fel down at his fete, which she bathed with the luke warme drops that distilled from hir Eyes in great abundance, and thynkyng to open hir mouth to crye him mercy, the sobbes and fighes many tymes stopt hir speach, that shee remained dumbe not able to frame a Woerde. But the olde man nothing moued with his Daughter’s Teares, sayd vnto hir in great rage : “ Come hither thou vnkynd and dysobedient Daughter, haft thou forgotten how many tymes thou haft hearde spoken at the Table, of the puissance and authowryt y our auncyente Romane Fathers had ouer their chyldren ? vnto whom it was not onelye lawfull to sell, guage, and otherwyse dispose them (in theyr necessity) at their pleasure, but also which is more, they had absolute power ouer their Death and Lyfe ? With what yrons, with what torments, with what racks would those good Fathers chaften and correct thee if they were a liue againe, to see that ingratitude, misbehavior and disobedience which thou vsest towards thy Father, who with many prayers and requestes hath prouided one of the greatest Lords of this prouince to be thy husband, a Gentleman of best renoume, and indued wyth all kynde of Vertues, of whom thou and I be vnworthy, both for the notable maffe of goods and substance wherewith he is enriched, as also for the Honoure and generositie of the house whereof hee is discended, and yet thou playest the parte of an obſtinate and

rebellyous Chyld agaynst thy Father's will. I take the omnipotency of that Almightye God to witnesse, which hath vouchsafed to bryng the forth into this world, that if vpon Tuesday nexte thou failest to prepare thy selfe to be at my Castell of Villafranco, where the Counte Paris purposeth to meeet vs, and there giue thy consent to that whych thy Mother and I haue agreed vpon, I will not onely deprive thee of my worldly goodes, but also will make the espouse and marie a pryon so straight and sharpe, as a thousande times thou shalt curse the Day and tyme wherein thou wast borne: wherfore from henceforth take aduisement what thou doest, for excepte the promise be kept which I haue made to the counte Paris, I will make the feele how greate the iust choler of an offended Father is against a Chylde vnykynde." And without stayng for other answer of his Daughter, the olde man departed the Chamber, and lefte hir vpon hir knees. Iulietta knowing the fury of hir Father, fearing to incurre his indignation, or to prouoke his further wrath, retired for the day into hir Chamber, and contriued that whole Nyght more in weeping then slepyng. And the next Morning fayning to goe heare seruice, she went forth with the woman of hir Chamber to the Fryers, where she caused father Laurence to be called vnto hir, and prayed him to heare hir confession: and when she was vpon hir knees before hym, shee began hir Confession wyth Teares, tellinge him the greate mischyefe that was prepared for hir, by the maryage accorded betweene hir Father and the Counte Paris: and for concluision sayd vnto him: "Sir, for so much as you know that I cannot by God's law bee maried twice, and that I haue but one God, one husband and one faith, I am determined when I am from hence, with these two hands which you see ioyned before you, this Day to ende my forowful lyfe, that my soule may beare wytnesse in the Heauens, and my bloude vpon the Earth of my faith and loyalty preferued." Then hauyng ended hir talke, shee looked about hir, and seemed by hir wylde countenaunce, as though she had deuised some sinister purpose: wherefore Frier Laurence, astonned beyonde measure, fearyng least she would haue executed that which she was determyned, sayd vnto hir: "Mistresse Iulietta, I pray you in the name of God by little and little to moderate youre con-

ceiued griefe, and to content your self whilst you bee heere, vntill I haue prouided what is best for you to doe, for before you part from hence, I will giue you futch consolation and remedy for your afflictions, as you shall remaine satyfied and contented.” And resolued vpon thys good minde, he speedily wente out of the Churche vnto his chamber, where he began to confider of many things, his conscience beyng moued to hinder the marriage betwene the Counte Paris and hir, knowing by his meanes she had espoused an other, and callynge to remembraunce what a daunge-
rous enterprise he had begonne by committynge hymself to the mercy of a symple damosell, and that if shee fayled to bee wyse and secrete, all theyr doyngs should be discried, he defamed, and Rhomeo hir spouse punished. Hee then after he had well debated vpon infinite nombre of deuises, was in the end ouercome with pity, and determined rather to hazarde his honour, than to suffer the Adultery of the Counte Paris with Iulietta: and being determined herevpon, opened his closet, and takynge a vyall in his Hande, retourned agayne to Iulietta, whom he found lyke one that was in a Traunce, wayghtinge for newes, eyther of Lyfe or Death: of whome the good olde Father demaunded vpon what Day hir maryage was appoynted. “The firste daye of that ap-
poynment (quod shee) is vpon Wednesdaye, whych is the Daye ordeyned for my Confente of Maryage accorded betweene my father and Counte Paris, but the Nuptiall solemnitye is not before the x. day of September.” “Wel then” (quod the religious father) “be of good cheere daughter, for our Lord God hathe opened a way vnto me both to deliuer you and Rhomeo from the prepared thraldom. I haue knowne your husband from his cradle, and hee hath daily committed vnto me the greatest secretes of hys Conscience, and I haue so dearely loued him agayne, as if hee had ben mine owne sonne: wherefore my heart can not abide that anye man should do him wrong in that specially wherein my Counsell may stande him in stede. And forsomutch as you are his wyfe, I ought lykewyse to loue you, and feke meanes to delyuer you from the martyrdome and Anguish wherewyth I see your heart besieged: vnderstante then (good Daughter) of a secrete which I purpose to manifest vnto you, and take heede aboue all

thinges that you declare it to no liuing creature, for therein confisteth your life and Death. Ye be not ignorant by the common report of the Cityzens of this City, and by the same published of me, that I haue trauailed throughe all the Prouinces of the habytale Earthe, wherby duryng the continuall tyme of xx. yeres, I haue foughte no rest for my wearied body, but rather haue many times protruded the same to the mercy of brute beasts in the Wylderneffe, and many times also to the mercileffe Waues of the Seas, and to the pity of common Pirates together with a thousand other Daungers and shipwracks vpon Sea and Land. So it is good Daughter that all my wandring Voyages haue not bene altogetheres vnprofitable. For besides the incredible contentation receiued ordinarily in mind, I haue gathered some particular fruyt, whereof by the grace of God you shall shortly feele some experience. I haue proued the secrete properties of Stones, of Plants, Metals, and other thinges hydden within the Bowels of the Earth, wherewith I am able to helpe my selfe againte the common Lawe of Men, when necessity doth serue: specyally in thynges wherein I know mine eternal God to be least offended. For as thou knowest I beyng approached as it were, enen to the Brymme of my Graue, and that the Tyme draweth neare for yeldynge of myne Accompte before the Audytor of all Audytors, I oughte therefore to haue some deepe knowledge and apprehension of God's iudgement more than I had when the heat of inconfidered youth did boyle within my lusty body. Know you therefore good daughter, that with those graces, and fauours which the heauens prodigally haue bestowed vpon me, I haue learned and proued of long time the composition of a certayne Paaste, which I make of diuers soporiferous simples, which beaten afterwards to Pouder, and dronke wyth a quantyty of Water, within a quarter of an houre after, bringeth the receiuer into futch a sleepe, and burieth so deepeley the senses and other sprites of life, that the cunningest Phisitian will iudge the party dead: and besides that it hath a more marueilous effect, for the person which vseth the same feeleth no kinde of grieve, and according to the quantity of the dough, the pacient remayneth in a sweete sleepe, but when the operation is wrought and done, hee returneth into his first estate. Now then Iulietta receiue myne

instruction, put of all Feminine affection by taking vpon you a manly stomacke for by the only courage of your minde consisteth the hap or mishap of your affayres. Beholde here I geue you a Vyale which you shall keepe as your owne propre heart, and the night before your mariage, or in the morninge before day, you shall fil the same vp with water, and drink so mucht as is contayned therein. And then you shall feele a certayne kynde of pleasaunt sleepe, which incrochinge by litle and litle all the partes of your body, wil constraine them in futch wyse, as vnmoveable they shal remayne: and by not doing their accustomed dueties, shall loose their naturall feelinges, and you abide in futch extasie the space of 40 houres at the leaft, without any beating of poulse or other perceptible motion, which shall so aftonne them that come to see you, as they will iudge you to be deade, and according to the custome of our Citty, you shal be caried to the Churchyaerde hard by our Church, where you shall be intoumbed in the common monument of the Capellets your auncestors, and in the meane tyme we will send word to lord Rhomeo by a speciall messenger of the effect of our deuice, who now abideth at Mantua. And the night following I am sure he will not fayle to be heere, then he and I together will open the graue, and lift vp your body, and after the operation of the Pouder is past, hee shall conuey you secretly to Mantua, vnknowen to all your Parents and frends. Afterwards (it may be) Tyme, the mother of Truth, shall cause concord betwene the offended City of Verona, and Rhomeo. At which time your common cause may be made open to the general contentacion of all your frends.” The words of the good father ended, new ioy surprised the heart of Iulietta, who was so attentive to his talke as she forgat no one poynct of hir lesson. Then she sayd vnto him: “Father, doubt not at all that my heart shall fayle in performaunce of your commaundement: for were it the strongest Poyson, or most pestiferous Venome, rather would I thrust it into my body, than to consent to fall in the hands of him, whom I vtterly mislike: with a right strong reason then may I fortifie my selfe, and offer my body to any kinde of mortall daunger to approch and draw neare to him, vpon whom wholly dependeth my Life and all the solace I haue in this World.” “Go your wayes then my

X

daughter" (quod the Frier) "the mighty hand of God keepe you, and hys surpassing power defende you, and confirme that will and good mynde of yours, for the accomplishment of this worke." Iulietta departed from frier Laurence, and returned home to hir father's Pallace about 11. of the clock, where she found hir mother at the Gate attending for hir: And in good denotion demaunded if shee continued still in hir former follies? But Iulietta with more gladsome cheere than shee was wont to vse, not suffering hir mother to aske agayne, sayd vnto hir: "Madame I come from S. Frauncis Church, where I haue taried longer peraduenture than my duety requireth: how be it not without fruict and great rest to my afflicted conscience, by reason of the godly persuasions of our ghostly Father Frier Laurence, vnto whom I haue made a large declaration of my life. And chiefly haue communicated vnto him in confession, that which hath past betwene my Lord my father and you, vpon the mariage of Countee Paris and me. But the good man hath reconciled me by his holy words, and commendable exhortations, that where I had minde neuer to mary, now I am well disposed to obey your pleasure and commaundement. Wherfore, madame, I beseech you to recouer the fauor and good wyl of my father, aske pardon in my behalfe, and say vnto him (if it please you) that by obeying his Fatherly request, I am ready to meeete the Countee Paris at Villafranco, and there in your presence to accept him for my Lorde and husbant: In assuraunce whereof, by your pacience, I meane to repaire into my Closet, to make choise of my most pretious Iewels, that I being richly adorned, and decked, may appeare before him more agreeable to his mynde, and pleasure. The good mother rapt with exceeding great ioy, was not able to aunswere a word, but rather made speede to seeke out hir husbant the Lord Antonio, vnto whom she reported the good will of hir daughter, and how by meanes of Frier Laurence hir minde was chaunged. Whereof the good olde man maruellous ioyfull, praysed God in heart, saying: "Wife this is not the firste good turne which we haue receiued of that holy man, vnto whom euery Cittizen of this Common wealth is dearely bounde. I would to God that I had redeemed 20 of his yeares with the third parte of my goods, so grieuous is to me his extreme old age."

The selfe same houre the Lord Antonio went to seeke the Countee Paris, whom hee thought to perswade to goe to Villafranco. But the countee told him agayne, that the charge would be to great, and that better it were to referue that cost to the mariage day, for the better celebration of the same. Notwithstanding if it were his pleasure, he would himselfe goe visite Iulietta: and so they went together. The Mother aduertised of his comming, caused hir daughter to make hir selfe ready, and to spare no costly Iewels for adorning of hir beauty agaynst the Countee's comming, which she bestowed so well for garnishing of hir Personage, that before the Countee parted from the house, shee had so stolne away his heart, as he liued not from that time forth, but vpon meditation of hir beauty, and slacked no time for acceleration of the mariage day, ceasing not to be importunate vpon father and mother for th'ende and consummation thereof. And thus with ioy inough passed forth this day and many others vntil the day before the mariage, against which time the mother of Iulietta did so well prouide, that there wanted nothing to set forth the magnificence and nobility of their house. Villafranco whereof we haue made mention, was a place of pleasure, where the Lord Antonio was wont many tymes to re-create himselfe a mile or two from Verona, there the dynner was prepared, for so mutch as the ordinary solemnity of necessity muste be done at Verona. Iulietta perceyuing hir time to approache dyssembled the matter so well as shee coulde: and when tyme forced hir to retire to hir Chamber, hir Woman would have waited vpon hir, and haue lyen in hir Chambre, as hir custome was: but Iulietta sayd vnto hir: "Good and faithfull mother, you know that to morrow is my maryage Day, and for that I would spend the most parte of the Nyght in prayer, I pray you for this time to let me alone, and to morrow in the Mornyng about vi. of the clocke come to me agayne to helpe make mee readie." The good olde woman willing to follow hir minde, suffred hir alone, and doubted nothyng of that which she did meane to do. Iulietta beinge within hir Chambre hauing an eawer ful of Water standing vpon the Table filled the viole which the Frier gaue her: and after she had made the mixture, she set it by hir bed fide, and went to Bed. And being layde, new thoughtes began to affaile hir, with a con-

ceipt of grieuous Death, which brought hir into futch case as she could not tell what to doe, but playning incessantly sayd: “Am not I the most vnhappy and desperat creature, that euer was borne of Woman? For mee there is nothyng left in this wretched worlde but mishap, misery, and mortall woe, my distresse hath brought me to futch extremity, as to saue mine honor and conscience, I am forced to deuoure the drynke whereof I know not the vertue: but what know I (sayd she) whether the Operatyon of thys Pouder will be to soone or to late, or not correspondent to the due tyme, and that my fault being discouered, I shall remayne a Fable to the People? What know I moreouer, if the Serpents and other venomous and crauling Wormes, whych commonly frequent the Graues and pittes of the Earth wyll hurt me, thynkyng that I am deade. But howe shall I indure the stynche of so many carions and Bones of myne auncestors whych rest in the Graue, yf by fortune I do awake before Rhomeo and Fryer Laurence doe come to help mee?” And as shee was thus plunged in the deepe contemplatyon of thynges, she thought that shee saw a certayn vision or fanzie of hir Cousin Thibault, in the very same sort as shee sawe him wounded and imbrued wyth Bloud, and musing how that she must be buried quick amongs so many dead Carcases and deadly naked bones, hir tender and delicate body began to shake and tremble, and hir yelowe lockes to stare for feare, in futch wyse as fryghtned with terroure, a cold sweate beganne to pierce hir heart and bedewe the reste of al hir membres, in futch wife as she thought that an hundred thousand Deathes did stande about hir, haling hir on euery fide, and plucking hir in pieces, and feelyng that hir forces diminysched by lyttle and lyttle, fearing that through to great debilyty she was not able to do hir enterpryse, like a furious and infeniate Woman, with out further care, gulped vp the Water wythin the Voyal, then crossing hir armes vpon hir stomacke, she lost at that instante all the powers of hir Body, restyng in a Traunce. And when the morning lyght began to thrust his head out of his Oryent, hir Chaumber Woman which had lockte hir in with the Key, did open the doore, and thynkyng to awake hir, called hir many tymes, and sayd vnto hir: “Mistresse, you sleepe to long, the Counte Paris will come to raiſe you.” The poore olde

Woman spake vnto the wall, and fange a song vnto the deafe. For if all the horrible and tempestuous soundes of the world had bene cannoned forth out of the greatest bombardes and sounded through hir delycate Eares, hir spyrites of Lyfe were so fast bounde and stopt, as she by no meanes coulde awake, wherewith the pore olde Woman amazed, began to shake hir by the armes and Handes, whych she found so colde as marble stome. Then puttyng Hande vnto hir Mouthe, sodainely perceyued that she was dead, for shee perceyued no breath in hir. Wherefore lyke a Woman out of hir Wyttes, shee ranne to tell hir mother, who so madde as a Tigre, berefte of hir Faunes hied hir selfe into hir Daughter's Chaumber, and in that pitiful state beholdyng hir Daughter, thinking hir to be deade, cried out: "Ah cruell Death, which hast ended all my ioye and Blyffe, vse the last scourge of thy wrathfull ire agaynst me, least by sufferyng mee to liue the rest of my woefull Dayes, my Torment doe increase." Then she began to fetch sutch strayning fighes, as hir heart did feeme to cleave in pieces. And as hir cries began to encrease, behold the Father, the County Paris, and a great troupe of Gentlemen and Ladies, which were come to honour the feaste, hearing no sooner tell of that which chaunced, were stroke into sutch sorrowfull dumpes as he which had beheld their Faces would easilly haue iudged that the same had ben a day of ire and pity, specially the Lord Antonio, whose heart was frapped with sutch surpasing woe, as neither teare nor word could issue forth, and knowing not what to doe, straight way sent to seeke the most expert Phisitians of the towne, who after they had inquired of the life past of Iulieta, deemed by common reporte, that melancoly was the cause of that fodayne death, and then their sorows began to renue a fresh. And if euer day was Lamentable, Piteous, Vnhappy, and Fatall, truly it was that wherein Iulieta hir death was published in Verona: for shee was so bewayled of great and small, that by the common playnts, the Common wealth seemed to be in daunger, and not without cause: for besides hir naturall beauty (accompanied with many vertues wherewith nature had enriched hir) she was else so humble, wife, and debonaire, as for that humility and curtesie she had stollen away the hearts of every wight, and there was none but did lament hir Misfortune. And whilst these thinges

were in this lamented state, Frier Laurence with diligence dis-
patched a Frier of his Couent, named Frier Anselme, whom he
trusted as himselfe, and deliuered him a Letter written with hys
owne hande, commaunding him expressely not to giue the same
to any other but to Rhomeo, wherein was conteyned the chaunce
which had passed betwene him and Iulietta, specially the vertue
of the Pouder, and commaunded him the nexte ensuinge Nighte
to speede himselfe to Verona, for that the operation of the
Pouder that time would take ende, and that he shold cary wyth
him back agayne to Mantua his beloued Iulietta, in dissembled
apparell, vntill Fortune had otherwise prouided for them. The
frier made futch haft as (too late) hee arriued at Mantua, within a
while after. And bicause the maner of Italy is, that the Frier
trauayling abroade ought to take a companion of his couent to
doe his affaires wythin the City, the Fryer went into his couent,
and for that he was within, it was not lawfull for him to come oute
againe that Day, bicause that certain dayes before, one relygious
of that couent as it was sayd, dyd dye of the plague: wherefore
the Magistrates appoynted for the health and visitation of the
sick, commaunded the Warden of the House that no Friers shold
wander abrode the city, or talke with any Citizen, vntil they were
licensed by the officers in that behalfe appoynted, which was the
cause of the great mishap which you shal heare hereafter. The
Friar being in this perplexitye, not able to goe forth, and not know-
yng what was contayned in the Letter, deferred hys Jorney for that
Day. Whilst things were in thys plyght, preparation was made
at Verona, to doe the obsequies of Iulietta. There is a custome
also (which is common in Italy,) to laye all the best of one lignage
and Familye in one Tombe, wherewpon Iulietta was intoumbed,
in the ordinary Graue of the Capellettes, in a Churcheyarde, hard
by the Churche of the Fryers, where also the Lord Thibault was
interred, whose Obsequies honorably done, euery man returned:
whereunto Pietro, the seruaunt of Rhomeo, gaue hys affystance:
for as we haue before declared, hys mayster fente hym backe
agayne from Mantua to Verona, to do his father seruice, and to
aduertise him of that which shold chaunce in his absence there:
who feyng the Body of Iulietta, incloſed in Toumbe, thinkyng

with the rest that shee had bene dead in deede, incontinently tooke poste horfe, and with dylygence rode to Mantua, where he founde his Mayster in his wonted house, to whom he sayde, wyth hys Eyes full of Teares: “Syr, there is chaunced vnto you so straunge a matter as if so be you do not arme your selfe with Constancye, I am afryed that I shall be the cruell minyster of your Death: be it known vnto you sir, that yesterday morning my mistresse Iulieta left her Lyfe in thys Worlde to seeke rest in an other: and wyth these Eyes I saw her buryed in the Churchyarde of S. Frauncis.” At the founde of whych heauye messaige, Rhomeo begann woefullye to Lamente, as though hys spyrites gryeued wyth the Tormente of his Passioun at that instant would haue abandoned his Bodye. But stronge Loue which woulde not permitt him to faynt vntyl the extremity, framed a thoughte in hys fanteſie, that if it were poſſyble for him to dye beſides hir his Death ſhould be more gloryous, and ſhee (as he thought) better contented: by reaſon whereoſ, after he had wafhed his face for feare to diſcouer his forrowe, hee wente out of his Chamber, and commaunded hys man to tarry behynd him, that he myght walke through out all the Corners of the Citye, to finde propre remedye (if it were poſſyble) for hys gryefe. And amonſe others, beholdynge an Apoticaſye’s ſhop of lyttle furnyture and leſſe ſtore of Boxes and other thinges requiſite for that ſcience, thought that the verye pouerty of the mayſter Apothecarye would make hym wyllingle yeld to that which he pretended to demaunde: and after he had taken hym aſide, ſecrety ſayde vnto him: “Syr, if you be the Mayſter of the Houſe, as I thynk you be, beholde here Fifty Ducates, whych I gyue you to the intent you delyuer me ſome ſtrong and vyonente Poyſon that within a quarter of an houre is able to procure Death vnto hym that ſhall vſe it.” The couetous Apothecarye entyſed by gayne, agreed to his request, and faynyng to gyue hym ſome other medycine before the People’s Face, he ſpeedily made ready a ſtrong and cruell Poyſon, afterwardes he ſayd unto him ſoftly: “Syr, I gyue you more than is needfull, for the one halfe is able to deſtroy the ſtrongeſt manne of the world:” who after he hadde receyued the poyſon, retourned home, where he commaunded his man to deſparte with diligēce to Verona, and that he ſhould make

prouision of candels, a tynder Boxe, and other Instrumentes meete for the opening of the graue of Iulietta, and that aboue all things hee shoulde not fayle to attende his commynge besides the Churchyarde of S. Frauncis, and vpon Payne of Life to keepe hys intente in silence. Which Pietro obeied in order as hys maister had requyred, and made therin sutch expedityon, as he arriued in good time to Verona, taking order for al things that wer commaunded him. Rhomeo in the meane while being folycyted wyth mortall thoughtes caufed incke and paper to be broughte vnto hym, and in few words put in wryting all the discourse of his loue, the mariage of him and Iulietta, the meane obserued for consummation of the same, the helpe that he had of Frier Laurence, the buying of his Poyson, and laft of all his death. Afterwardes hauing finished his heauy tragedy, hee closed the letters, and sealed the same with his seale, and directed the Superscription thereof to hys Father: and putting the letters into his purfle, he mounted on horsebacke, and vfed sutch dylygence, as he arriued vpon darke Nyght at the Citye of Verona, before the gates were shut, where he founde his seruaunte taryng for him with a Lanterne and instrumentes as is before sayd, meete for the opening of the graue, vnto whome hee said: "Pietro, helpe mee to open this Tombe, and so soone as it is open I commaunde thee vpon payne of thy life, not to come neere mee, nor to stay me from the thing I purpose to doe. Beholde, there is a letter which thou shalt present to morrow in the mornyng to my Father at his vprysing, which peraduenture shall please him better than thou thinkest." Pietro, not able to imagine what was his maister's intent, stode somewhat aloofe to beholde his maister's gestes and Countenance. And when they had opened the Vaulte, Rhomeo descended downe two steppes, holdyng the candel in his hand and began to behold wthy pityfull Eye, the body of hir, which was the organ of his Eyes, and kyf it tenderly, holdyng it harde betwen his armes, and not able to satissie him selfe with hir sight, put hys fearefull handes vpon the colde stomacke of Iulietta. And after he had touched hir in many places, and not able to feele anye certayne Judgemente of Lyfe, he drewe the Poyson out of hys boxe, and swallowyng downe a great quentyte of the same, cryed out:

*an of his Lyfe, and washt the same with the teares of his Eyes. ed. 1567
then curiously dropt in 1575.*

“ O Iulietta, of whome the Worlde was vnworthye, what Death is it poffyble my Hearte coulde chooſe oue more agreeable than that whych yt ſuffereth harde by thee? what Graue more Gloryous, than to bee buried in thy Toumbe? what more woorthy or ex- cellent Epytaphe can bee vowed for Memorye, than the muſuall and ptyfull Sacryfice of our lyues? ” And thinkinge to renue his forrowe, his hearte began to frette through the vyonelice of the Poyſon, whiche by lyttle and lyttle affailed the ſame, and lookyng about hym, eſpied the Bodye of the Lorde Thibault, lying nexte vnto Iulietta, whych as yet was not al together putri- fied, and ſpeakyng to the bodye as though it hadde bene alyue, ſayde: “ In what place ſo euer thou arte (O Cousyn Thibault) I moſt heartely do crye the mercye for the offence whych I haue done by depryuing of thy Lyfe: and yf thy Ghoſt doe wyſhe and crye out for Vengeaunce vpon mee, what greater or more cruell ſatyſfaction canſte thou deſyre to haue, or henceforth hope for, than to ſee him whych murdered thee, to bee empoyſoned with his owne handes, and buryed by thy fide? ” Then endynge hys talke, felyng by lyttle and lyttle that his lyfe began to fayle, falling proſtrate vpon his knees, wyth feeble voyce hee foftely ſayd: “ O my Lord God, which to redeeme me dideſt diſcend from the boſom of thy Father, and tookeſt humane fleſhe in the Wombe of the Vyrgine, I acknowledge and confeſſe, that this body of myne is nothing elſe but Earth and Dufi. ” Then feazed vpon wyth deſperate forrow, he fell downe vpon the Body of Iulietta with ſutche vehemence, as the heart faint and attenuated with too great torments, not able to beare ſo hard a vyonelice, was abandoned of all his ſenſe and Naturall powers, in ſutche ſorte as the ſiege of hys foule fayled him at that instant, and his members ſtretched forthe, remayned ſtiffe and colde. Fryer Laurence whych knew the certayne tyme of the pouder’s opera- tion, maruelled that he had no anſweſe of the Letter which he ſent to Rhomeo by his fellowe Fryer Anſelme, departed from S. Frauncis and with Instruments for the purpose, determined to open the Graue to let in aire to Iulietta, whych was ready to wake: and approchynge the place, hee eſpied a lyght within, which made him afraide vntyll that Pietro whych was hard by, had certyfied hym

that Rhomeo was with in, and had not ceased there to Lamente and Complayne the space of halfe an Houre: and when they two were entred the Graue and finding Rhomeo without Lyfe, made futch forrowe as they can well conceyue whych Loue their deare Fryende wyth lyke perfection. And as they were making theyr complaints, Iulietta rising out of hir traunce, and beholding light within the Toumbe, vncertayne wheather it were a dreame or fantasie that appeared before his eyes, comming agayne to hir selfe, knew Frier Laurence, vnto whom she said: "Father, I pray thee in the name of God to perfourme thy promise, for I am almost deade." And then frier Laurence concealing nothing from hir, (bycause he feared to be taken through his too long abode in that place) faythfully rehearsed vnto hir, how he had sent frier Anselme to Rhomeo at Mantua, from whom as yet hee had receiued no aunswere. Notwithstanding he found Rhomeo dead in the graue, whose body he poyncted vnto, lyinge hard by hir, praying hir sith it was so, paciently to beare that sodayne misfortune, and that if it pleased hir, he would conuey hir into some monastry of women where she might in time moderate hir sorrow, and giue rest vnto hir minde. Iulietta had no sooner cast eye vpon the deade corps of Rhomeo, but began to breake the fountayne pipes of gushing teares, which ran forth in futch abundance, as not able to support the furor of hir griefe, she breathed without ceasing vpon his mouth, and then throwen hir selfe vpon his body, and embracing it very hard, seemed that by force of fighes and sobs, she would haue reuiued, and brought him againe to life, and after she had kissed and rekissed hym a million of times, she cried out: "Ah the sweete reste of my cares, and the onely port of all my pleasures and pastimes, hadst thou so sure a hearte to chooze thy Churchyard in this place betwene the armes of thy perfect Louer, and to ende the course of thy life for my sake in the floure of thy Youth when lyfe to thee should have bene most deare and delectable? how had this tender body power to resist the furious Coumbat of death, very death it selfe here present? how coulde thy tender and delicate youth willingly permit that thou shouldest approch into this filthy and infected place, where from henceforth thou shalt be the pasture of Worms vnworthy of

thee? Alas, alas, by what meanes shall I now renue my playnts, which time and long pacience ought to haue buried and clearely quenched? Ah I, miserable and Caitife wretch, thinking to finde remedy for my griefs, haue sharpned the Knife that hath gieuen me this cruell blow, whereof I receiue the cause of mortall wound. Ah, happy and fortunate graue which shalt serue in world to come for witnesse of the most perfect aliaunce that euer was betwene two most infortunate louers, receyue now the last sobbing fighes, and intertayment of the most cruell of all the cruell subiects of ire and death." And as she thought to continue hir complaynts, Pietro aduertised Frier Laurence that he heard a noyse besides the citadell, wherewyth being afrayd, they speadily departed, fearing to be taken: and then Iulietta seeing hir selfe alone, and in full Liberty, tooke agayne Rhomeo betweene hir armes, kissing him with futch affection, as she seemed to be more attaynted with loue than death, and drawing out the Dagger which Rhomeo ware by his fide, she pricked hir selfe with many blowes against the heart, sayinge with feeble and pitiful voice: "Ah death the end of sorrow, and beginning of felicity, thou art most hartely welcome: feare not at this time to sharpen thy dart: giue no longer delay of life, for feare that my sprite trauayle not to finde Rhomeo's ghost amongs futch number of carion corpses: and thou my deare Lord and loyall husband Rhomeo, if there rest in thee any knowledge, receyue hir whom thou haft so faythfully loued, the onely cause of thy violent death, which frankly offreth vp hir soule that none but thou shalt ioy the loue whereof thou haft made so lawfull conquest, and that our soules passing from this light, may eternally liue together in the place of euerlasting ioy." And when she had ended those wordes shée yelded vp hir ghoſt. While these thinges thus were done, the garde and watch of the Citty by chaunce passed by, and seeing light within the graue, suspected straight that there were ſome Necromancers which had opened the Toumbe to abuse the deade bodies for ayde of their arte: and defirous to knowe what it ment, went downe into the vaut, where they found Rhomeo and Iulietta, with their armes imbracing ech other's neck, as though there had bene ſome token of lyfe. And after they had well viewed them at leysure, they perceyued in what caſe they were:

and then all amazed they fought for the theeues which (as they thought) had done the murther, and in the ende founde the good father Fryer Laurence, and Pietro the seruaunte of deade Rhomeo (whych had hid themselues under a stall) whom they caryed to Pryson, and aduertysed the Lord of Escala, and the magistrates of Verona of that horrible murder, which by and by was published throughoute the City. Then flocked together al the Citizens, women and children leauyng their houses, to loke vpon that pityful fighte, and to the Ende that in presence of the whole Cytie, the murder should be knowne, the Magistrates ordayned that the two deade Bodies should he erected vpon a stage to the view and sight of the whole World, in sutch forte and manner as they were found withyn the Graue, and that Pietro and frier Laurence should publikely bee examyned, that afterwardes there myght be no murmure or other pretended cause of ignoraunce. And thys good olde Frier beyng vpon the Scaffold, hauinge a whyte Beard all wet and bathed with Teares, the Judges commaunded him to declare vnto them who were the Authors of that Murder, sith at vntimely houre hee was apprehended with certayne Irons besides the Graue. Fryer Laurence, a rounde and franke Man of talke, nothyng moued with that accusation, answered them with stoute and bolde voyce : " My maisters, there is none of you all (if you haue respect vnto my forepaffed Life, and to my aged Yeres, and therewithall haue confideration of this heauy spectacle, whereunto vnhappy fortune hathe prefently brought me) but doeth greatly maruell of so sodaine mutation and change vnlooked for so mutch as these three score and Ten or twelue Yeares fithens I came into this Worlde, and began to proue the vanities thereof, I was neuer suspected, touched, or found guilty of any crime which was able to make me blushe, or hide my face, although (before God) I doe confess my self to be the greatest and most abhominalle sinner of al the redeemed flocke of Christ. So it is notwithstanding, that sith I am prest and ready to render mine accompte, and that Death, the Graue and wormes do dailye summon this wretched corps of myne to appeare before the Iuftyce seate of God, still wayghtyng and attending to be carried to my hoped graue, this is the houre I say, as you likewise may thinke wherein I am

fallen to the greatest damage and priudice of my Lyfe and honest porte, and that which hath ingendred thys synyster opynyon of mee, may peraduenture bee these greate Teares which in abundaunce tryckle downe my Face as though the holy scriptures do not witnesse, that Jesus Christ moued with humayne pitty, and compassion, did weepe, and poure forth teares, and that many times teares be the faythfull messengers of a man's innocency. Or else the most likely euidence, and presumption, is the suspected hour, which (as the magistrate doth say) doth make mee culpable of the murder, as though all houres were not indifferently made equall by God their Creator, who in his owne person declareth vnto vs that there be twelue houres in the Day, shewing thereby that there is no exception of houres nor of minutes, but that one may doe eyther good or ill at all times indifferently, as the party is guided or forsaken by the sprite of God: touching the Irons which were founde about me, needfull it is not now to let you vnderstand for what vse Iron was first made, and that of it selfe it is not able to increase in man eyther good or euill, if not by the mischieuous minde of hym which doth abuse it. Thus mutch I haue thought good to tell you, to the intent that neyther teares nor Iron, ne yet suspected houre, are able to make me guilty of the murder, or make me otherwyse than I am, but only the witnesse of mine owne conscience, which alone if I were guilty should be the accuser, the witnesse, and the hangman, whych, by reason of mine age and the reputation I haue had amonges you, and the little time that I haue to liue in this World shoulde more torment me within, than all the mortall paynes that could be deuised: but (thankes be to myne eternall God) I feele no worme that gnaweth, nor any remorse that pricketh me touching that fact, for which I see you all troubled and amazed: and to set your harts at rest, and to remoue the doubts which hereafter may torment your consciences, I fweare vnto you by all the heauenly parts wherein I hope to be, that forthwith I will disclose from first to last the entire discourse of this pitifull tragedy, whych peraduenture shall driue you into no lesse wondre and amaze, than those two poore passionate Louers were strong and pacient, to expone themselues to the mercy of death, for the feruent and indissoluble loue betwene

then." Then the Fatherly Frier began to repeate the beginning of the loue betwene Iulietta, and Rhomeo, which by certayne space of time confirmed, was prosecuted by wordes at the first, then by mutual promife of mariage, vnknown to the world. And as within few dayes after, the two Louers feelinge themselues sharpned and incited with stronger onfet, repaired vnto him vnder colour of confession, protesting by othe that they were both maried, and that if he woulde not solemnize that mariage in the face of the Church, they should be constrainyd to offend God to liue in disordred lust: in confideration whereof, and specially seeing their alliaunce to be good, and comfortable in dignity, richeſſe and Nobility on both ſides, hoping by that meanes perchaunce to reconcile the Montefches, and Capellets, and that by doing ſutcher an acceptable worke to God, he gaue them the Churches bleffing in a certayne Chappel of the friers church whereof the night following they did conſummatte the mariage fruictis in the Pallace of the Capellets. For testimony of which copulation, the woman of Iuliettae's Chamber was able to depoſe: Adding moreouer, the murder of Thibault, which was Couſin to Iulietta: by reaſon whereof the baniſhment of Rhomeo did followe, and howe in the abſence of the ſayd Rhomeo, the mariage being kept ſecret betwene them, a new Matrimony was intreated wyth the Countee Paris, which miſliker by Iulietta, ſhe fell proſtrate at his feete in a Chappell of S. Frauncis church, with full determination to haue killed hirſelf with hir owne hands, if he gaue hir not councell how ſhe ſhould auoyde the mariage agreed betwene hir father and the Countee Paris. For conculſion, he ſayd, that althoſh he was refolued by reaſon of his age, and neareneſſe of death to abhorre all ſecrete Sciences, wherein in his younger yeares he had delight, notwithstanding, preſſed with impoſturity, and moued with pitty, fearing leaſt Iulietta ſhould do ſome cruelty agaynſt hirſelfe, he ſtrayned his conſcience, and chose rather with ſome little fault to grieue his minde, than to ſuffer the young gentlewoman to deſtroy hir body, and hazarde the daunger of hir ſoule: and therefore he opened ſome part of his auncient cunning, and gaue her a certayne Pouder to make hir ſleepe, by meanes whereof ſhe was thought to be deade. Then he

tolde them how he had sent Frier Anselme to cary letters to Rhomeo of their enterprise, whereof hitherto he had no aunswere. Then briefly he concluded how he found Rhomeo dead within the graue, who as it is most likely did impoyson himselfe, or was otherwise smothered or suffocated with forow by findinge Iulietta in that state, thinking shee had bene dead. Then he tolde them how Iulietta did kill hirselfe with the Dagger of Rhomeo to beare him company after his death, and how it was impossible for them to saue hir for the noyse of the watch which forced theym to flee from thence. And for more ample approbation of his saying, he humbly besought the Lord of Verona and the Magistrats to send to Mantua for Frier Anselme to know the cause of his slack returne, that the content of the letter sent to Rhomeo might be seene: to examine the Woman of the Chamber of Iulietta, and Pietro the seruaunt of Rhomeo, who not attending for further request, sayd vnto them: "My Lordes, when Rhomeo entred the graue, he gaue me this Pacquet, written as I suppose with his owne hand, who gaue me expresse commaundement to deliuer it to his father." The pacquet opened, they found the whole effect of this story, specially the Apothecarie's name, which told him the Poyson, the price, and the cause wherefore he vsed it, and all appeared to be so cleare and euident, as there rested nothing for further verification of the same, but their presence at the doing of the particulers thereof, for the whole was so well declared in order, as they were out of doubt that the same was true: and then the Lord Bartholomew of Escala, after he had debated with the Magistrates of these euent, decreed that the Woman of Iulietta hir chamber should bee banished, because shee did conceale that priuy mariage from the Father of Rhomeo, which if it had beene knowne in tyme, had bred to the whole City an vniuersall benefit. Pietro because he obeyed hys mayster's commaundement, and kept close hys lawfull secrets, according to the well conditioned nature of a trusty seruaunt, was set at liberty. The Poticary taken, rackt, and founde guilty, was hanged. The good olde man Frier Laurence, as well for respect of his auncient seruice which he had done to the common wealth of Verona, as also for his vertuous life (for the which hee was specially recommended) was let goe in peace, with-

out any note of Infamy. Notwithstanding by reason of his age, he voluntarily gaue ouer the World, and closed himselfe in an Hermitage, two miles from Verona, where he liued 5 or 6 yeares, and spent hys tyme in continuall prayer, vntil he was called out of this transitory worlde, into the blissful state of euerlafting ioy. And for the compassyon of so straunge an infortune, the Monteschs, and Capellets poured forth futch abundaunce of teares, as with the same they did euacuate their auncient grudge and choler, whereby they were then reconciled: and they which coulde not bee brought to attonement by any wisedome or humayne councell, were in the ende vanquished and made frends by pity: and to immortalize the memory of so intier and perfect amity, the Lord of Verona ordayneid, that the two bodies of those miraculous Louers should be fast intoumbed in the graue where they ended their lyues,

in which place was erected a high marble Piller, honoured
with an infinite number of excellent Epytaphes, which
to this day be apparaunt, with futch noble memory,
as amongs all the rare excellencies, wherewith
that City is furnished, there is none more
Famous than the Monument of Rhomeo
and Iulietta.

THE TWENTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

Two gentlemen of Venice were honourably deceiued of their Wyues, whose notable practises, and secret conference for atchieuinge their desire, occysoned diuers accidentes, and ingendred double benefit : wherein also is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and state of that Cittye : with other chaunces and actes concerningnge the same.

HEERE haue I thought good to summon 2 Gentlewomen of Venice to appeare in Place, and to mount on Stage amongs other Italian Dames to shew cause of their bolde incountry agaynst the Folly of their two Husbands, that vncharitably without respect of neyghbourhoode, went about to assayle the honesty of eyther's wyfe, and weening they had enioyed others felicity, by the womens prudence, forefight and ware gouernment, were both deceiued, and yet attayned the chiefest benefit that mariage state doth looke for: so that if search bee made amonges antiquities, it is to be doubted wheather greater chasfity, and better pollicy could be founde for accomplishment of an intended purpose. Many deedes haue ben done by women for sauegard of their Husbandes lyues, as that of the Minyæ, a sort of Women whose husbands were imprisoned at Lacedæmon, and for treason condemned, who to saue their liues, entred into prison the night before they should dy, and by exchange of apparell, deliuered them, and remayned there to suffer for them. Of Hipscratea also the Queene and Wyfe of Mithridates king of Pontus, who spared not hir Noble beauty and golden lockes to manure hir selfe in the vse of armes, to keepe hir husband company in perils and daungers: and being ouercome by Pompeius, and flying away, neuer left him vnaccompanied, ne forsooke futch trauayle as he himselfe fustayned. The like also of Æmilia, Turia, Sulpitia, Portia, and other Romane Dames. But that futch haue preuented their husband's folly, seldome we reade, sauing of Queene Marie, the Wife of Don Pietro king of Arragon, who marking the insolency of hir husband, and fory for his disordred life, honest ialousie opening hir continent

eyes, forced hir to seeke meanes to remoue his wanton acts, or at leastwise by pollicy and wife foresight to make him husbande and culture his own soyle, that for want of seasonable tillage was barren and voyde of fruiete. Wherefore consulting with the Lord chamberlayne, who of custome brought whom the king liked best, was in place of his woman bestowed in his Bed, and of her that night begat the yong Prynce Giacomo, that afterwardes proued a valiaunte, and wife king. These passing good pollicies of women many times abolish the frantik lecherous fits of husbands gieuen to superfluous lusts, when first by their chaste behauour and womanly patience they contayne that which they be loth to see or heare of, and then demaunding counsell of sobriety and wisedome, excogitate sleights to shun folly, and expell discurtesie, by husbande's careleffe vse. Sutch practises, and denises, these two Gentlewomen whom I now bringe forth, disclosoe in this discourse ensuing. In the Citty of Venice, (which for riches and fayre Women excelleth all other within the region of Italy) in the time that Francesco Foscari, a very wyse Prynce, did gouerne the state, there were two young Gentlemen, the one called Girolamo Bembo, and the other Anselmo Barbadico, betwene whom as many times chaunceth amongs other, grew sutch great hatred and cruel hostilitie, as ech of them by secreit and all possible meanes deuised to doe other shame and displeasure, which kindled to sutch outrage, as it was thought impossible to be pacified. It chaunced that at one tyme both of them did mary two noble young Gentlewomen, excellent and fayre, both brought vp vnder one Nurse, and loued ech other lyke two Sisters, and as though they had been both borne of one body. The Wyfe of Anselmo, called Ifotta, was the Daughter of Messer Marco Gradenigo, a man of great estimation in that Citty, one of the procuratours of San Marco, whereof there were not so great number in those dayes as there bee now, because the Wyfes men, and best Approued of Lyfe were chosen to that great and Noble dignity, none allotted thereunto by Bribes or Ambition. The Wyfe of Girolamo Bembo was called Lucia, the Daughter of Messer Gian Francesco Valerio Caualiere, a Gentleman very well learned, and many times sent by the State, Ambassadour into diuers Countreys, and after he had bene Orator wyth the Pope, for his

wifedome in the execution of the same was in great estimation wyth the whole Citty. The two Gentlewomen after they were maried, and heard of the hatred betwene their Husbandes, were very sorrowfull and pensiue, because they thought the Freendshyp and Loue betwene them twayne, continued from their tender yeares, could not bee, but with greate difficulty kept, or else altogether dissolued and broken. Notwithstanding beyng discrete and wyse, for auoyding occasion of eche Husbande's offence, determined to cease their accustomed conuersation and louinge Familiarity, and not to frequent others company, but at Places and Tymes conuenient. To whom Fortune was so fauourable, as not onely theyr Houses were neere together but also adioyninge, in the Backsides whereof theyr Gardeyns also Confined, seperated onely wyth a lyttle Hedge, that euery day they myght see one another, and many tymes talke together: moreouer the Seruautes, and People of eyther houes were freendly, and familiar, whych didde greatly content the two Louynge Gentlewomen, bicause they also in the absence of theyr Husbandes, myghte at pleasure in their Gardens disport themselues. And continuing this order the space of three yeares neyther of them within that terme were with chylde. In which space Anselmo many times viewing and casting his eyes vpon Madonna Lucia, fell earnestly in loue with hir, and was not that day well at ease, wherein he had not beholden hir excellent beauty. She that was of Spirite, and Wit subtle, marked the lookes and maner of Anselmo, who neyther for loue, ne other cause did render like lookes on him, but to see to what ende his louing cheere and Countenaunce would tend. Notwithstanding she seemed rather desirous to behold him, than elswhere to employe hir lookes. On the other fide the good behauour, the wife order and pleasaunt beauty of Madonna Ifotta was so excellent and plaufible in the ficht of mayster Girolamo, as no Louer in the World was better pleased with his beloued than he with hir: who not able to liue wythout the sweete ficht of Ifotta (that was a crafty and wily Wench) was by hir quickly perceiued. She being right honest and wife, and louing hir husband very dearely, did beare that countenaunce to Girolamo, that she generally did to any of the Citty, or to other straunger that she neuer saw before. But hir

husband more and more inflamed, hauing lost the liberty of himfelfe, wounded and pierced with the amorous arowes of Loue, coulde not conuert his minde to any other but to mistrefesse Lucia. These two women wonted to heare seruice euery day ordinarily at the church of Sanfantino, because they lay long a bed in the mornings, and commonly seruice in that church was sayd somewhat late: their pewes also somwhat distant one from an other. Whether their 2 amorous husbands continually vsed to follow them a loofe of, and to place themselues where eyther of them might best view his beloued: by which custome they seemed to the common people to be iealous ouer their Wyues. But they prosecuted the matter in futch wyse, as eyther of them without shippynge, fought to fende other into Cornouale. It came to passe then, that these 2 beloued gentlewomen one knowing nothing of another's intent, determined to consider better of this loue, because the great good will long time borne, should not be interrupted. Vppon a certayne day when their husbands were abrode, resorting together to talk at their Garden hedge according to theyr wonted manner, they began to be pleasaunte and merry: and after louynge salutations, Mistrefesse Lucia spake these Woordes vnto hir Companyon: "Ifotta my deare beloued sister, I haue a tale to tell you of your husband, that perchaunce will seeme straunger than anye newes that euer you heard." "And I" (answered mistrefesse Ifotta) "I have a story to tel you that wil make you no leſſe to wonder than I at that which you haue to say, and it may be will put you into ſome choler and chafe." "What is that?" quod the one and other. In the ende eyther of them told what practizes and loue their husbands went about. Whereat although they were in great rage for theyr husbandes follye, yet for the time they laughed out the matter, and thought that they were ſufficient (as in very deede they were, a thing not to be doubted) and able to ſatisfie their husbands hunger and therewithall began to blame them and to ſay that they deserued to learn to play of the Cornets, if they had no greater feare of God, and care of honesty than their husbands had. Then after mutch talke of this matter, concluded that they ſhould do wel to expeſt what their husbands would demaund. Hauing taken order as they thought meete, they agreed dailye to eſpye what ſhoulde

chaunce, and purposed first with sweete and pleasaunte lookes to bayte and lure eche other feere, to put them in hope therby that they should satissie their desires, which done for that tyme they departed. And when at the Church at Sanfantino or other place in Venice, they chanced to meeete their louers, they shewed vnto them cheareful and mery Countenaunce : whych the Louers well notyng, were the gladdest Men of the Worlde : and seeing that it was impossible in Speache to vtter their Myndes, they purposed by Letters to signify the same. And hauing found Purciuants to goe betwene parties (whereof this City was wont to be ful) either of them wrote an Amorous Letter, to his beloued, the content whereof was, that they were verye desyrous secretly to talke with them, thereby to expresse the burnyng affectyons that inwardly they bare them, whych without declaration and vtterance by Mouthe in theyr owne prefence, woulde breed them Torments more bytter than Deathe. And wythin fewe Dayes after (no greate dyfference of Tyme betweene,) they wrote their Letters. But Girolamo Bembo hauing a pregnant Wit, who coulde well Endite both in prose, and Rime, wrote an excellent sonnet in the prayse of his Darling in Italian Meeter, and wyth hys Letter sent the same vnto hir, the effect whereof doth follow.

A liuely face and pearcing beauty bright
 Hath linkt in loue my sely fences all :
 A comely porte, a goodly shaped wight
 Hath made me slide that neuer thought to fall :
 Hir eyes, hir grace, hir deedes and maners milde,
 So straines my heart that loue hath Wit begilde.

But not one dart of Cupide did me wounde,
 A hundred shaftes lights all on me at ones :
 As though dame kind some new deuise had founde,
 To teare my flesh, and crash a two my bones :
 And yet I feele futch ioy in theſe my woes
 That as I die my ſprite to pleasure goes.

These new found fits futch change in me doe breedē,
 I hate the day and draw to darkneſſe, lo !

Yet by the Lampe of beauty doe I feede
In dimmest dayes and darkest nights also,
Thus altring State and changing Diet still,
I feele and know the force of Venus will.

The best I finde, is that I doe confesse,
I loue you Dame whose beauty doth excell :
But yet a toy doth breed me some distresse,
For that I dread you will not loue me well,
Than loue yee wot shall rest in me alone :
And fleshly brest, shall beare a heart of stone.

O goddesse mine, yet heare my voyce of ruthe,
And pitie him that heart presents to thee :
And if thou want a witnesse for my truth
Let fighes and teares my iudge and record be,
Vnto the ende a day may come in haft,
To make me thinke I spend no time in waste.

For nought preuayles in loue to serue and sue
If full effe&t ioyne not with words at neede,
What is desire or any fanfies newe
More than the winde? that spreades abroade in deede,
My words and works, shall both in one agree,
To pleasure hir, whose Seruaunt would I bee.

The subtil Dames receining those amorous letters and song,
disdanfully at the first seemed to take them at the bringers hands,
as they had determined, yet afterwardes they shewed better coun-
tenaunce. These letters were tossed from one to an other, whereat
they made great pastime, and thought that the same would come
to very good succeſſe, eyther of theym keepinge ſtill their Hus-
bande's Letter, and agreed without iniury done one to an other
trimly to deceyue their husbands. The maner how you shall
perceyue anone. They deuized to ſend word to their Louers, that
they were ready at al times to ſatisfie their futes, if the same might
be ſecrety done, and ſafely might make repayre vnto their houſes,
when their Husbands were abfent, which in any wife they ſayde,

must be done in the night, for feare least in the day tyme they were discried. Agayne these prouident and subtil Women had taken order wyth their Maydes, whom they made priuy to their practyle that through their Gardens they should enter into other's house, and bee shut in their Chambers without Lyght, there to tary for their Husbands, and by any meanes not to bee feene or knowne. This order prescribed and giuen, Mistresse Lucia first did hir louer to vnderstand, that the night insuing at foure of the Clock at the Posterne dore, which should be left open, he should come into hir house, where hir mayde should be ready to bring him vp to hir Chaumbre, because hir husband Maister Girolamo woulde that Night imbarke himselfe to goe to Padua. The like Mistresse Isotta did to Maister Girolamo, appointing him at fve of the clock, whych she sayd was a very conuenient time, bicause mayster Anfelmo that night woulde sup and lye with certayne of his Fryends at Murano, a place besides Venice. Vpon these newes, the 2 Louers thought them selues the most valiaunt and fortunate of the World, no Enterprize now there was but seemed easie for them to bring to passe, yea if it were to expell the Saracens out of Hierusalem, or to depriue the great Turke of his Kingdome of Constantinople. Their ioy was futch, as they coulde not tell where they were, thinking euery houre a whole day till night. At length the tyme was come so long desired, and the Husbandes accordingly gaue diligent attendaunce, and let their Wyues to vnderstande, (or at least wyse beleeuued they had) that they could not come home that night for matters of great importaunce. The Women that were very wise, seeing their ship sayle wyth so prosperous wynde, fayned themselues to credite all that they offered. These young men tooke eyther of them his Gondola (or as we tearm it theyr Barge) to disport themselues, and hauing supped abroade, rowed in the Cauali, which is the Water that passeth through diuers Streates of the City, expecting their appoyncted hour. The Women ready at three of the Clocke, repayred into their Gardens, and after they had Talked, and Laughed together a prety whyle, went one into an other's house, and were by the maydes brought vp to the Chaumbres. There eyther of them the Candle being light, began diligently to view the order and situation of the

Place, and by little and little marked the chiefeſt things they looked for, committing the ſame to memory. Afterwards they put out the Candle, and both in trembling maner expeſted the comming of their Hufbandes. And iuft at four of the Clocke the Mayden of Madonna Lucia ſtoode at the dore to wayte for the comminge of Maifer Anſelmo, who within a while after came, and gladly was let in by the mayde, and by hir conduced vp to hir Bed ſide. The place there, was ſo dark as Hel, and imposſible for him to know his Wyfe. The two Wyues were ſo like of bigneffe and Speach as by darke wythout great diſſiculty they could be known: when Anſelmo had put of his clothes, he was of his Wyfe amorouslly intertayned, thinking the Wyfe of Girolamo had receyued him betwene hir armes, who aboue a Thouſande times kiſſed hir very ſweetely, and ſhe for hir parte ſweetely rendred agayne to hym ſo many: what followed it were Folly to deſcribe. Girolamo lykewife at 5 of the clocke appeared, and was by the mayde conueied vp to the Chamber, where he lay with his own Wife, to their great contentations. Now theſe 2 hufbands thinking they had ben imbraced by their beloued Ladies, to ſeeme braue, and valiaunt men of Warre, made greater prooſe of their Manhoode, than they were wont to do. At what time their Wyues (as it pleaſed God to maniſt by their deliuery) were begotten with child of 2 fayre Sons, and they the beſt contented Women of the World. This praćtice continued betwene them many times, fewe weekes paſſing but in this ſort they lay together. Neyther of them for all this perceiued themſelues to be deluded, or conceyued any ſuſpicion of colluſion for that the chamber was ſtill without light, and in the day the Wo- men commonly fayled not to be together. The time was not longe but their Bellies began to ſwell, whereat their Hufbandes were exceeding ioyfull, beleeuing verily that eyther of them had fixed Hornes vpon the other's head. Howbeit the poore men for all their false Beliefe had beſtowed theyr Laboure vpon their owne Soyle, watred onely with the course of their proper Fountayne. Theſe two Iolly Wenches ſeeyng themſelues by thys amorous praćtice to be with Childe, beganne to deuife howe they miſt break of the ſame, douting leaſt ſome flaſhder and ill talke ſhould rife: and thereby the hatred and malice betwene theyr hus-

bandes increase to greater fury. And as they were aboue thyse deuise, an occasion chaunced vtterly to dissolue theyr accustomed meetynges, but not in that forte as they woulde haue had it. For the Women determined as merily they had begon so iocundlye to ende: but Fortune the guide of Humane Lyfe, disposeseth all enterpryses after hir owne pleasure, who lyke a puissant Lady caryeth with hir the successe of eche attempte. The beginning the offereth freely to him that list, the Ende the calleth for, as a ransome or trybute payable vnto hir. In the same streate, or as they call it Rio, and Canale, not farre from theyr Houses, there dwelled a young Woman very fayre and comely, not fully twenty yeares of age, which then was a Widow, and a lyttle before the wife of M. Niccolò Delphino, and the Daughter of M. Giuoanni Moro, called Gismonda: she besides hir Father's Dowrye (which was more than a Thousand Pound) had left hir by hir Husband, a great Porcyon of Money, Jewels, Plate, and houshold Furnitures. Wyth hir fell in Loue Aloisio Foscari, the Nephewe of the Duke, who making greate sute to haue hir to Wyfe, consumed the time in beholding his Ladye, and at length had brought the matter to so good passe, as one Nighte she was contented, at one of the Wyndowes of hir House directly ouer agaynst a little lane, to heare him speake. Aloisio maruellous glad of those desired Newes, at the appoynted Nyght, about fyue or sixe of the Clocke, with a Ladder made of Roapes (bicause the Window was very high) went thyther alone. Beyng at the place and making a figne concluded vpon betweene them, attended when the gentlewoman should throw downe hir cord to draw vp the Ladder accordingly as was appointed, which not longe after was done. Gismonda when shee had receiued the ende of the Ladder, tied it fast to the iawme of the wyndow, and gaue a token to hir Louer to mount. He by force of loue being very venturous, liuely and lustly scaled the Wyndow: and when he was vpon the Top of the same, desirous to caste himselfe in, to embrase his Lady, and shee not readye to receiue him, or else vpon other occasion, he fel downe backewarde, thinking as he fell to haue sauied himselfe twice or thryce by catchyng holde vpon the Ladder, but it would not be. Notwithstanding, as God would haue it, the poise of his Body fell not vpon the pauement of the streate fully,

but was stayed by some lets in the fall, whych had it not bene so, no doubt he had bene slayne out of hande, but yet his bones were sore bruised and his heade deeply wounded. The infortunate Louer seeing himselfe sore hurt wyth that pityfull fall, albeyt hee thought that hee had receiued his Death's Wounde, and imposyble to liue any longer, yet the loue that he bare to the Widow, did so far surmount hys payne and the gryefe of hys Body sore crushed and broken, that so well as he could, hee rose vp, and with his hands stayed the Bloud that ranne from hys Heade, to the intente yt myghte not rayse some flaunder vpon the Widow whom hee loued so wel: and went alonges the streate towarde the houses of Girolamo and Anselmo aforesaid. Being come thither wyth greate difficulty not able to goe anye further for verye payne and gryefe, hee faynted and fell downe as deade, where the Bloude issued in sutch abounding, as the Grounde therewith was greatly imbruied, and euery one that saw him thought him to be voide of Lyfe. Mistresse Gismonda exceeding sorrowful for this mischaunce, doubted that he had broken his Necke, but when she saw hym depart, she comforted him so well as she could, and drewe vp the Ladder into hir Chamber. Sutch Chaunces happen to earnest Louers, who when they think they haue scaled the top of theyr Felicity, sodaynly tomble downe into the Pit of extreme despayre, that better it had ben for them leyisurely to expect the grace of their Ladyes at conuenient place and houre, than hardly without prouidence to aduenture lyke desperat souldiers to clym the top of the vamure, without measuryng the height of the Wals, or viewyng the substaunce of theyr Ladders, do receyue in the ende cruell repulse, and fal down headlonge either by present Death or mortall Wounde, to receyue euerlastyng reproche and shame. But turne we agayne now to this disgraced Louer, who lay gasping betwene Lyfe and Death. And as he was in this sorrowful state, one of the Captaynes, a Noble man appointed to see orders obserued in the Nighte, wyth hys bande (which they call Zaffi) came thither: and finding hym lying vpon the ground, knew that it was Aloisio Foscari, and cauſing him to be taken vp from the place wher he lay, (thinking he had ben dead) commanded that he should be conneyed into the Church adioyning whych immediately was done. And when he had wel confi-

dered the place where hee was founde, hee doubted that eyther Girolamo Bembo or Anselmo Barbadico, before whose Dores hee thought the murder committed, had kylled him, which afterwards he beleued to be true, bycause he heard a certayne noyse of mennes Feete at one of their Doores: wherefore he denide his company, placynge some on the one side of their houfes, and some on the other, besieging the same so well as he coulde. And as Fortune woulde he founde by Neglygence of the mayds, the dores of the ii. houfes open. It chaunced also that Nyght that the two Louers one in other's House were gone to lye with their Ladyes, who hearynge the hurly burly, and sturre made in the house by the Sergeantts, sodaynely the Women lept out of their Beds, and bearyng their apparell vppon theyr shoulders, went home to their houfes throughe their Gardeins vnfeene of any, and in fearefull wyse did attende what shoulde be the End of the same. Girolamo, and Anselmo not knowing what rumor and noise that was, although they made haft in the Darke to cloth themselfes, were by the Offycers without any field fought, apprehended in ech other's Chamber, and remained Prysoners at theyr mercy: whereat the Captayne and hys Band did greatly maruell, knowyng the Hatred betweene them. But when Torches and Lyghts were brought, and the two Gentle-men caried out of Doores, the wonder was the greater for that they perceyued them almoste Naked, and prysoners taken in eche other's House. And besydes thys admiratyon, sutch murmur and flaunder was bruted, as the quality of euerye Vulgar Heade coulde secretye deuyse or Imagyne, but specyally of the innocentte Women, who howe faultleffe they were, every Man by what is sayde before maye conceyue, and yet the cancred Stomackes of that Troupe bare sutch Malyce agaynst them, as they iarred and brawled agaynst them lyke curryshe Curres at straunge Dogges whom they neuer sawe before. The Gentlemen immedately were caried to pryson, ignorant vppon what occasion: afterwards vnderstandinge that they were committed for the murder of Aloisio Foscari, and imprysoned like theeuues, albeit they knew themselfes guiltleffe of murder or Theft, yet their gryef and sorrowe was very greate, beyng certayne that all Venice shoulde vnderstande howe they betweene whome had ben mortall hatred,

were nowe become copartners of that whych none but the true possesseours ought to enioy: and althoughe they coulde not abyde to speake together, lyke thoſe that deadely dyd hate one another, yet both theyr myndes were fyxed vpon one thought. In the ende, conceyuing Fury and despite agaynſte theyr Wyues, the place being ſo darke that no Lyght or Sunne coulde pierce into the ſame, whereby wythout shame or diſdayne one of them began to ſpeake to another, and with terrible Othes they gaue theyr fayth to diſcloſe the troth in what fort eyther of them was taken in other's Chamber, and frankely told the way and meane howe eche of them enjoyed hys Pleaſure of other's Wyfe: whereupon the whole matter (according to their knowledge) was altogether by little and little manifest and knowne. Then they accompted theyr Wiues to be the moſt arrant ſtrumpets within the whole City, by diſplayng of whom theyr olde rancor was forgotten, and they agreed together like two Fryends, who thought that for shame they ſhould neuer be able to looke Men in the face, ne yet to ſhew themſelues openlye within the Citye, for ſorrow whereof they deemed Death the greateſt good turne and beſt Benefit that could chance vnto them. To be ſhort, ſeeing no meanes or occaſion to comfort and relieue theyr penſyue and heauy ſtates, they fell into extreeme diſpayre, who afraide to lyue any longer, deuized way to rid them ſelues of Lyfe, concludyng to make themſelues guilty of the murder of Aloifo Foscari: and after much talke betweene them of that cruelle determination, ſtill approuing the ſame to be theyr beſt refuge, they expected nothyng elſe, but when they ſhould be examined before the Magiſtrates. Foscari as is before declared was carryed into the Churche for Deade, and the Pryeft ſtraightly charged wyth the keepynge of hym, who cauſed hym to be conueyed into the myddes of the Churche, ſetting ii. Torches a Light, the one at his heade, and the other at his feete, and when the Company was gone, he determined to goe to bed the remaunt of the Nyght to take his reſt: but before he went, ſeeing the Torches were but ſhort, and could not laſt paſte two or three houres, he lighted two other, and ſet them in the others place, for that it ſhould ſeeme to his frends, if any chaunced to come what care and worship he beſtowed vpon him. The Prief

ready to depart, perceiued the Body somewhat to moue, with that looking vpon his Face, espyed his eyes a little to begin to open. Wherewithall somewhat afraide, he crying out, ran awaie: notwithstanding his Courage began to come to him again, and laying his hand vpon his breast, perceiued his heart to beate, and then twas out of doubt that he was not dead, although by reason of losse of his bloud he thought little life to remaine in him: wherefore he with one of his fellow priests which was a bed, and the Clerck of the Parish, caried maister Foscari so tenderly as they could into the Priests Chamber, which adioined next the Church. Then he sente for a surgeon that dwelt hard by, and required him diligently to search the Wounde, who so well as he could purged the same from the corrupt Bloud, and perceiuyng it not to be mortall, so dressed it wyth Oyles and other precious ointments, as Aloifio came agayn to hymselfe: and when he had anoynted that recovered body wyth certayne Precious and comfortable Oyles, he suffred him to take his rest: the Priest also went to bed and slepte till it was Daye, who so soone as he was vp, went to seeke the Captayne to tel him that Maister Aloifio was recovered. The Captaine at that tyme was gone to the pallace at San. Marco, to giue the Duke aduertisement of thys Chaunce, after whom the Priest went and was let in to the Duke's Chamber: to whom he declared what he had done to Aloifio. The Duke very glad to heare tell of his Nephewe's lyfe, although then very pensiue for the newes broughte vnto him by the Captayne, intreated one of the Signor de notte, to take with him two of the best surgions, and to call him that had already dressed his Nephew, to goe to vistite the wounded Gentleman, that hee might be certified of the truth of that Chaunce. All which together repaired to the Pryefte's Chaumber, where fyndinge hym not a sleepe, and the Woundefayre inoughe to heale, dyd therenvto what their cunning thoughte meete: and then they began to inquire of hym, that was not yet full recovered to perfecte speache, howe that chaunce happened, telling hym that he might frankelye confesse vnto them the trouthe. The more diligent they were in this demaunde, bicause the Surgeon that dressed him fyrst, alleaged, that the Wounde was not made with Sworde, but receiued by some greate fall or blowe with Mace or

Clubbe, or rather seemed to come of some high fall from a Wyndowe, by reaſon his Head was ſo gryevouſly bruſed. Aloifio hearynge the Surgeons ſodayne demaunde, preſentlye aunſwered, that he fell downe from a Wyndowe, and named alſo the Houſe. And he had no ſooner ſpoken thoſe Woordes, but he was very angry wyth him ſelue and forrye: and wherewithall his diſmayde Spyrites began to reuyue in ſutche wyſe, as ſodainlye he choyſe rather to dye than to ſpeake any thynge to the dyſhonoure of myſtrefſe Gifmonda. Then the Signior di notte, asked hym what he dyd there aboue that Tyme of the Nyght, and wherfore hee dyd clymb vp to the Wyndowe, beynge ſo hyghe: whych hee coulde not keepe ſecrete, conſyderyng the Authorytye of the Magyſtrate that demaunded the queſtyon, albeyt hee thoughte that yf his Tongue hadde runne at large, and commytted a Faulte by rashe ſpeakynge, hys Bodye ſhould therefore ſuffer the ſmart: wherefore before hee woulde in any wyſe gyue occaſion to flaundre hir, whome hee loued better than hys owne Lyfe, determined to hazarde hys Lyfe and Honoure, to the mercye of Iuſtice, and ſayde: “I declared euen nowe, whych I cannot denye, that I fell downe from the wyndowe of Myſtrefſe Gifmonda Mora. The cauſe thereoſ (beeynge now at ſtate, wherein I knowe not whether I ſhall Lyue or Dye) I will truelye dyscloſe: Myſtrefſe Gifmonda beynge a Wydowe and a younge Woman, wythoute anye Man in hir Houſe, bycause by reporte ſhee is very rych of Iewels and Money, I purpoſed to robbe and dyspoyle: wherefore I deuyſed a ladder to clymbe vp to hir Wyndowe, with Mynde full bent to kill all thoſe that ſhould refiſte me: but my miſhappe was ſutche as the Ladder being not well fastened fell downe, and I my ſelue therwithall, and thinking to recover home to my lodgiſg with my corded Ladder, my Spirites beganne to fayle, and tombled downe I wotte not where.” The Signior de notte, whose name was Domenico Mari-perto hearing him ſay ſo, maruelled greatly, and was very forie, that all they in the Chamber, which were a great number, (as at ſutche chaunces commonly be) dyd heare thoſe Woordes: and bicaufe they were ſpoken ſo openly, he was forced to ſaye vnto hym: “Aloifio, it doth not a little grieue me that thou haſt committed ſutche follye, but for ſo mutch as forrowe now will not

serue to remedye the Trespaſſe, I muſte needes ſhew my ſelfe both faithfull to my countrey, and alſo carefull of mine honor, withoute respect of persons: wherefore thou ſhalte remaine here in ſutche ſafe custody as I ſhal appoint, and when thou art better amended, thou muſt according to deſert be referred to the Gaole.” Leauing him there vnder ſure keeping, he went to the counſell of the Dieci, (which magiſtrates in that City be of greateſt authority) and finding the Lords in Counſell, he opened the whole matter vnto them: the preſidentes of the Counſell which had hearde a great numbre of complayns of many Theftes don in the Nyght wythin the Citye, tooke order that one of the Captaynes that were appoyned to the dilygente Watche and keepyng of Aloifio, remayning in the Pryeſte’s Houſe, ſhould cauſe him to be examined, and with tormentes forced to tell the truthe, for that they did verely beleue that hee had committed many Robberies beſides, or at the leaſt was priuy and acceſſarie to the fame, and knew where the Theues were become. Afterwardes the fayd Counſell did fitte vpon the matter of Girolamo Bembo and Anſelmo Barbadico, found at myde Night naked in eche other’s Chambre, and commytted to Pryſon as is before remembred: and bicaufe they had many matters beſides of greater importaunce, to conſult vpon, amoungs which the warres betwene them and Philippo Maria Visconte, Duke of Milane, the aforſayde cauſes were deferred tyll an other tyme, notwythſtandyng in the meane while they were examyned. The Duke himſelfe that tyme being in Counſell, ſpake moſt ſeuereſly againſt his Nephew: neuertheleſſe he did hardly beleue that his Nephew being very rich, and indued with great honesty, would abafe himſelfe to a vice ſo vile and abhominalle as theft is, wherevpon he began to conſider of many thinges, and in the ende talked with hys Nephew ſecrely alone, and by that meanes learned the trouth of the whole matter. In like maner Anſelmo and Girolamo were Examined by Commiſſioners appoyncted by the ſtate, what one of them did in an other’s chamber, at that houre of the night, who confeſſed that many tymes they had ſeene Aloifio Foscari, to paſſe vp and down before their houſes at times inconuenient, and that night by chaunce one of them not knowing of another, eſpied Aloifio, thinking that he lingered about their

houses to abuse one of their Wyues, for which cause they went out, and with their Weapons fodenly killed him : which confession they openly declared accordingly, as whereupon before they were agreed. Afterwardes with further circumstaunce being examined vpon the Article of being one in another's Chaumber, it appeared that their first tale was vtterly vntrue : of all which contradictions the Duke was aduertised, and was driuen into extreeme admiration, for that the truth of those disforders coulde not be to the full vnderstanding and knowne. Whereupon the Dieci, and the affistauntes were agayne assembled in councell accordinge to the maner, at what time after all things throughly were debated and ended, the Duke being a very graue man, of excellent Witte, aduaunced to the Dukedom by the consent of the whole State, as euery of theym were about to rise vp, hee sayde vnto them : " My Lordes, there resteth one thinge yet to be moued, which peraduention hitherto hath not bene thought vpon : there are before vs two complaynts, the effect whereof in my iudgement is not throughly conceyed in the Opinions of diuers. Anselmo Barbadico, and Girolamo Bembo, betwene whom there hath bene euer continuall hatred, left vnto them as a man may say euuen by Fathers Inheritance both of them in eyther of their Chaumbers, were apprehended in a manner naked by our Sergeantts, and without Torments, or for feare to bee racked vpon the onely interrogatories of oure ministers, they haue voluntarily confessed that before their houses they killed Aloisio our Nephew : and albeit that our sayde Nephew yet liueth, and was not striken by them or any other as should appeare, yet they confess themselues guilty of murder. What shall be sayd then to the matter, doth it not seeme doubtfull ? Our Nephew again hath declared, that in going about to rob the house of Mistresse Gismonda Mora, whom he ment to haue slayne, he fel downe to the Ground from the top of a window, wherefore by reason so many robberies haue bene discouered within the Citty, it may be presumed that hee was the theefe and malefactor, who ought to be put to the torments, that the truth may be knowne, and being found guilty, to feele the feuere punishment that he hath deserued. Moreouer when he was found lying vpon the ground, he had neither Ladder nor Weapon, whereupon may bee

thought that the fact was otherwise done, than hitherto is confessed. And because amongs morall vertues, temperance is the chiefest and worthy of greatest commendation, and that iustice not righteoufly executed, is iniustice and wronge, it is meete and conuenient for vs in these straunge accidents, rather to vse temperaunce than the rigor of iustice: and that it may appear that I do not speake these words without good grounde, marke what I shall faye vnto you. These two most mortall enimies doe confess that which is impossible to be true, for that our Nephew (as is before declared) is a liue, and his wounde was not made by Sworde, as hee himselfe hath confessed. Now who can tell or say the contrary, but that shame for being taken in their feuerall Chambers, and the dishonesty of both their Wyues, hath caused them to despise life, and to desire death? we shall finde if the matter be diligently inquired and searched, that it will fall out otherwise than is already supposid by common opinion. For the contrariety of examinations, vnlielihooде of circumstaunces, and the impossibility of the cause, rendreth the matter doubtfull: wherefore it is very needful diligently to examine these attempts, and thereof to vse more aduisid consideracion. On the other syde, our Nephew accuseth himselfe to be a theefe and which is more, that hee ment to kill Mistresse Mora when hee brake into hir houſe. Vnder this Graffe, my Lords, as I suppose, some other Serpent lieth hiden, that is not yet thought of. The Gentleman yee know before this time was neuer defamed of futch outrage, ne suspected of the least offence that may be obiectet: besides that, all yee doe know, (thanks therefore be geuen to almighty God) that he is a man of great richeſſe, and poſſeſſions, and hath no neede to rob: for what neceſſity ſhould drieue him to rob a widowe, that hath of his owne liberally to beſtow vpon the ſuccour of Widowes? Were there none els of ſubſtance in the Citty for him to geue attempt but to a Wyddowe, a comfortleſſe creature, contented with quiet lyfe to lyue amonges hir family within the boundes of hir owne houſe? What if hir richeſſe, Iewels and plate be great, hath not Aloisio of hir owne to redouble the ſame? but truly this Robbery was done after ſome other manner than hee hath confeſſed: to vs then my Lords it appertayneth, if it ſo ſtande with your pleaſ-

tures, to make further inquiry of the same, promisinge vnto you vpon our Fayth, that wee shall employ our whole diligence in the true examination of thys matter, and hope to bring the same to futch good ende, as none shall haue cause to blame vs, the finall sentence whereof shall bee referued to youre iudgement.” Thys graue request and wife talke of the Duke pleased greatly the Lordes of the Counsayle, who referred not onely the examination, but also the finall sentence vnto hym. Whereupon the wyfe Prynce beinge fully enformed of the chaunce happened to his Nephewe, attened onely to make search, if he could vnderstand the occasion why Bembo and Barbadico so foolishly had accused themselfes of that which they neuer did. And so after mutch counsayle, and great tyme contriued in their feueral examinations, his Nephew then was well recouered, and able to goe abroade, being set at liberty. The Duke then hauinge bestowed hys trauayle with the other two prisoners, communicated to the Lords of the aforesayd councel called Dieci the whole trouth of the matter. Then he caused with great discretion, proclamation to be made throughout Venice, that Anselmo and Girolamo shold be beheded betwene the two Pyllers, and Aloisio hanged, whereby he thought to know what fute the women would make, eyther with or against their Husbandes, and what euidence mistresse Gismonda woulde geue against Aloisio. The brute hereof dispersed, diuers talke thereupon was rayfed, and no communication of any thing els in open streats, and priuate hou ses, but of the putting to death of those men. And bicause all three were of honorable hou ses, their kinsmen, and Friendes made fute by all possible meanes for theyr pardon. But their Confessions published, the rumor was made worse, (as it dayly chaunceth in like cases) than the matter was in deede, and the fame was noyfed how Foscari had confessed so many theftes done by him at diuers tymes, as none of his freends or Kinsmen durst speake for him. Mistresse Gismonda which bitterly lamented the mischaunce of hir Louer, after she vnderstoode the confession hee had made, and euidently knew that because hee woulde not bleamish hir honour, he had rather willingly forgo his owne, and therewithall his lyfe, felt hir selfe so oppressed with feruent loue, as shee was ready presently to surrendre hir gho st. Wherefore

shee sent him woorde that he shoulde comfort himselfe, because shee was determined to manifest the very trouth of the matter, and hoped vpon her declaration of true euidence, sentence shoulde bee reuoked, for testimony whereof, shee had his louinge letters yet to shewe, written to her with his owne handes, and would bring forth in the iudgement place, the corded ladder, which shee had kept stiil in her chamber. Aloisio hearinge these louing newes, and of the euidence which his Lady woulde giue for his defence, was the gladdest man of the worlde, and caused infinite thankes to be rendred vnto her, wyth promise that if hee might bee rid and discharged out of prison, he woulde take her for his louing spouse and wyfe. Whereof the gentlewoman conceyued singuler solace, louing her deere freende with more entier affection than her owne soule. Mistresse Lucia, and mistresse Isotta, hearing the disperced voyce of the death of their husbands, and vnderstanding the case of mistresse Gismonda by an other woman, layd their heads together likwise to deuise meanes for sauing their husbandes liues: and entring into their Barge, or Gondola, wente to seeke mistresse Gismonda and when they had debated vpon the trouthe of these euent, concluded with one assent to prouide for the safegarde and deliuerye of theyr husbandes, wherein they shewed themselues both wife and honest. For what state is more honorable and of greater Comforthe than the marryed Lyfe, if in deede they that haue yoaked themselues therein be conformable to thos Delightes, and contentation which the same conduceth? Wealth and Riches maketh the true vnyted couple to reioyce in the Benefits of Fortune, graunted by the fender of the same, either of them prouiding for disposing thereof, against the decripitiue time of olde age, and for the bestowing of the same vpon the Fruicte accrued of theyr Bodies. Pouerty in any wise dothe not offend them, both of them glad to laboure and trauaile like one Body, to sustaine theyr poore and neady Lyfe, eyther of them Comfortably doth Minyster comforthe in the cruell tyme of Aduersity, rendring humble thankes to God for hys sharp Rodde and Punyfment enfiested vpon them for their manyfolde sinnes commytted againste hys maiestye, trauailinge by night and Daye by fweatinge Browes to get browne Breade, and drynke ful thin to cease the Cryes and pytifull crau-

inges of their tender Babes, wrapt in Cradle and instant on their mother to fill their hungry mouthes. Aduerse fortune maketh not one to forsake the other. The louing Wyfe ceaseth not by paynfull fute to trot and go by Night and day in heate and colde to relieue the miserye of hir husband. He likewise spareth not his Payne to get and gayne the liuyng of them both. He abrode and at home according to his called stafe, she at home to faue the Lucre of that Labor, and to doe futch necessary trauayle incident to the married kinde. He carefull for to get, she heedful for to faue, he by trafique and Arte, shee by diligence and houshalde toile. O the happy state of married folke: O surpassing delights of mariage bed: which maketh these ii. poore Gentlewomen, that by honorable pollicy faued the honor of themselues and honesty of theyr husbandes, to make humble fute for their preferuation, who were like to be berieued of their greatest comforts. But come we again to declare the last aet of this Comical discourse. These maried Women, after this chaunce befell, vpon their husbandes imprysonment, began to be abhorred of their Friendes and Parentes, for that they were suspected to be dishoneste, by reason whereof dolefully lamenting their Miffortune, notwithstandinge their owne conscience voyde of faulfe, dyd byd them to be of good cheere and comfort. And when the daye of execution came, they dyd theyr Friends and Parents to vnderstand that their conceiued opinyon was vntrue, and prayed them to forbeare their disdain and malice, till the truth should be throughly manifested, assuring them that in the End their owne innocencie and the guiltlesse cryme of their Husbands should openly be reuealed to the Worlde. In the meane time they made request vnto their Friendes, that one of the Lordes called Auogadore might be admitted to vnderstante their case, the rest to be referred to themselues, wherein they had no neede either of Proctor or Aduocate. This request seemed vrye straunge to their friends, deeming their case to be shameful and abhominable: neuertheles diligently they accomlyshed their request and vnderstanding that the Counsell of the Dieci had commytted the matter wholy to the Duke, they made a supplicatyon vnto hym in the name of the three Gentlewomen, wherein they craued nothing else but theyr matter might be hearde. The Duke perceiuyng hys aduise like to take

effect, affigned them a Day, commaundinge them at that tyme before hym and the Lords of the Councell and all the College of the estate to appeare. The Day being come, all the Lordes assembed, desirous to see to what iſſue this matter would grow. On the morning the three Gentlewomen honestly accompaned with other Dames, went to the Palace, and goyng along the ſtrete of San Marco the people began to vtter many raylyng words againſt them: ſome cried out (as we ſee by vnfable order the vulgare people in like caſes vſe to do) and doinge a certain curtify by way of diſdain and mockery: "Behold the honest women, that without ſending their husbands out of Venice, haue placed them in the Caſtell of Cornetto, and yet the arrante Whoores bee not afhamed to ſhewe them felues abrode, as though they hadde done a thynge that were Honeſte and prayſe worthye." Other ſhot forth theiṛ Boltes, and wyth theiṛ Prouerbes proceedingyng from their malicious Mouthes thwited the pore Women at their pleasure. Other alſo ſeeyng Myſtrefſe Gismonda in their Company, thought that ſhe went to declame againſt maiftre Aloifio Fofcari, and none of them all hapned on the trouth. Arryued at the pallace, ascending the marble ſtaires or ſteps of the fame, they were brought into the great hal, wher the Duke appointed the matter to be heard. Thither repaired the friends and thoſe of neareſt kin to the three Gentlewomen, and before the matter did begin, the Duke cauſed alſo the thre paſtoners to be brought thither. Thither alſo came many other Gentlemen, with great deſire to ſee the end of thoſe euent. Silence being made the Duke turning his face to the women, ſayd vnto them: "Ye Gentlewomen haue made requeſte by ſupplycation to graunt you publike audyence accordyng to Iuſtice, for that you do alleage that Law and order doth ſo require; and that euery wel ordred common wealth condemmeth no ſubieſte withoute due anſwere by order of lawe. Beholde therefore, that we desirous to do Iuſtice, bee ready in Place to heare what ye can ſay." The two husbands were very angrie and wrathfull againſt their wiues, and the more their ſtomackes did fret with choler and diſdayne, by how mutch they ſaw their impudente and shameleſſe wiues wyth ſutche audacity to appeare before the maieſty of a counſel ſo honourable and dreadfull, as though they had ben the

most honeste and chaste Women of the World. The two honeste wiues perceyued the anger and displeasure of their husbands, and for all that were not afrayde ne yet dismayde, but smyling to them-selues and somewhat mouing their heads in decente wyse seemed vnto them as though they had mocked them. Anselmo more angry and impacient then Girolamo, brake out into futch furie, as had it not ben for the maiesty of the place, and the Companye of People to haue stayed him, woulde haue kylled them: and feyng he was not able to hurt them, he began to vtter the vyleft Woords, that he possibly could devise agaynst them. Mistresse Isotta hearing hir husband so spytefully to spit forth his poyson in the presence of that honourable assemblye, conceined courage, and crauinge licence of the Duke to speake, with merrye countenance and good vttrance began thus to say her mind: "Most excellent Prince, and yee right honourable Lordes, I doe perceyue how my deare husbande vncomely and very dishonestly doth vse himselfe agaynst me in this noble company, thincking also that mayster Girolamo Bembo is affected with like rage and minde agaynst this Gentlewoman mystresse Lucia hys wyfe, although more temperate in words, he do not expresse the same. Agaynst whom if no reply be made, it may seeme that he doth well and hath spoken a truth, and that we by silence do condemne our selues to be those most wicked women whom hee alleageth vs to be. Wherefore by your gratiouse pardon and licence (most honourable) in the behalfe of mystresse Lucia and my selfe, for our defence I purpose to declare the effect of my mynde, although my purpose be cleane altered from that I had thought to say, being now iustly prouoked by the vnkinde behauour of him whom I loue better than my selfe, and whose disloyalty, had hee beene silent and not so rashly runne to the ouerthrow of me and my good name, coulde I haue concealed, and onely touched that which had concerned the Purgation and sauegard of them both, which was the onely intent and meaning of vs, by making our humble supplication to your Maiesties. Neuerthelesse, so farre as my feeble force shall stretch, I will assay to do both the one and the other, although it be not appropriate to our kinde in publike place to declayme, nor yet to open futch bold attempts, but that neceſſity of matter and opor-

tunity of time, and place dothe bolden vs to enter into these termes, whereof we craue a thousand pardons for our vnkindely dealings, and render double thanks to your honours, for admitting vs to speake. Be it knowne therefore vnto you, that our husbands agaynst duety of loue, lawes of mariage, and against all reason, do make their heauy complaynts, which by and by I will make playne and euident. I am right well assured, that their extreme rage and bitter hearts sorrow do proceede of 2 occasions: The one, of the murder whereof they haue falsely accused theymselfes: the other of ialousie, which grieuously doth gnawe their hearts, thinking vs to be vile, and abhominable Women, because they were surprised in ech other's Chaumber. Concerning the murder, if they haue soyled their handes therein, it appertayneth vnto you my Lords to render their desert. But how can the same be layd to our charge, for somutch as they (if it were done by them) committed the same without our knowledge, our help and counsef? And truly I see no cause why any of vs ought to be burdened with the outrage, and mutch lesse cause haue they to laye the same to our charge: for meete it is that he that doth any vnlawful a^tt, or is acceffary to the same, should suffer the due penality and feuere chafisement accordingly as the sacred lawes do prescribe, to be an example for other to abstayne from wicked fa^tcts. But hereof what neede I to dispute, wherein the blind may see to bee none offence, because (thankes bee to GOD) Mayster Aloisio liueth, which declareth the fonde Confession of our vngentil husbands to bee contrary to trouth? And if so be our husbands in deede had done futch an abhominable enterprise, reaſon and duety had moued vs to forrowe and lament them, because they be borne of noble bloud, and be gentlemen of this noble Citty, which like a pure virgin inuiolably doth conserue hir lawes and customes. Great cause I say, had we to lament them, if lyke homicides, and murderers they had spotted their bloud with futch fowle bleamish thereby deferuing death, to leaue vs yong Women Widowes in wofull plig^t. Nowe it behoueth me to speake of the Iealousie they haue conceyued of vs, for that they were in ech other's Chamber, which truly is the doubtfull knot and scrupule that forceth all their disdaine and grieve. This I knowe well is the Nayle that

pierceth their heart: other cause of offence they haue not: who like men not well aduised, without examination of vs and our demeanour, bee fallen into despayre, and like men desperate, haue wrongfully accused themselues: but because I may not consume words in vayne, to stay you by my long discourse from matters of greater importaunce, I humbly befeech you (right excellent prince) to commaunde them to tell what thing it is, which so bitterly doth torment them." Then the Duke caused one of the noble men affstaunt there, to demaund of them the question: Who aunswere that the chiefest occasion was, bicause they knew their Wyues to be Harlots, whom they supposed to be very honest: and forsoomutch as they knew them to be futch, they conceyued sorrow and griefe, which with futch extremity did gripe them at the heart, as not able to sustayne that great Infamy, ashamed to be sene of men, were induced through desire of death to confess that they neuer did. Mistresse Isotta hearing them say so, began to speak agayne, turning hir selfe vnto them: "Were you offended then at a thynge which yee thought inconuenient and not meete to be done? Wee then haue greatest cause to complayne. Why then sweete Husband went you to the Chaumber of mistresse Lucia at that time of the night? What had you to do there? What thing thought you to finde there more than was in your own house? And you Mayster Girolamo, what constrainyd you to forfake your Wyue's Bed to come to my Husband's, where no man euer had, or at this present hath to do but himselfe? Were not the Sheetes of the onie so white, so fine, neate, and sweete as the other? I am (most noble Prince) fory to declare my Husbande's folly, and ashamed that hee should forfake my Bed to go to an other, that did accompt myselfe so well worthy to entertaine hym in myne owne, as the best Wyfe in Venice, and now through his abuse, I abstayne to shewe my selfe amonges the Beautifull, and noble Dames of this Citty. The lyke misliking of hirselfe is in mistresse Lucia, who (as you fee) may be numbred amonges the fayrest. Eyther of you ought to haue bene contented with your Wyues, and not (as wickedly you haue done) to forfake them, to seeke for better breade than is made of Wheate, or for purer Golde than whereof the Angell is made: O worthy deede of yours, that haue the Face to leaue your

owne Wyues, that be comely, fayre, and honest, to seeke after straunge Carrion. O beastly order of Men that cannot conteyne their lust within the boundes of their owne Housse, but must goe hunt after other Women as Beastes do after the nexte of their kinde that they chaunce vpon. What vile affection possessed your hearts to lust after others Wyfe? You make complaynte of vs, but wee with you haue right good cause to be offended, you ought to bee grieued with your owne disorder, and not with others offence, and thys your affliction patiently to beare, bycause you went about to beguile one an other's Loue, lyke them that be weary, and Gluttred with their owne fare, seekinge after other daynties more delicate if they were to be founde. But prayfed be GOD and our prouident discretion, if any hurt or shame hath chaunced, the same doth light on you. Moreouer I know no cause why men should haue more liberty to doe euill than we Women haue: albeit through the weaknes and cowardise of our Sexe, yee men will doe what ye list. But ye be now no Lords, nor we Seruaunts, and husbands we do you call, bicause the holy Lawes of Matrimony (which was the first Sacrament giuen by GOD to Men after the creation of the Worlde) doe require equall fayth, and so well is the husband bound to the Wyfe as sh he vnto him. Go to then and make your complaynt: the next Ass or Beast ye meete take hir to be your Wyfe. Why do yee not know that the balance of iustice is equall, and wayeth downe no more of one fide than of other? But let vs nowe leave of to reason of this matter, and come to that for which we be come hither. Two things (most ryghteous Prynce) haue moued vs to come before your maiesty, and all this honourable assembly, which had they not bene, we would haue bene ashamed to shewe our Faces, and lesse presumed to speake or once to open our Lippes in this Noble audience, which is a place only meete for them that be most Expert, and eloquent Orators, and not for vs, to whom the Needle, and Distaffe be more requisite. The first cause that forced vs to come forth of our owne house, was to let you understand that our Husbands be no murderers, as is supposed, neyther of this Gentleman present maister Aloisio, ne yet of any man els: and thereof we haue sufficient and worthy testimony. But herein we neede

not to trauaile mutch, or to vfe many wordes: for neyther maister Alofio is slayne, ne any other murdred that is known or manifest hitherto. One thyng resteth, which is that Madonna Lucia and I do humbly beseech youre excellente Maiestye, that youre grace and the authoritye of the right honourable Lords here present, will vouchsafe to reconcile vs to our husbands, that we may obtayne pardon and fauor at their handes, bicause we haue so manifestly made their acts to appeare, and for that we be the offence, and they the Offendours, and yet by their owne occasions, we haue committed the Error (if it may be so termed.) And now to come to the conclusion, I doe remember, fithens I was a Chylde, that I haue heard the Gentlewoman my mother saye (whose soule God pardon) many times vnto me, and other my sisters, and to mistresse Lucia, that was brought vp with vs, being by hir instruced in diuers good and vertuous Leffons, that all the honor a woman can doe vnto hir husband, whereby she beautifieth him and his whole race and family, consisteth in hir honest, chast, and vertuous lyfe, without which, she oughte rather to die than liue. And that a Gentleman's Wyfe when she hath giuen hir body to the vfe of an other man, is the common marke for every man to point at in the streate where she goeth, hir husband therby incurring reproche and shame, whych no doubt is the greatest iuiury and scorne that an honest Gentleman can receiue, and the mooste shamefull reproche that can deface his house. Which Leffon we so well remembryng, desirous not to suffer the careleffe and vnbrideled appetites of our husbands to be vrained, and runne at large to some dishonest Ende, by a faithfull and commendable pollicy, did prouide for the mischyefe that myghte ensue. I neede not heere rehearse the enimytye and debate that manye yeares did raigne betweene our husbands Fathers, bicause it is knowne to the whole City. Wee too therefore here presente, the Wiues of those noble Gentlemen, brought vp together from oure Cradle, perceiuing the malyce betwene our hushandes, made a vertue of Necessity, deemyng it better for vs to lose our sweete and auncient conuerstation, than to mynister cause of disquietneffe. But the neareneffe of our houses would not that naturall hatred shoulde defraude and take away olde ingrafted amity. Wherfore many times

when our Husbands were gone forth, we met together, and talked in our Gardens, betwene whych there is but a slender hedge beset with Primme and Roses, which commoditye in their absence we did discretly vse. And as sometimes for pleasure we walked with oure husbandes there, ye (shee turninge vnto them) did cast your eyes vpon ech other's wyfe, and were strayghte way in loue, or else perchance you fained your selues to bee, whych espied by vs, many times betwene our selues did deuise vpon the same, and red your amorous letters, and sonnet sent vnto vs. For which disloyalty and treason toward vs your Wyues, we sought no dis honour to youre persons, wee were content to suffer you to bee abused with your fond loue, we blabbed it not abroade to our Goffips, as many leude and fantasticall women bee wont to doe, thereby to rayse slander to our husbands, and to sturre vp ill reporte vpon them, whose infirmities it becommeth vs to conceale and hide. We deuised meanes by some other way to let you understand your fault, and did cast vpon you many times right louinge looks. Which although it were agaynst our owne desyre, yet the cause, and full conclusion of the same, was to practise, if it were possible, to make you frendes: But confideringe that this loue, and allurementes of eyther parts, could not tend to other end, as wee conieuctured, but to increase displeasure, and to put the swards into your handes, we therefore consulted, and vniformely in one minde agreed for the appeasinge, and satissfaction of all partes, at sutch nightes as ye fayned to go into diuers places about earnest assayres as yee alleaged, Mistresse Lucia with the help of Cassandra my mayde, through the Gardeine came into my chamber, and I by meanes of Iane hir maide by like way repayred vnto hirs. And yee poore meu guided by our maydes were brought vnto your chambers where ye lay with your owne Wyues, and so by tilth of others land in straunge foyle (as yee beleeuued) yee lost no labour. And bicause your embracements then, were like to those atchieued by amorous Gentlemen, vsinge vs with more earnest desyre than you were wont to do, both wee were begotten with childe: which ought to be very gladsome, and gratafull vnto you, if yee were so fayne to haue children as yee shewed your selues to bee. If then none other offence doth grieue you, if remorse of Conscience for other cause doeth not

offend you, if none other sorrowe doeth displease you : gieue ouer your grieve. Remit your displeasure. Be glad, and ioyfull. Thanke vs for our pollicy and pleasaunt disport that wee made you. If hitherto yee haue ben enimies, henceforth be frends, put of that auncient mallice so long continued, mitigate your hatefull moode, and liue yee from henceforth like friendly Gentlemen, yelde vp your rancor into the lap of your Countrey, that shee may put him in exile for euer, who like a pitifull, and louing mother woulde gladly see all hir children of one accorde and minde. Which if yee doe, (ye shall do singulare pleasure to your friendes), ye shall doe great discomfort to your foes, yee shall do singular good to the commonwealth, yee shall doe greatest benefit to your selues, ye shall make vs humble Wyues, yee shall encrease your posterity, yee shall be praysed of all men, and finally shall depart the best contented that euer the World brought forth. And now because yee shall not thinke that wee haue picked out thys Tale at our fingers ends, thereby to seeke your fauergard and our owne Fame, and prayse, beholde the letters which you sent vs, beholde you owne handes subscribed to the same, beholde your seales assygned thereunto, which shall render true testimony of that which vnfaynedly we haue affirmed." Then both deliuered their letters, which viewed and seene, were well knowne to be their owne husbands handes, and the same so well approued hir tale, as their husbands were the gladdest men of the world and the Duke and Seignory maruaylously satisfied and contented. In so mutch as the whole assembly with one voyce, cried out for their husbands deliueraunce. And so with the consent of the Duke and the whole seignory they were clearely discharged. The Parents, Cofins, and Friends of the husbands and wyues were wonderfully amazed to heere this long hystory, and greatly praysed the maner of their deliuerie, accoumpting the women to be very wife, and mistresse Isotta to be an eloquent gentlewoman, for that shee had so well defended the cause of their husbands and of themselues. Anselmo and Girolamo openly in the presence of all the people embraced, and kissted their Wyues with great reioysing. And then the husbands shaked one an other by the hands, betwene whom began a Brotherly accorde, and from that time forth liued in perfect amity, and

Friendship, exchaunging the wanton loue that eyther of them bare to other's wyfe into Brotherly Friendship, to the great delight of the whole Cityt. When the multitude assembed, to heare this matter throughly was satissified, the Duke with cheerefull Countenaunce lookinge toward Gismonda, sayde thus vnto hir: " And you fayre Gentlewoman, what haue you to say: Bee bolde to vtter your minde, and wee wil gladly heare you." Mistresse Gismonda bashfull to speake, began wonderfully to blush, into whose cheekees entred an orient rud, intermixed with an alabaster white, which made her countenaunce more amiable than it was wont to be. After she had stode still a while with hir eyes declined towards the ground, in comly wise lifting them vp againe with shamefast audacity she began thus to speake: " If I most Noble Prince, in open audience should attempt to discourse of Loue, whereof I neuer had experience, or knew what thing it was, I should be doubtfull what to say thereof, and peraduenture durst not open my mouth at al. But hearing my father (of worthy memory) many times to tel that your maiesty in the time of your youth disdained not to open your heart to receiue the amorous flames of loue, and being assuerted that there is none but that doth loue little or mutch, I do not doubt but for the words which I shal speake, to obtaine both pity and pardon. To come then to the matter: God I thanke him of his goodnesse, hath not permitted me to bee one of those women, that like hipocrites do mumble their Pater-noster to faincts: appearing outwardly to be devout and holy and in Fruict doe bring forth Deuils, and al kinds of vices, specially ingratitude, which is a vice that doth suck and dry vp the fountain of godly Piety. Life is deare to mee (as naturally it is to all) next which I esteeme myne honor, which is to be preferred before life, bicause without honor life is of no regard. And where man and woman do liue in shame notorious to the world, the same may be termed a liuing death rather than a life. But the loue that I beare to mine onely beloued Aloisio here present, I do esteeme aboue al the Iewels and treasures of the world, whose personage I do regard more than mine owne Lyfe. The reasoun that moueth me thereto is very great, for before that I loued him or euer meint to fixe my mind that way, he dearely regarded me, continually deuising which way he might win and obtain my

loue, sparing no trauel by Night and Day to seeke the same. For which tender affection should I shew myself vnkind and froward? God forbid. And to be playn with your honors, he is more deare and acceptable vnto me, than the balles of mine own eyes, being the chiefest things that appertain to the furniture of the body of man, without which no earthly thing can be gladsome and ioyful to the sence, and feelinge. Last of all his amorous, and affectionate demonstration of his loue towards me, by declaringe himselfe to be carefull of mine honor, rather more willinge to bestow his owne, than to suffer the same to be touched with the least suspition of dishonesty, I can not choose, but so saythfully imbrace, as I am ready to guage my life for his sake, rather than his finger shoulde ake for offence. And where hath there bene euer found futch liberality in any louer? What is he that hath bene euer so prodigall, to employ his life (the most speciall pledge in this worlde,) rather than hee would suffer his beloued to incurre dishonoure? Many hystoryes haue I red, and Chronicles of our time, and yet I haue found few or none comparable vnto thys Gentleman, the like of whom be so rare and feldome as white Crowes, or Swannes of colour blacke. O singuler liberality, never hearde of before. O fact that can neuer be sufficently praysed. O true loue most vnfayned. Maister Aloisio rather than he would haue my fame any one iote to be impayred, or to suffer any shadow of suspition to bleamish the same, frankly hath confessed himselfe to be a theefe, and murdrer, regardinge mee and mine honor more than himselfe, and life. And albeit that he might a thousand wayes haue fauored himselfe without the imprisonment and aduersity which he hath sustayned: neuerthelesse after he had sayd, beinge then past remembrance through the fall, that he fell downe from my window, and perceyued how much that confession would preiudice and hurt my good name, and hurt the known honesty of the same, of his good wyll did chose to dye rather than to speake any words that might breed yll opinion of mee, or the least thinge of the worlde that might ingender infamy and slander. And therefore not able to revoke the words hee had spoken of the fall, nor by any meanes coulde coloure the same, hee thought to faue the good name of another by his owne hurt. If he then thus redily and liberally hath protruded his life into manifest daunger

for my benefit and saueguard, preferring mine honour aboue the care of himselfe, shall not I abandon all that I haue, yea and therewithall hazard mine honor for his saluation? But what? Shall I disdayne bountifuly to imploy my selfe and all the endeuor of my Frendes for his deliury? No, no (my Lords) if I had a thousand liues, and so many honors at my commaundement, I woulde giue them al for his releyse and comfort, yea if it were possible for me to recouer a fresh x.c.m. lyues, I woulde so frankly bestow them all, as euer I desired to liue, that I might enioy mine owne Aloisio. But I am sorry, and euer shal be sorry, for that it is not lawful for me to do more for him, than that which my power and possibility is able. For if he should die, truely my life could not endure: if he were depriued of life, what pleasure should I haue to liue in this world after him: whereby (moste honorable and righteous iudge,) I beleue before the honest, not to loose any one iote of myne honor, bicause I being (as you may see) a younge Woman and a Widow desirous to marry againe, it is lawful for me to loue and to bee beloued, for none other intent (whereof God is the onely iudge) but to attaine a husbande according to my degré. But if I should lose my reputation and honor, why should not I aduenture the same for hym, that hath not spared hys own for me? Now to come to the effect of the matter, I do say wyth al dutifull reuerence, that it is an accusation altogether false and vntrue, that euer mayster Aloisio came to my house as a Theefe against my wil. For what neede he to be a thefe, or what nede had he of my goodes, that is a Lorde and owner of twenty times so much as I haue? Alas good Gentleman, I dare depose and guage my lyfe, that he never thoughte much lesse dyd any robbery or thing vnlawful, wherewith iustly he may be charged, but he repayred to my house with my consent, as a louing and affectionate Louer, the circumstance whereof, if it be duly marked, must aduouch the same to be of trouth infallible. For if I had not giuen him licence to come, how was it possible for him to conuey his ladder so high, that was made but of Ropes, and to fasten the same to the iaume of the window, if none within did helpe hym? Againe, howe could the Window of the Chaumber be open at that time of the night, which is still kept shut, if it had not bene by my consent? But

I with the helpe of my mayde threwe downe to him a little Rope, whereunto he tyed his Ladder and drewe the same vp, and making it so fast, as it could not vndo, gaue a figne for him to Mounte. But as both our ill Fortune would haue it, before I could catch any hold of him, to mine inestimable grieve and hart's sorrow he fell downe to the ground. Wherefore (my Lords) I beseech your honours to reuoke the confession wherein he hath made hymselfe to be a theefe. And you maister Aloisio declare the trouth as it was, sith I am not ashamed in this honourable assamble to tel the same. Beholde the letters (my Lordes) which so many tymes he wrote vnto me, wherein hee made suite to come to my speache, and continually in the same doth call me Wyfe. Beholde the Ladder, which till nowe, did still remayne in my chaumber. Beholde my maide, whych in all mine affayres, is as it were myne owne hande and helper." Aloisio being hereupon demaunded by the Lordes of the articles, which she in hir tale had recited, confessted them al to be true: who also at the same instant was discharged. The Duke greatly commended them both, hir for hir stoute audacity, in defence of an innocent Gentleman, and him for his honour, and modesty, by seeking to preferue the Fame and good reporte of a vertuouse Gentlewoman. Whych done, the Counsell disassembled and brake up. And the friendes of both the parties accompanied them home to the house of mistresse Gismonda, where to the great reioyce, and pleasure of all men, they were solemnly maried in sumptuous and honourable wife, and Aloisio with hys Wyfe lyued in great prosperity long time after. Mistresse Lucia, and mistresse Isotta, at the expyred tyme were deliuered of two goodly sonnes, in whom the Fathers tooke great Ioy, and delight. Who wyth their Wyues after that tyme liued very quietly, and well, one louing an other like naturall Brethren, many times sporting among themselues discretely at the decepts of their Wyues. The wisedome of the Duke also was wonderfully extolled and commended of all men, the fame whereof was increased and bruted throughout the Region of Italy. And not without cause. For by hys prudence and aduise, the Dominion of the State, and Common wealth was amplified and dilated. And yet in th'ende being old and impotent, they vnkindly depos'd him from his Dukedom.

THE TWENTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

The Lorde of Virle, by the commaundement of a fayre younge Wydow called Zilia, for hys promise made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remayne dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what meanes he was reuenged, and obtayned hys suite.

THEY that haue spent their youth in humayne follies, and haue followed the Vanities of loue, not addicted to the contemplation of high secrets, nor haue made entry here on Earth, to inlarge and amplyfy the boundes of their honor and Estimation. Those Worldlings (I say) and embracers of tranitory pleasures, shall witnessse with me, and confirme, this olde and auncient Theme and propofition to be true which is: that the Beauty, and comely grace of a Woman, is the very true and naturall adamant (for the attractiue power, and agreeable quality there inclosed,) to draw vnto it the hearts, and affections of men: which hath made man beleue, that the same onely essence, was fent downe from aboue to serue both for ioy and torment together. For the amplyfyng of which propofition, I will not bring forth, the immoderate loue of Paris by forsaking his owne Natvie country of Troy, to vifite fayre Helena in Greece, nor yet tell how Hercules gaue ouer his mace to handle the Distaffe, vpon the commaundement of Omphale, nor yet how Sampson and Salomon were fotted in the flaueries of Dalida and other concubines. But my discourse here folowing shall ring out a loud Peale, of a meane Gentlewoman, of Piedmount, that shewed no fauor or Curtesy at all to her suppliant, a Gentleman not inferior to Paris for his actiuitie and prowesse: which for her seruice and atchyeues of her loue, refused not to bee dumbe the space of many yeares, and to giue ouer the best porcion of his fences wherewith the Almighty, made Man differente from brute and sauage Beastes. If this thing declare not sufficiently the force and power of that attractiue and drawing power in woman, no other example is worthy to be preferred. Those aforesayd and many other haue voluntarily yoaked themfelues in the chains of loue's obedience, rendreth the masse of

their mirye corps to the flauery thereof, but that any haue franckely tyed vp their Tongue, the chiefest Instrument of the bodies furniture: in honorable assembly or where dexterity of seruice shoulde make him glorious, the like of that subiection was neuer seene or founde. And yet our fathers dayes did see this miracle wrought by a Woman, vpon a Gentleman very wise, and well trained vp in all good exercyse. This example, and what this Malapert Dame did gaine, by the penance of this louing knight, shal in this discourse be manifestly pronounced. The City of Thurin (as is well knowne to them that haue trauelled Piedmont) is the ornament and bulwark of al the Countrey, so well for the natural site of the place, as for the artificial and industrious worke of man's hande, which hath instaured and furnished with great magnificence, that which nature had indifferently enryched, for the rudenesse and litle knowledg of the time past. Now besides this stately and strong city, there standeth a litle towne named Montcall, a place no lesse strong, and of good defence, than wel planted in a faire and rich soyle. In this Towne there dwelt a Gentlewoman a widow called Zilia, beautiful amonsgs the most excellent fayre Gentlewomen of the countrey, which country (besides other happy and heauenly influences) seemeth to be specially fauored, for hauing the most fairest and curteous Gentlewomen, aboue any other within the compasse of Europa. Notwithstanding this faire Silia, degenerating from the nature of hir climate was so haggard and cruel, as it might haue ben thought, she had ben rather nourished and brought vp amid the most desert mountaines of Sauoy, than in the pleasant and rich Champaigne Countreye, watred and moystened with Eridanus, the father of Riuers, at this Day called the Pau, the largenesse whereof doth make men to maruel, and the fertility allureth ech man to be desirous to inhabit vpon the same. This fayre rebellious Widow, albeit, that she was not aboue xxiv. or xxv. yeres of age, yet protested neuer more to be subiect to man, by mariage, or otherwise, thinking her selfe wel able to liue in fingle life: a Minde truly very holy and commendable, if the pricks of the flesh do obey the first motions and adhortations of the spirit, but where youth, pleasure, and multitude of suters do addresse their endeuour

against that chasfity (which is lightly enterpryfed) the Apostels counself oughte to be followed, who willeth yong widows to marry in Christ, to auoid the temptations of the flesh, and to flye offensiuſe flaunder and dishonour before men. This mistrefſe Zilia (hir husband being dead) only bent hir ſelfe to enrich hir house, and to amplify the poſſeſſion of a little infant which ſhe had by hir late departed Husband. After whofe death ſhe became ſo couetous, as hauing remoued, and almoſt cut of quite the wonted port ſhe uſed in hir husband's dayes, imploied hir maidis in houſhould affaires, thinking nothing to be wel don that paſſed not through hir owne Handes. A thinge truely more prayſe worthy, than to ſee a forte of effeminate, fine and daynty fyngred Dames, that thiſke their honor diſminifhed yf they holde but their Nose ouer theyr Houſhould Matters, where theyr Hande and Dylygence were more requiſite, for ſo mucht as the miſtrefſe of a Houſe is not placed the Cheyfe to heare onely the reaſons of them that Labor, but thereunto to put hir hands, for hir preſente eye ſeemeth to giue a certyn perfeccyon to the worke that the Seruaunteſ doe by hir commaundement. Which cauſed the Hyſtoryans in tymes paſt, to deſcribe vnto the Poſterity a Gentlewoman caſted Lucretia, not babbling amoung young girleſ, or running to feaſteſ and Maigameſ, or Maſkiſ in the night, withoute any regard of the honor and dignytye of hir race and houſe, but in hir Chaumber ſowing, Spinning and Carding, amids the Troup of hir Mayden Seruaunteſ: wherein our miſtrefſe Zilia paſſed the moſte part of hir time, ſpending no minute of the day, without ſome honest exerciſe, for that ſhe the rather did for that ſhe liked not to be ſeene at Feaſts, or Banketſ, or to be gadding vp and downe the ſtreeteſ, wandring to Gardeyns or places of pleaſure, althouſh to ſutche places youth ſometimes may haue their honest repaire to refresh their weariſe bodies with vertuous recreation, and thereby reioyce the heauineſſe of their mynde. But this Gentlewoman was ſo ſeuere in following the rigorous, and conſtrayned maners of our auncientſ, as iſpoſſible it was, to ſee hir abroade: except it were when ſhe went to the Churche to heare deuine ſeruice. This Gentlewoman ſeemed to haue ſtudied the diuinity of the Agyptians which paynt Venus holding a key before hir mouth, and ſetting

hir Fote vpon a Tortus, signifying vnto us thereby the duety of a chaste Woman, whose tongue ought to bee locked, that shée speak not but in tyme and place, and her feete not straying or wandering, but to keepe hir selfe within the limits of hir owne house, except it be to serue God, and sometimes to render bounden duety to them which brought them into light. Moreouer Zilia was so religious (I will not say superstitious) and rigorous to obserue customes, as she made it very squeimish and straung to kisse a Gentleman that met hir, a ciuility which of long time hath bene obserued, and yet remayneth in the greatest parte of the Worlde, that Gentlewomen do welcome straungers and Guests into their hou ses with an honest and chaste kisse. Notwithstandinge the institution and proffession of this Wyddow had wiped away this poyncte of hir youth: whether it were for that she esteemed hirselfe so fayre as all men were vnworthy to touch the vller partes of so rare and pretious a vessell, or that hir great, and inimitable chastity made hir so straunge, to refuse that which hir duety and honour woulde haue permitted hir to graunt. There chaunced about this time that a Gentleman of the Countrey, called Sir Philiberto of Virle, esteemed to be one of the most valiaunt gentlemen in those parts, repayred vpon an holy day to Montcall, (whose house was not very farre of the Towne) and being at diuine seruice, in place of occupying his Sence and Mynde in heauenly things, and attending the holy words of a Preacher, which that day declared the worde of God vnto the people, hee gaue himselfe to contemplate the excellent beauty of Zilia, who had put of for a while hir mourninge vayle, that she might the better beholde the good father that preached, and receyue a little ayre, because the day was extreme hot. The Gentleman at the first blushe, when hee sawe that sweete temptation before his eyes, thought himselfe rapt aboue the thirde heauen, and not able to withdraw his looke, he fed himselfe with the Venome which by little, and little, so feased vpon the soundest parts of hys mynde, as afterwards being rooted in heart, he was in daunger still to remayne there for a Guage, wythout any hope of ease or conforte, as more amply this followinge discourse, shall giue you to vnderstande. Thus all the morning hee behelde the Gentlewoman, who made no more

accoumpt of theym, that wyth great admiration did behold hir, than they themselues did of their life, by committing the same to the handes of a Woman so cruell. This Gentleman being come home to his lodging enquired what fayre Wyddow that was, of what calling, and behauour, but hee heard tell of more truely than he would of good will haue known or desired to haue ben in hir, whom he did presenty chose to be the only mistresse of his most secret thoughts. Now vnderstandynge well the stubburne Nature, and vnciuile Manner of that Wyddowe, hee coulde not tell what parte to take, nor to what Sainct to vow his Deuotion, to make suite vnto hir hee thought it tyme lost, to bee hir Seruaunt, it was not in his power, hauing already inguaged his Lyberty into the handes of that beauty, whych once holding captiue the hearte of men, will not infraunchise them so soone as Thought and Wyll desire. Wherefore baytinge hymself with hope, and tickled wyth loue, he determined whatsoeuer chaunced, to loue hir, and to assay if by long seruice he could lenifie that harde hearte, and make tender that vnpliaunt wyll, to haue pitty vpon the payne which shée saw him to endure, and to recompence hys laboursome Trauayles, which hee thought were vertuously employed for gayning of hir good grace. And vpon this settled deliberation, he retired agayne to Virle (so was his house named) where disposinge hys things in order, he returned agayne to Montcall to make his long resiaunce there, to put in readines his furniture, and to welde his artillary with futch industry, as in the ende he might make a reasnable breach to force and take the place: for furpring whereof, hee hazarded great daungers, the rather that himselfe might first be taken. And where his assaults and pollicies could not preuayle, hee minded to content his Fancy wyth the pleasure and pastyme that hee was to receyue in the contemplation of a thing so fayre, and of an image so excellent. The memory of whom rather increased his paine than yelded comfort, did rather minister corrosiue poyson, than glie remedy of easse, a cause of more cruell and fodayne death, than of prolonged lyfe. Philiberto then being become a citizen of Montcal, vfed to frequent the Church more than hee was wont to doe, or his deuotion serued hym, and that bycause he was not able elsewhere to enjoy

the presence of hys Saynt, but in places and Temples of Deuotion : which no doubt was a very holy and worthy Disposition, but yet not meete or requisite to obserue futch holy places for thoſe intentes, which ought not to bee prophaned in things ſo fonde and fooliſhe, and A&tes ſo contrary to the Inſtitution, and mynde of thoſe, whych in tymes paſt were the firſte Founders and Erec- tōures of Temples. Seignior Philiberto then mooued wyth that Religious Superſtitio[n], made no Conſcience at al to ſpeake vnto hir wythin the Churche. And true it is, when ſhe went out of the ſame, he (mooued wyth a certayne familiar curteſie, naturall to eche Gentleman of good bringing vp) many tymes conduced hir home to hir house, not able for all that (what ſo euer hee ſayd) to win the thing that was able to ingender any little ſolace, which greeued him very much : for the cruell woman fained as though ſhe vnderſtoode nothing of that he ſayde, and turnyng the Wayne agaynſt the Oxen, by contrary talke ſhee began to tell hym a tale of a Tubbe, of matters of hir Houſeholde, whereunto hee gaue ſo good heede, as ſhee did to the hearing of his complaýnts. Thus theſe two, of diuers Affeſtions, and mooued wyth contrary thoughtes, ſpake one to another, without apt aūſweref to eyther's talke. Whereby the Gentleman conceyued an aſſured argument of hys Ruine, who voyde of all hope, and meanes, practiſed with certayne Dames of the Citty, that had familiar acceſſe vnto hyr house, and vſed frequent conuerſation wyth hys rebellious Lady Zilia. To one of them, then hee determined to communicate hys ſecrets, and to doe hir to vnderſtand in deede the only cauſe that made him to ſoiorne at Montcall, and the grieſe which he ſuffered, for that he was not able to diſcouer his torment vnto hir, that had giuen him the wounde. Thys Gentleman therefore, repayred to one of his neyghbours, a Woman of good corage, which at other tymes had experimented what meaſtes they feede on that ſit at Venus Table, and what bitterneſſe is intermingled amid thoſe drinckes that Cupido quaffeth vnto hys Gueſtes. Vnto whom (hauing before coniured hir to keepe cloſe that whych hee woule declare) he diſcouered the ſecrets of hys mynde, exprefſiſing hys loue wythout naming hys Lady before he heard the aūſweref of hys Neyghbour, who vnderſtanding almoſt to what purpose the

affections of the Pacient were directed, sayd vnto hym: "Sir, needful it is not to vse longe orations, the loue that I beare you for the honest qualities whych hytherto I haue knowne to be in you, shall make me to keepe silent, that whereof as yet I do not know the matter, and the affuraunce you haue, not to bee abusid by mee, constraineth me to warrant you, that I wyll not spare to do you all the pleasure and honest seruice I can." "Ah mistresse," (aunswered fir Philiberto) "so long as I lyue, I will not fayle to acknowledge the Liberality of your endeuour by offeringe your selfe paciently to heare, and secretly, to keepe the Words I speake accordingly as they deserue: and that (whych is more than I require) you doe assure me that I shall finde futch one of you as wil not spare to gieue your ayde. Alas, I resemble the good and wyse Captayne, who to take a forte doeth not only ayde himselfe with the forwardnesse, and valiaunce of his Souldiers, but to spare them, and to auoyde slaughter for makinge of way, planteth his cannon, and battereth the Walle of the fort, which hee would affaile, to the intent that both the Souldier, and the ordinaunce may perfourme and suffise the perfection of the plat, which hee hath framed and deuised within his pollitike heade. I haue already encouraged my souldiers, and haue lost the better part truely in the skirmish which hath deliuered vnto mee my sweete cruell Ennemy. Now I am driuen to make ready the fire, which resteth in the kindled match of your conceiptes, to batter the fort hitherto inexpugnable, for any assault that I can make." "I vnderstand not" (sayd she smilyng) "these labyrynths of your complaynts, except you speake more playn. I neuer haunted the Warres, ne knewe what thyng it is to handle weapons, improper and not seemely for myne estate and kynde." "The Warre" (quod he) whereof I speake, is so naturall and common, as I doubt not, but you haue sometymes assayed, with what sleightes and camisados men vse to surpryse their enimies, howe they plant their ambushes, and what meanes both the affaylant and defendant ought to vse." "So far as I see" (sayd shee) "there resteth nothing for vs, but the assurance of the field, sith wee bee ready to enter in combat: and doe thinke that the fort shall not bee harde to winne, by reason of the Walles, dikes, rampers, bulwarks,

platformes, counterfors, curtines, vamewres and engins which you haue prepared, besides a numbre of false brayes and flanks, placed in good order, and the whole defended from the thundringe Cannons and Bombardes, which do amaze the wandring enemy in the field. But I pray you leauing these warlike Tumults, to speak more boldly without these extraugantes and digrefftions, for I take pitye to see you thus troubled: ready to excede the boundes of your modefty and wonted wysedome." "Do not maruell at all mistrefse" (quod he) "sith accordynge to new occurrentes and alterations, the purpose, talke, and counsel ordinarily do change I am become the seruaunt of one which maketh me altogether lyke vnto those that bee madde, and bound in Chaines, not able to speake or say any thing, but what the spyrites that be in them, do force them to vtter. For neither will I thynke, or speake any thing, but that which the Enchaunter Loue doth commaunde and suffer to exprefse, who so rygorously doth vexe my hearte, as in place wher bouldenesse is most requysite, hee depriueth me of force, and leaueth mee without any Countenance. And being alone, God knoweth how frankly I doe wander in the place, where myne enemy may commaunde, and with what hardinesse I do inuade hir prouince. Alas, is it not pity then to see these diuerfities in one selfe matter, and vpon one very thing? Truely I would endure wyllingly all these trauailes, if I wyft in the end, my seruice woulde be accepted, and hoped that my Martirdome shoulde fynde releefe: but liuing in this vncertainty, I must needes noryfsh the hunger and solace of the vnhappy, which are wishes and vaine hopes, trusting that some God wyll gayne me a faythful friend that will assay to rid me from the hell, into the which I am throwne, or else to shorten thys Miserable lyfe, whych is a hundred tymes more paynfull than Death." In fayinge so, he began to sighe so straungely as a man would haue thought that two Smithes fledges working at the forge, had gyuen two blowes at his stomake, so vehement was the inclosed winde within his heart, that made him to fetche forth those terrible sighes, the Eyes not forgetting to yeld forth a Riuier of Teares, which gushyng forthe at the centre of hys Hearte, mounted into his Braynes, at lengthe to make iffue through the Spoute, proper to the Chanell

of sutch a Fountayne. Which the Gentlewoman seyng, moued with compassion, coulde not contain also from Weepyng, and therewythal sayde vnto him: "Although mine estate and reputation, which to this day I have kept vnspotted, defend the vse of my good wyl in al things that may defame mine honor, yet sir, seing the extremity which you suffer to be vnfained, I wil somewhat stretch my conscience, and assay to succor you with so good heart, as frankly you trust me with the secrets of your thought. It resteth then now for me to know what she is, to whome your deuocions be inclined whose heart and mind I wil so relief with the taste of your good wil, as I dare giue warrant, her appetit shal accept your profred seruice, and truly that woman may count her self happy that shal intertain the offer of a gentleman that is so honest and curteous, who meaneth with al fidelity to aduance and honor, not onely the superficial ornament of hir beauty, but the inward vertues of hir constant mind. And truly the earth seldome yeldeth those frutes in the harts of men in these our barren days, they being ouer growen with the shrubbes of disfloyalty the same choke vp the plantes of true Fidelity, the sedes whereof are sownen and replanted in the soyle of womens hartes, who not able to depart and vse the force and effects thereof will put vpon them conditions that bee cruell, to punish the Foolysh indiscretion of tryfling Louers, who disguised with the vizard of fained friendshyp, and paynted with coloured Amity, languishing in fighes and forrowes, goe aboute to assay to deceiue the flexible Nature of them that prodigally employ theyr honor into the hands of sutch cruel, inconstante and foolysh suters." "Ah Mistresse" answered the Gentleman: "howe may I bee able to recompence that onely benefite which you promyse me now? But be sure that you see heere a Souldier and Gentleman presente which shall no lesse bee prodigall of hys Lyfe to doe you seruyce, than you bee lyberall of your reputation, to ease his Paines. Now fith it pleaseth you to shew sutch fauour to offer me your helpe and support in that which payneth me, I require no more at your hands, but to beare a letter which I shall wryte to mystresse Zilia, with whome I am so farre in loue, as if I do receiue no solace of my grieve, I know not howe I shall auoyde the cuttyng of the Threedee, whych the

spynning fysters haue twisted to prolonge my lyfe, that henceforth can receiue no succor if by your meanes I do not atchieue the thing that holdeth me in bondage." The Gentlewoman was very sorrowful, when she vnderstoode that Seignior Philiberto had bent his Loue vpon futch one, as would not consente to that requeste, and mutch lesse would render rest vnto hys myferyes, and therefore enforced hir selfe to moue that Foolyfhe Fantasye out of his head. But he beyng already resolued in thys myshappe, and the fame perceyued by her in the ende she fayde: "To the intente sir that you may not thynke that I doe meane to excuse the Satyffactyon of my promyse, make youre Letters, and of my Fayth I wil delyuer them. And albeyt I knowe verye well what bee the Honoures and Glorye of that Pylgryme, yet I wyll render to you agayne the true aunswere of hir speache whereby you maye consider the gayne you are lyke to make, by pursuing a Woman (although faire) of so small desert." The Gentleman fayled not to gyue her heartye Thankes, prayinge hir to tarry vntyll hee had written his letters: whereunto she most willingly obeyed. He then in his chaumber, began to fantasie a hundred hundred matters to write vnto his Mistresse, and after he had fixed theym in minde tooke Incke and Paper writing as followeth.

The Letters of Seignior Philiberto of Virle, to Mistresse Zelia of Montcall.

" The passion extreeme which I endure, (Madame) through the feruent loue I beare you, is futch, as besides that I am assured of the little affe^tion that resteth in you towards me agayne, in respect of that incredible feruitude which my desire is ready to employ, I haue no power to commaunde my force, ne yet to rid my selfe from my vowed deuotion and will to your incomparable beauty, although euen from the beginning I felt the pricks of the mortall shot which now torments my mynde. Alas, I do not know vnder what influence I am borne, nor what Fate doth guide my yeares, sith I doe perceyue that heauen, and loue, and hir whom alone I honor, doe confirme themselues with one assent to seeke myne ouerthrow. Alas, I thinke that all the powers aboue conspired together, to make me be the faythfull man, and perpetuall

seruaunt of you my mistresse deare, to whom alone, I yelde my heart afflicted as it is, and the ioy of hidden thoughts nourised in my minde, by the contemplation and remembraunce of your excellent and perfect graces, whereof, if I be not fauored, I waight for death, from whych enen now I fly: not for feare of that whych she can doe, or of the vgly shape which I conceyue to be in hir, but rather to confirme my life, this Body for instrument to exercise the myndes conceypts for doinge your Commaundements, which Body I greatly feare shall proue the vnworthy cruelty, both of your gentle nouriture, and of those graces which Dame Nature most abundantly hath powred in you. Be sure Madame that you shall shortlye see the Ende of him, which attendeth yet to beare so mutch as in him doeth lye, the vehement loue into an other world, which maketh me to pray you to haue pity on him, who (attending the rest and final sentence of his Death or Lyfe) doth humbly kisse your white and delicate handes, beseeching God to giue to you like ioy as his is, who desireth to be,

Wholy yours or not to be at all

PHILIBERTO OF VIRLE.

The Letter written, closed and sealed, he deliuered to his neighbour, who promyfed hym agayne to bryng him answere at Night. Thus this Messenger went hir way, leauing this pore languishyng Gentlemen hoping against hope, and fayning by and by some ioy and pleasure, wherein he bained himself with great contented minde. Then sodaynly he called againe vnto remembraunce, the cruelty and inciuality of Zilia, which shewed before his eyes so many kindes of Death, as tymes he thought vpon the same, thinking that he saw the choler wherewith his little curteous mistresse furiously did intertaine the messenger, who findinge Zilia coming forth of a garden adioining to her house, and hauing saluted her, and receiued like curteous salutation would haue framed hir talke, by honest excuse in the vnsemely charge and message: to hir vnto whom she was sent, and for some ease to the pore gentleman which approached nearer death than life. But Zilia break of hir talke saying: "I maruell mutch Gentle neighbor to see you heere at this time of the day, knowing your honest custome is to let passe no minute of the tyme, except it be emploied in some vertu-

ous exercise." "Mistresse" answered the messanger, "I thank you for the good opinion you haue of me, and doe pray you to continue the same. For I do assure you that nothinge vayne or of lyttle effect hath made me slacke my busynesse at this time, which me think I do not forflow, when I inforce my selfe to take pitye and mercy vpon the afflicted and the substaunce thereof I woulde disclose, if I feared not to offend you, and break the loue which of long tyme betweene vs two hath ben frequented." "I know not" (said Zilia) "whereunto your words do tend, althoughe my Hearte doth throbbe, and minde doth moue to make mee thinke your purposed talke to bee of none other effecte, than to say a thing which may redound to the priuice of myne honour. Wherefore I pray you do not disclose what shall be contrary, (be it neuer so little) to the duety of Dames of our Degree." "Mistresse" sayd the Neighbour, "I suppose that the lyttle Lykeli-hooe touchyng in you the thinge for the helpe whereof I come, hath made you feele some passion, contrary to the greefe of him that indures so much for your sake. Vnto whome without feare of your dyspleasure, I gaue my Faithe in Pledge to beare this Letter." In saying so, she drewe the same out of hir Bosome, and presentyng it to cruell Silia, shee sayde: "I beseeche you to thynke that I am not ignoraunt of the evyll wherewyth the Lorde of Virle is affected, who wrote these letters. I promyfed him the duety of a Messanger towards you: and so constrainyd by promyse I could doe no lesse, than to delyuer you that which hee doeth fende, with Seruycce futch as shall endure for euer, or yf it shall please you to accept him for futch a one as hee defireth to be. For my parte I onelye praye you to reade the Contentes, and accordynglye to gyue mee Aunswere: for my Fayth is no further bounde, but trustelye to report to hym the thinge whereupon you shall bee resolued." Zilia which was not wonte to receyue very ofte futch Ambassades, at the firste was in mind to breake the Letters, and to retourne the Messanger wythout aunswere to hir shame. But in the Ende takyng Heart, and chaunging hir affectyon, she red the Letters not without shewing some very great alteration outwardely, which declared the meanyng of hir thought that diuersly did ftryue wythin hir mynde: for sodaynly shee

chaunged her Coloure twyce or thryce, nowe waxing pale lyke the increasyng Moone Eclypſed by the Sunne, when ſhee feeleth a certayne darkenyng of hir borowed Lyghte, then the Vermylyon and coloured Taynte came into hir Face agayne, wyth no leſſe hewe than the blomed Rose newelye budded forthe, whych Encreaſed halleſe ſo mutch agayne, the excellencye of that wherewyth Nature had indued hir. And then ſhee paſued a whyle. Notwythſtandynge, after that ſhee had red, and red agayne hir Louer's letter, not able to diſſemblē hir fooliſhe anger which vexed hir heart, ſhee ſayde vnto the miſtrefſe meſſanger: "I would not haue thought that you, being a woman of good fame would (by abuſinge your duety,) haue bene the ambaffadour of a thing ſo vncomeſy for your Estate, and the houſe where of you come, and towards me which neuer was ſutche one (ne yet pretend to be.) And truſt me it is the loue I beare you, which ſhall for this tyme make me diſſemblē what I thincke, reſeruinge in ſilence, that whych (had it come from an other) I would haue pu bliſhed to the great diſhonour of hir that maketh ſo little accoumpt of my chaſtity. Let it ſuffiſe therefore in tyme to come for you to thi nke and beleue, that I am chaſte and honest: and to aduertife the Lord of Virle to pro ceede no further in his ſute: for rather will I dy, than agree to the leaſt poynct of that which hee deſires of mee. And that he may knowe the fame, be well affiſſed that hee ſhall take his leauē of that priuate talke which ſometimes I vſed with him to my great diſhonor, as far as I can fee. Get you home therefore, and if you loue your credit ſo mutch, as you fee me curiouſ of my chaſtity, I beſeech you vſe no further talke of hym, whom I hate ſo mutch, as his folly is exceſſiue, for I do little eſteeme the amorous Toyes and fayned paſſions, whereunto ſutche louinge fooleſ doe ſuffer themſelues to be caried headlong." The meſſanger aſhamed to heare hir ſelue thus pinched to the quicke, aunſwered hir very quietly without mouing of hir pacience: "I pray to God (miſtrefſe) that he may recouer the diſſeare al moſt incurable in eyther of you twayne, the fame being ſo vehement, as altered into a phrenesie, maketh you in this wyſe, incapable of reaſon." Finiſhiſing theſe wordes ſhe tooke hir leauē of Zilia, and arriued to the Louer's houſe, ſhe founde him

lying vpon his bed, rather dead than a liue: who seeing his neyghbor returned backe agayne, with Face so fadde, not taryng for the aunswere which she was about to make, he began to say: "Ah infortunate Gentleman, thou payest wel the vsury of thy pleasures past when thou diddest lyue at lyberty, free from those trauayles which now do put thee to death, without suffering thee to dy. Oh happy, and more than happy had I ben, if inconstant Fortune had not deuised this treason, wherein I am surprised and caught, and yet no raunsome can redeeme from prison, but the most miserabile death that euer poore louer suffred. Ah Mistresse, I knowe well that Zilia esteemeth not my Letters, ne yet regardeth my loue, I confesse that I haue done you wrong by thus abusing your honest amity, for the solace of my payne. Ah fickle loue, what foole is hee which doth commit hymselfe to the rage and fury of the Waues of thy foming and tempestuous Seas? Alas I am entred in, with great, and gladsome cheere, through the glistering shew before myne eyes of the faynt shining Sunne beames, whereunto as foone as I made sayle, the same denied me light of purpose to thrust me forth into a thousand winds, tempests, and raging stormes of Rayne. By meanes whereof I see no meane at all to hope for end of my mishaps: and mutche lesse the shipwracke that sodainely may rid me from this daunger more intollerable, than if I were ouerwhelmed wythin the bottomlesse depth of the mayne Ocean. Ah deceyuer and wily Souldiour, why hast thou made me enterprize the voyage farre of from thy solitudes and Wildernesse, to geue me ouer in the middest of my necessity? Is this thy maner towards them which franckly followe thy tract, and pleasauntly subdue themselues to thy trayterous follies? At least wyse if I sawe some hope of health I would indure without complaunt thereof: yea, and it were a more daungerous tempeste. But O good God, what is he of whom I speake? Of whom do I attend for solace and releefe? Of him truely which is borne for the ouerthrow of men. Of whom hope I for health? Of the most noyfome poysone that euer was mingled with the subtilest druggs that euer were. Whom shall I take to be my Patron? He which is in ambush trayterously to catch me, that he may martir me worste than he hath done before. Ah cruell Dame, that measurest

so euill, the good will of him that neuer purposed to trespassse the least of thy commaundements. Ah, that thy beauty shoulde finde a Subiect so stubborne in thee, to torment them that loue and honor thee. O maigre and vnkinde recompence, to expell good seruaunts that be affectionate to a seruice so iust and honest. Ah Basiliske, coloured ouer with pleasure and swetnesse, how hath thy sight dispersed his poyson throughout mine heart? At least wise if I had some druge to repell thy force, I shoulde liue at ease, and that without this sute and trouble. But I feele and proue that this sentence is more than true:

No phyficke hearbes the grieve of loue can cure,
Ne yet no druge that Payne can well assure.

Alas, the feare cloath will not serue, to tent the wound the time shal be but lost, to launch the fore, and to salue the same it breeds myne ouerthrow. To be short, any dressing can not auayle, except the hand of hir alone which gaue the wounde. I woulde to God shee sawe the bottome of my heart, and viewed the Closet of my mynde, that shee might iudge of my firme fayth and know the wrong she doth me by hir rigor and froward will. But O vnhappy man, I feele that she is so resolued in obstinate mynde, as hir rest seemeth only to depend vpon my Payne, hir eafe vpon my grieve, and hir ioy vpon my sadnesse." And saying so, began straungly to weepe, and fighing betwene, lamented, in so mutch as, the mistresse messaunger not able to abide the grieve and paynefull trauayle wherein shee saw the poore gentleman wrapped, went home to hir house: notwithstanding shee told afterward the whole succeſſe of his loue to a Gentleman, the friend of Philiberto. Now this Gentleman was a companion in armes to the Lorde of Virle, and a very familyar Freend of his, that went about by all meanes to put away those foolishe, and Franticke conceypts out of his fansie, but hee profited as mutch by his endeouour, as the passionate gayned by his heauines: who determining to dye, yelded so mutch to care and grief, as he fell into a greeuous sicknes, which both hindred him from sleepe, and also his Appetite to eate and drinke, gowing himselfe to muse vpon his follies, and fansied dreames, without hearing or admitting any man to speake

vnto hym. And if perchaunce hee hearkened to the persuasions of his frends, he ceassed not his complaynt, bewayling the cruelty of one, whom he named not. The Phiftians round about were sought for, and they coulde geue no iudgement of his malady (neyther for all the Signes they saw, or any inspection of his Vrine, or touching of his pulse) but sayd that it was melancholie humor distilling from the Brayne, that caused the alteration of his sene: howbeit their Arte and knowledge were void of skil to evacuate the grosse Bloud that was congeled of his diseafe. And therefore dispayryng of his health, with hands full of Money, they gaue him ouer. Which his friend and Companion perceiuing, maruellous sorry for his affliction he ceased not to practise all that he could by Letters, gifts, promises and complaynts to procure Zilia to vistite her pacient. For hee was assured that her onely presence was able to recouer him. But the cruell woman excused hir self that she was a Widow and that it shoulde bee vnseemely for one of hir degree (of intente) to vistite a Gentleman, whose Parentage and Alliance she knew not. The foliciter of the Lord of Virle his health, seeing how lyttle hys prayers auailed to his implacable gryefe could not tell to what Sainct he might vow himself for Counsell, in the ende resolued to sollicite hir again that hadde done the first Mesfage, that she myght eftsones deuise some meanes to bryng them to speake togither. And fynding hir for hys purpose, thus he sayed vnto hir: "Mystresse I maruell mutch that you make so little accompt of the pore lorde of Virle who lyeth in his Bedde attending for Death. Alas, if euer pitty had place in Woman's heart, I befeech you to gyue your ayde to help him, the meane of whose recovery, is not ignoraunt vnto you." "God is my witnesse" (quod she) "what traualle my heart is willing to vndertake to helpe that Gentleman, but in things impossible, it is not in man to determine, or rest assured iudgement. I wil go vnto him and comfort hym so well as I can, that peraduenture my Promyses may ease some part of his payne: and afterward we wil at leysure better confider, what is best for vs to do." Herevpon they wente together to see the Pacient, that beganne to looke more chearefull than he dyd before: who seeing the Gentlewoman, said vnto hir: "Ah mistres, I would to God I had never

proued your fidelity, then had I not felt the passing cruell Heart of hir, that esteemeth more hir honour to practise rigour and tyranny than with gentlenesse to maintaine the Lyfe of a pore feeble knight." "Sir," (said she,) "be of good cheare, doe not thus torment your selfe: for I trust to gyue you remedy betwene thys and to morrowe, and wyll doe myne endeuor to cause you to speake with hir, vpon whome wrongfully perchaunce you doe complayne, and who dare not come vnto you, least ill speakers conceiue occasion of suspicion, who wil make the report more slanderous, then remedie for the cause of your disease." "Ah" (sayd the pacient) "howe ioyefull and pleasaunt is your talke? I see wel that you desire my health, and for that purpose would haue me drinke thosse liquors, which superficallay appeare to bee sweete, which afterwardes may make my lyfe a hundred tymes more faint and feeble than now it is." "Be you there," sayd she? "And I sweare vnto you by my faith not to faile to keepe my promyse, to cause you speake alone with mistresse Zilia." "Alas, mistresse" sayd the louer, "I aske no more at your handes, that I may heare with myne own eares the last sentence of hope or defiance." "Well put your trust in me," sayd she, "and take no thought but for your health. For I am assured ere it be longe, to cause hir to come vnto you, and then you shall see whether, my diligence shall aunswere the effect of myne attempt." "Me thinke already" (quod he) "that sicknesse is not able to stay me from going to hir that is the cause, fith her onely remembraunce hath no lesse force in mee, than the clearnesse of the Sun beames to euaporate the thicknesse of the morning mistes." With that the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue of hym, and went home attandyng oportunity to speake to Zilia, whome two or three Dayes after she mette at Church, and they two beyng alone togither in a Chapell, she sayd vnto hir with fayned Teares, forced from her Eyes, and fending forth a Cloude of fighes, these woordes: "Madame, I nothing doubt at al, but the last Letters which I brought you, made you conceiue some il opinion of me, which I do guesse by the frownyng countenance that euer fithens you haue borne me. But when you shall knowe the hurte which it hath done, I thinke you wyll not be so harde, and voyde of pitye,

but with pacyence hearken that whych I shall faye, and therewythal bee moued to pitye the state of a pore Gentleman, who by your meanes is in the pangs of death.” Zilia, which til then neuer regarded the Payne and sickneſſe of the pacient, began to ſorrow, with ſutche paſſion, as not to graunt him further fauor than he had already receiued, but to finde ſome means to eafe him of hys gryeſe, and then to gyue hym ouer for euer. And therefore ſhe ſayd vnto hir neyghbor: “My good frend, I thought that all theſe ſutes had beeне forgotten, vntill the other day a certen Gentleman praied me to go ſee the Lord of Virle, who told me as you do now, that he was in great daunger. And now vnderſtanding by you that he waxeth worſe, and worſe, I will be ruled, being well affuſed of your honesty and vertue, and that you will not aduife me to any thing that ſhall be hurtfull to myne honour. And when you haue done what you can, you ſhal winne of me ſo mutch as nothinge, and geeue no eafe to him at all that wrongfullly playneth of my cruelty. For I purpose not to do any priuate fact with him, but that which ſhall be meete for an honest Gentlewoman, and ſutche as a faythfull tutor of hir chaſtity, may graunt to an honest and vertuous Gentleman.” “His deſire is none other” (ſayd the gentlewoman) “for he craueth but your preſence, to let you wit by word, that he is ready to do the thing you shall commaund him.” “Alas” ſayde Zilia, “it is imposſible for me to go to hym without ſuſpition, which the common people will lightly conceiue of ſutche light and familiar Behauour. And rather would I dy than aduenture mine honor hiterto conſerued wyth great feuerity and diligēce. And yet ſith you ſay, that he is in extremes of death, for your fake, I wil not ſtict to heare him ſpeake.” “I thanke you” (ſayd the Meſſanger) “for the good wil you beare me and for the help you promife vnto the poore paſſionate Gentleman, whom theſe newes wil bring on foote againe, and who al the dayes of his life wil do you honor for that good turne.” “Sith it is ſo (ſayd Zilia) to morrow at noone let him come vnto my houſe, wherein a low chamber, he ſhall haue leyſure to ſay to mee his mind. But I purpose by God’s help, to ſuffer him no further than that which I haue already graunted.” “As it ſhall please you” (ſayd hir neighbour) “for

I craue no more of you but that only fauour, which as a Meffanger of good Newes, I go to shew hym, recommending my felfe in the meane tyme to your commaunde." And then she went vnto the pacient, whom she found walkinge vp and downe the Chaumber, indifferent lusty of his person, and of colour meetely freshe for the tyme hee left his Bed." Now when sir Philiberto saw the Meffanger, hee sayde vnto hir: "And how now mystreffe, what Newes? Is Zilia so stubborne as shee was wont to be?" "You may see hir" (sayd she) "if to morrowe at Noone you haue the heart to aduenture to goe vnto hir house." "Is it poffible" (sayd hee imbracing hir) "that you haue procured my delyueraunce from the misery, wherewith I haue fo long tyme beene affected? Ah trufy and afflured frende, all the dayes of my lyfe I wil remember that pleasure, and benefite, and by acknowledging of the same, shall be ready to render like, when you please to commaunde, or els let me be counted the moft vncurteous Gentleman that euer made pofteffion of loue: I will go by God's help to fee mistreffe Zilia, with intent to endure all vexation, wherewith Dame Fortune shall afflict me, protesting to vex my felfe no more, although I fee my wifhed hap otherwife to ende than my defert requireth. But yet agaynst Fortune to contend, is to warre agaynst my felfe, whereof the Vi^tory can be but daungerous." Thus he paſſed all the day, which feemed to laſt a thouſand years to hym, that thought to receyue ſome good intertayntment of hys Lady, in whose Bonds hee was caſt before he thought that Woman's malice could fo farre excede, or diſplay hir venomous Sting. And truly that man is voyde of ſenſe, whych ſuffreth hym felfe fo fondly to bee charmed, fith the pearill of others before time abuſed, ought to ſerue hym for exaumple. Women be vnto mankinde a greate conuſion, and vñwares for want of hys due foreſight, it doth ſuffer it felfe to bee bounde and taken captiue by the very thing which hath no being to worke effect, but by free will. Which Inchauntment of woman's beauty, being to men a pleasaunt diſpleaſure, I thinke to bee decked with that drawinge vertue, and allurement, for chaſtisng of their finnes who once fed and bayted with their fading fauour and poysoned ſweetneſſe, forgot their owne perfecc̄ion, and nouſled in

their foolishe Fansies, they seeke Felicity, and souteraygne delight, in the matter wherein doth lie the summe of their vnhaps. Semblably the vertuous and shamefaste dames, haue not the eyes of their minde so blindfolde, but that they see whereunto those francke seruices, those disloyal Faythes and Vyces coloured and stufed with exterior vertue, doe tende: Who doubt not also but sutch louers do imitate the Scorpion, whose Venome lieth in his Tayle, the ende of which is loue beinge the ruine of good Renoume, and the Decay of former vertues. For which cause the heauens, the Frende of their sexe, haue giuen them a prouidence, which those Gentle, vnfaououred louers terme to be rigor, thereby to proue the deserts of Suters, aswell for their great contention and prayse, as for the rest of them that do them seruice. Howbeit this iust and modest prouidence, that cruel Gentlewoman practised not in hir louer, the Lord of Virle, who was so humble a seruaunt of his vnkinde mistreffe, as his obedience redounded to his great inishap, and folly, as manifestly may appeare by that whych followeth. Sir Philiberto then thinking to haue gayned mutch by hauing made promise, liberally to speake to his Lady, went vnto hir at the appoyncted hour, so well contented truely of that grace, as all the vnkindnesse past was quite forgot. Now being come to the Lodging of Mistreffe Zilia, he found hir in the deuised place with one of hir maydes attending vpon hir. When she saw him, after a little cold entartaynment, she began to say vnto him with fayned ioy, that neuer mooued hir heart, these woordes: "Now sir, I see that your late ficknesse was not so straunge as I was geeuen to vnderstand, for the good state wherein I see you presently to be, which from henceforth shall make mee beleue, that the passions of Men endure so long as the cause of their affections continue within their fansies, mutch like vnto looking Glasses, which albeit they make the equality or exceffe of things represented to appeare, yet when the thing seene doth passe, and vanishe away, the formes also do voyde out of remembraunce, resembling the wynde that lightly whorleth to and fro through the plane of some deepe valley." "Ah madame" aunswere he, "how easie a matter it is for the griefeleffe person to counterfayt both ioy and dissimulation in one very thing, which not onely

may forget the conceipt that mooueth his affections, but the obiect must continually remayne in him, as paynted, and grauen in his minde. Which truely as you say is a looking Glasse, not futch one for all that, as the counterfayted apparaunce of represented formes hath like vigor in it, that the first and true idees and shapes can so foone vanish without leauing most perfect impression of futch formes within the minde of him, that liueth vpon their onely remembraunce. In this mirror then (which by reason of the hidden force I may well say to bee ardent and burning) haue I looked so well as I can, thereby to form the sustentation of my good hap. But the imagined Shape not able to support futch perfection, hath made the rest of the body to fayle (weakned through the mindes passions) in futch wife as if the hope to recouer this better parte halfe lost, had not cured both, the whole decay of the one had followed, by thinking to giue some accomplishment in the other. And if you see me Madame, attayne to some good state, impute the same I beseech you, to the good will and fauor which I receiue by seeing you in a priuate place, wherein I conceyue greater ioy than euer I did, to say vnto you the thing which you would not beleue, by woords at other times proceeding from my mouth, ne yet by aduertisement signified in my written letters. Notwithstanding I think that my Martirdome is known to bee futch as euer man may perceyue that the Summe of my desire is onely to serue and obey you, for so mucht as I can receyue no greater conforte, than to be commaunded to make repayre to you, to let you know that I am whole (although giuen ouer by Phisitians) when you vouchsafe to employ me in your seruice, and thinke my selfe rayfed vp agayne from one hundred thousand deathes at once, when it shall please you to haue pitty vpon the grieve and passion, that I endure. Alas, what caufeth my mishap, that the heauenly beauty of yours should make prooef of a cruelty so great? Haue you decreed Madame thus to torment mee poore Gentleman that am ready to sacrifice myselfe in your seruice, when you shall impart some fauour of your good grace? Do you thinke that my passions be dissembled? Alacke, alacke, the teares which I haue shed, the losse of lust to eate and drinke, the weary passed nights, the longe contriued sleepeleffe tyme the

reflesfe turmoyle of my consumed corps may wel assure that my loyall heart is of better merite than you esteeme." Then seeing hir to fixe hir eyes vpon the ground, and thinkinge that hee had already wonne hir, he reinforced his humble Speache, and Sighing at fits betwene, not sparinge the Teares, whych trickled downe alongs hys Face, he prosecuted his Tale as followeth: "Ah fayre amongs the fayrest, woulde you blot that surpasing Beauty with a cruelty so furious, as to cause the death of him which loueth you better than himselfe? Ah my withered eyes, which hitherto haue bene serued with two liuely springs to expresse the hidden griefs within the heart, if your vnhap be futch that the only Mistresse of your contemplations, and cause of your driery teares, doe force the Humor to encrease, which hitherto in futch wife hath emptied my Brayne, as there is no more in mee to moisten your drouth, I am content to endure al extremity, vntil my heart shal feele the laft Pangue, that depriueth yee of nourishment, and me of mine affected Ioy." The Gentlewoman, whether shee was weary of that Oration, or rather doubted that in the end hir chastity would receue some assault through the dismeasured passion which shee saw to continue in him, answered with rigorous words: "You haue talked, and written inough, you haue indifferently well solicited hir, whych is throughly resolued in former minde, to keepe hir honor in that worthy reputation of degree, wherein she mayntayneth the same amongs the best. I haue hitherto suffered you to abuse my patience, and haue shewed that familiarity which they deserue not that go about leudly to assayle the chastity of those Women that patiently gieue them eare, for the opinion they haue conceiued of the shadowing vertues of like foolishe Suters. I now doe fee that all your woordes doe tend to beguile mee, and to deprive mee of that you cannot giue mee: Which shall bee a warning for me henceforth, more wisely to looke about my busynesse, and more warely to shunne the Charmes of futch as you bee, to the ende that I by bending mine open eares, be not surprised, and ouercome wyth your enchaunted Speaches. I pray you then for conclusion, that I heare no more hereof, neyther from you, nor yet from the Ambassadour that commeth from you. For I neyther will, ne yet pretend to depart to you any

other fauour than that which I haue enlarged for your comfort: but rather doe protest, that so longe as you abide in this Countrey, I will neyther goe forth in streate, nor suffer any Gentleman to haue accessse into this place except he be my neare Kinsman. Thus for your importunat fute, I will chastise my light consent, for harkeninge vnto you in those requestes, which duty and Woman-hooде ought not to suffre. And if you do proceede in these your follies, I will seeke redresse according to your desert, which till now I haue deferred, thinking that time would haue put out the ardent heate of your rash, and wanton youth.” The infortunat Lord of Virle, hearing this sharpe sentence, remayned long time without speach, so astonned as if he had bene falne from the Clouds. In the ende for al his despayre he replyed to Zilia with Countenaunce indifferent merry: “Sith it is so madame, that you take from mee all hope to be your perpetuall Seruaunt, and that without other comfort or contentation I must nedes depart your presence, neuer (perchaunce) hereafter to speake vnto you againe, be not yet so squeimish of your beauty, and so cruell towards your languishing louer, as to deny him a kisse for pledge of his last farewell. I demaund nothing here in secreit, but that honestly you may openly performe. It is al that I doe craue at your handes in recompence of the trauayles, paynes, and afflictions suffred for your sake.” The malitious dame full of rancor, and spitesfull rage sayd vnto him: “I shall see by and by fir, if the loue which you vaunt to beare mee, be so vehement as you feeme to make it.” “Ah Madame” (sayd the vnaduised Louer) “commaunde only, and you shal see with what deuotion I will performe your will, were it that it should cost me the price of my proper life.” “You shall haue” (quod she) “the kisse which you require of me if you will make promise, and sweare by the fayth of a Gentleman, to do the thinge that I shall commaund, without fraude, couin or other delay.” “Madame” (sayd the ouer wilful louer) “I take God to witnesse that of the thing which you shall commaunde I will not leaue one iote vndone, but it shall bee executed to the vttermost of your request and will.” She hearing him sweare with so good affection, sayd vnto him smiling: “Now then vpon your oth which I beleue, and being assured of your Vertue and Noble

nature, I will also performe and keepe my promise." And saying so, shee Embraced and kisst him very louingly. The poore Gentleman not knowing how dearely hee had bought that disfauorable curtefie, and bitter sweetenesse, helde him a while betwene his armes, doubling kisse vpon kisse, with futch Pleasure, as his soule thought to fly vp to the heauens being inspired with that impoysoned Baulme which hee fucked in the sweete and sugred breath of his cruel mistresse: who vndoing him selfe out of his armes, fayde vnto him: "Sith that I haue made the first discloſure both of the promise and of the effect, it behoueth that you performe the rest, for the full accomplayſhment of the ſame." "Come on hardily" (ſayeth hee) "and God knoweth how ſpedily you ſhal be obeyed." "I wil then" (quod ſhee) "and commaund you vpon your promyſed faith that from this preſent time, vntyl the ſpace of three yeres be expyred, you ſpeake to no lyuing perſon for any thing that ſhall happen vnto you, nor yet exprefſe by tonge, by ſound of word or ſpeache what thing you wante or els deſyre, whych requeſte if you do breake, I will neuer truſte liuing man for youre ſake, but wil publyſhe your fame to bee villainous, and your perſon periured, and a promyſe breaker." I leauē for you to think whether this vnhappy louer were amazēd or not, to heare a Commaundment ſo vniuſt, and therewithall the diſſiculty for the performance. Notwithſtanding he was ſo ſtoute of hearte, and ſo religious an obſeruer of his Othe as euen at that very iſtant he began to do the part which ſhe had commaunded, playing at Mumchaunce, and vſing other ſigues, for doing of his duetye, accordynge to hir demaund. Thus after his ryghte humble reuerence made vnto hir, he went home, where fainting that hee had loſt his ſpeach by meanes of a Catarre or reume which diſtilled from his brayne, he determined to forſake his Countrey vntill his tyme of penance was rune out. Wherfore ſetting ſtaye in hys affayres, and prouydynge for his trayne, he made him ready to depart. Notwithſtanding, he wrot a Letter vnto Zilia, before he toke hys iorvney into Fraunce, that in olde tyme hadde ben the Solace and refuge of the miſerable, as wel for the pleafantnes and temperature of the ayre, the great wealth and the abundance of al thynges, as for the curteſye, gentlenes and

familyarity of the people: wherein that region may compare with any other nation vpon the earth. Now the Letter of Philiberto, fell into the hands of lady Zilia, by meanes of hys Page instracted for that purpose: who aduertised hir of the departure of his mayster, and of the despaire wherein hee was. Whereof shee was somewhat fory, and offended: But yet puttinge on hir Aunciente feuerytye, tooke the Letters, and breakinge the Seale, found that which followeth.

THE very euill that caufeth mine anoy
The matter is that breedes to me my ioy,
Which doth my wofull heart full sore displease,
And yet my hap and hard yll lucke doth eafe.
I hope one day when I am franke and free,
To make thee do the thing that pleafeth mee,
Whereby gayne I shall, some pleasaunt gladnesse,
To supply mine vndeserued sadnesse,
The like whereof no mortall Dame can giue
To louing man that heere on earth doth lyue.
This great good turne which I on thee pretende,
Of my Conceites the full desired ende,
Proceedes from thee (O cruell mystresse myne)
Whose froward heart hath made mee to resigne
The full effect of all my liberty,
(To please and ease thy fonde fickle fansy)
My vse of speache in silence to remayne:
To euery wight a double hellifhe payne.
Whose fayth hadst thou not wickedly abusde
No stresse of payne for thee had bene refusde,
Who was to thee a trusty seruaunt sure,
And for thy sake all daungers would endure.
For which thou hast defaced thy good name,
And thereunto procurde eternall shame.
¶ That roaring tempest huge which thou hast made me felt,
The raging stormes whereof, well neere my heart hath swelt
By painful pang: whose waltering waues by troubled Skies,
And thouſand blasts of winde that in thofe Seas do ryse

Do promise shipwracke sure of that thy fayling Barke,
When after weather cleare doth rise some Tempest darke.
For eyther I or thou which art of Tyger's kinde,
In that great raging gulfe some daunger sure shalt finde,
Of that thy nature rude the deſt'nes en'mies bee,
And thy great ouerthrow full well they do foreſee.
The heauens vnto my eſtate no doubt great friendſhip ſhoe,
And do feeke wayes to ende, and finish all my woe.
This penaunce which I beare by yelding to thy heſt
Great ſtore of ioyes ſhall heape, and bring my mynde to reſt.
And when I am at eaſe amids my pleaſaunt happes,
Then shall I fee thee fall, and ſnarld in Fortune's trappes.
Then shall I fee thee ban and curſe the wicked time,
Wherin thou madef me gulp ſuch draught of poyfoned wine.
Of which thy mortall cup, I am the offerd wight,
A vowed ſacrifice to that thy cruell ſpight.
Wherfore my hoping heart doth hope to fee the day,
That thou for ſilence now to me ſhalt be the pray.
¶ O Bleſſed God moſt iuſt, whose worthy laude and prayſe
With vttered ſpeach in Skies a loft I dare not once to rayſe,
And may not well pronounce and ſpeak what ſuſfrance I fuſtaine,
Ne yet what death I do indure, whiles I in lyfe remayne,
Take vengeance on that traytrefſe rude, affiſt hir corps with woe
Thy holy arme redrefſe hir fault, that ſhe no more do ſoe:
My reaſon hath not ſo farre ſtrayed but I may hope and truſt
To fee hir for hir wickednes, be whipt with plague moſt iuſt.
In the meane while great heauines my fence and ſoule doth bite,
And shaking feuuer vex my corps for grieſe of hir deſpite.
My mynde now ſet at liberty from thee (O cruell Dame)
Doth giue deſiaunce to thy wrath, and to thy curſed name,
Proclayming mortal warre on thee vntill my tongue vntide,
Shall ioy to ſpeak to Zilia fast weeping by my fide.
The heauens forbide that cauſleſſe wrong abroad ſhould make his
vaunt,
Or that an vndeserued death forgetfull tombe ſhould haunt:
But that in written booke and verſe their names ſhould euer liue
And eke their wicked deedes ſhould dy, and vertues ſtil reuiue.

So shall the pride and glory both, of hir be punisht right,
 By length of yeares, and tract of time. And I by vertues might,
 Full recompence thereby shal haue and stand still in good Fame,
 And the like caitif wretch shall liue, to hir long lasting shame.
 Whose fond regard of beautie's grace, contemned hath the force
 Of my true loue full fixt in hir: hir heart voide of remorse,
 Esteemed it selfe right foolishly and me abused still,
 Vsurping my good honest fayth and credite at hir will.
 Whose leyall faith doth rest in soule, and therein stil shal bide,
 Vntill in filthy stincking graue the earth my corps shall hide.
 Then shal that soule fraught with that faith, to heuens make his
 repaire

And rest among the heuenny rout, bedeckt with sacred aire.
 And thou for thy great cruelty, as God aboue doth know,
 With ruful voice shalt wepe and wayle for thy gret ouerthrow,
 And when thou woldst fayn purge thyself for that thy wretched dede
 No kindnes shal to the be done, extreme shal be thy mede:
 And where my tongue doth want his wil, thy mischiefe to display,
 My hand and penne supplies the place, and shall do so alway.
 For so thou haft constraynd the same by force of thy behest:
 In silence still my tongue to keepe, t'accomplishe thy request.
 Adieu, farewell my tormenter, thy frend that is full mute,
 Doth bid thee farewell once agayne, and so hee ends his fute.

He that liueth only to be reuenged of thy cruelty,

PHILIBERTO OF VIRLE.

Zilia lyke a disdaynefull Dame, made but a Iest at theefe Letters
 and Complayntes of the infortunate Louer, saying that she was
 very well content with his Seruice: and that when he should
 perfourme the tyme of his probation, shee shoulde see if he were
 worthy to bee admitted into the Fellowship of theym which had
 made sufficient prooфе of the Order, and Rule of Loue. In the
 meane tyme Philiberto rode by great Iourneys (as we haue sayde
 before) towardes the goodly, and pleasaunte countrey of Fraunce,
 wherein Charles the Seuenth that tyme did raygne, who miracu-
 lously (But gieue the Frenchman leaue to flatter, and speake well
 of hys owne Countrey, accordaninge to the flatteringe, and vaun-
 inge Nature of that Nation) chased the Englishemen out of hys

Landes, and Auncient Patrimony in the yeare of our Lord 1451. This Kynge had hys Campe then Warrefaringe in Gascoine, whose Lucke was so Fortunate as hee expelled hys Ennymies, and left no Place for theym to Fortyfy there, whych Incouraged the Kynge to followe that good Occasion, and by Prosecutinge hys Victoryous Fortune, to Profligate out of Normandie, and to dispatch himselfe of that Ennemy, into whose Handes, and seruitude the Countrey of Guyene was ryghtly delyuered, and Victoryously wonne, and gotten by the Englishmen. The kynge then beeinge in hys Campe in Normandie, the Piedmount Gentleman the Lorde of Virle aforesayde, Repayred thereunto to Serue hym in hys Person, where hee was well knowne of some Captaynes whych had seene hym at other tymes, and in place where worthy Gentlemen are wonte to Frequent, and in the Duke of Sauyenes Courte, whych the Frenchemen dyd very mutch Haunte, because the Earle of Piedmont that then was Duke of Sauoy had Marryed Iolanta, the seconde daughter of Charles the Seuenth. Theese Gentlemen of Fraunce were very mutch fory for the Myffortune of the Lord of Virle, and knowinge hym to be one of the Brauest, and Lustyeest Men of Armes that was in his tyme within the Country of Piedmont, presented him before the King, commanding vnto hys grace the vertue, gentlenesse, and valiaunce of the man of Warre: who after hee had done his reuerence accordinge to hys duety, whych hee knew ful wel to doe, declared vnto him by signes that he was come for none other intent, but in those Warres to serue hys Maiestye: whom the King heard and thankefullly receyued assynging himself and promising very mutch of the dumbe Gentleman for respect of his personage which was comely and wel proportioned, and therefore represented some Force and greate Dexterity: and that whych made the king the better to fantasie the Gentleman, was the reporte of so many worthy men which extolled euen to the heauens the prowesse of the Piedmont knight. Whereof he gaue assured testimony in the assault which the king made to deliuer Roane, the Chyefe Citye and defence of all Normandie, in the year of our Lord 1451. where Philiberto behaued himself so valiantly as he was the first that mounted upon the Wals, and by his Dexterity and inuincyble force, made way to the

souldiers in the breche, whereby a little while after they entred and sacked the Enemies, dryuing them out of the Citye, and wherein not long before, that is to say 1430. the duke of Somerset caused Ioane the Pucelle to be burnt. The king aduertised of the Seruice of the Dumbe Gentleman, to recompence him according to his desert, and bycause hee knewe hym to bee of a good houfe, he made him a Gentleman of his Chambre, and gaue him a good pension, promysing him moreouer to continue hys liberality, when he should see him prosecute in time to come, the towardnesse of seruice which he had so haply begon. The dumbe Gentleman thanking the King very humbly, both for the present pryncely reward, and for promise in time to come, lifted vp his hand to heauen as taking God to witnesse of the faith, which inuiolable he promyfed to keepe vnto his Prynce: which he did so earnestly, as hardly he had promyfed, as well appeared in a Skirmishe betweene the Frrench, and their auncient Enimies the Englysh-Men, on whose side was the valiaunt and hardy Captayne the Lord Talbot, who hath eternized his memory in the victories obtained vpon that People, which sometimes made Europa and Asia to tremble, and appalled the monstorous and Warlike Countrey of Affrica. In this conflyete the Piedmont Knighte combated with the Lorde Talbot, agaynst whome he had so happy successe, as vpon the shock and incoutre he ouerthrewe both man and Horse, which caused the discomfiture of the Englishe Men: who after they had horsed agayne their Captain fled amaine, leauing the field bespred with dead Bodyes and bludshed of their Companions. This viētory recovered futch corage and boldnes to the French, as from that tyme forth the Englishmen began with their places and forts to lose also theyr hertes to defend themselues. The king excedingly wel contented wyth the prowesse and valiance of the dumbe Gentleman, gaue him for seruice past the Charge of v. c. men of armes, and indued him with some poffeffions, attending better fortune to make him vnderstand howe much the vertue of valiance ought to be rewarded and cheryfshed by Prynces that be aided in their Necceſſity with the Dyligence of futch a vertuous and noble Gentleman. In lyke manner when a Prynce hath ſomething good in himſelf, he can do no leſſe but loue and fauor that which

resembleth himself by Prynely Conditions, sith the Vertue in what soeuer place it taketh roote, can not chuse but produce good fruicte, the vse whereof far surmounts them all which approche the place, where these first seedes of Nobility were throwen. Certaine dayes after the kinge desirous to reioyce his Knights and Captaines that were in his trayne, and desirous to extinguish quite the woefull time which so long space held Fraunce in fearefull silence, caused a triumph of Turney to bee proclaimed within the City of Roane, wherein the Lord of Virle was deemed and esteemed one of the best, whych further did increase in him the good wyl of the kyng, in futch wyfe as he determined to procure his health, and to make him haue his speache againe. For he was verye sorry that a Gentleman so valiant was not able to expresse his minde, which if it might be had in counfel it would serve the state of a commonwealth, so wel as the force and valor of his body had til then serued for defence and recovery of his country. And for that purpose he made Proclamation by sound of Trumpet throughout the prouinces as wel within his own kingdome, as the regions adioyning vpon the same, that who so euer could heale that dumb Gentleman, shoulde haue ten thousand Frankes for recompence. A Man myght then haue seene thousands of Phyficians assemble in fielde, not to skirmish with the Englysh men, but to combat for reward in recoverie of the pacient's speache, who begon to make futch Warre against thos ten thousand Frankes, as the kyng was afayrde that the cure of that disease could take no effect: and for that cause ordained furthermore, that whosoeuer would take in hand to heale the dumbe, and did not keepe promyse within a certaine prefixed time, should pay the sayd summe, or for default thereof should pledge his head in gage. A Man myght then haue seene thos Phisick Maysters, aswell beyonde the Mountaynes, as in Fraunce it selfe, retire home againe, bleeding at the Nose, cursing with great impiety their Patrones, Galen, Hypocrates, and Auicen, and blamed with more than reprochful Woordes, the Arte wherewith they fished for honor and richesse. This brute was spred so far, and babblyng Fame had already by mouth of her Trump publyshed the same throughout the most part of the Provinces, Townes, and Cities neare and farre off to Fraunce, in futch

wyfe as a Man woulde haue thought that the two young men (which once in the tyme of the Macedonian Warres brought Tydings to Varinius that the king of Macedon was taken by the Consul Paulus Emilius) had ben vagarant and wandering abrode to carry Newes of the king's edicte for the healing of the Lord of Virle. Which caused that not only the brute of the Proclamation, but also the Credyte and reputatyon wherein the sayd Lord was with the French king arriuued euen at Montcal and passed from mouth to mouth, til at length Zilia the principal cause thereof vnderstode the newes, which reioyced hir very mutch, seing the firme Amitie of the dumbe Lord, and the sincere faith of hym in a promise vnworthy to be kept, for so mutch as where Fraude and feare doe rule in Heartes of Men, relygyon of promise, specially the Place of the gyuen Fayth, surrentreth hys force and reuolteth, and is no more bound but to that which by good wyll he woulde obserue. Nowe thoughte shee, thoughte? nay rather shee assured hir selfe, that the Gentleman for all hys wrytten Letter was stiil so surprysed wyth hir Loue, and kindled wyth her fire in so ample wyfe, as when hee was at Montcall: and therefore determinyd to goe to Paris, not for desire shee had to see hir pacient and pene- tenciarie, but rather for couetise of the ten thousand Francks, wherof already shee thought hir self assured, making good accompt that the dumbe Gentleman when hee should see himself discharged of his promise, for gratifying of hir, would make no stay to speak to the intent she myght beare away both the prayse and Money, whereof all others had failed tyll that tyme. Thus you see that she, whome honest Amitye and long service could lytle induce to compaffion and desire to giue some ease vnto hir moste earnest louer, yelded hir selfe to couetous gaine and greadineffe for to encrease hir Rycheffe. O cursed hunger of Money, how long wilt thou thus blinde the reason and Sprytes of men? Ah perillous gulfe, how many hast thou ouerwhelmed within thy bottomlesse Throte, whose glory, had it not bene for thee, had surpassid the Clouds, and bene equall with the bryghtnesse of the Sunne, where now they bee obscured wyth the thicknesse of thy fogges and Palpable darknesse. Alas, the fruicts whych thou bryngest forth for all thine outewarde apperance, conduce no felicity to them

that bee thy possessors, for the dropsey that is hydden in their Mynde, whych maketh them so mutch the more drye, as they drynke ofte in that thirsty Fountaine, is caufe of their alteration: and moft miserable is that infaciablc desire the Couetous haue to glut their appetite, whych can receiue no contentment. Thys onely Couetousnesse sometimes procured the Death of the great and rych Romane Crassus who through God's punyfment fell into the Handes of the Persians, for violating and facking the Temple of God that was in Ierusalem. Sextimuleus burnyng with Avarice and greedynesse of money, dyd once cut of the head of hys Patron and defender Caius Gracchus the Tribune of the People, incyted by the Tirant, which tormenteth the hearts of the couetous. I wil not speake of a good number of other Examples of people of all kyndes, and divers nations, to come again to Zilia. Who forgetting hir virtue, the first ornament and shining quality of hir honest behauour, feared not the wearines and trauaile of way, to commit her selfe to that danger of losse of honor, and to yeld to the mercy of one, vnto whom she had don so great iniury, as hir conſcye (if ſhee hadde not loſt hir ryghte fence) oughte to haue made hir thinke that hee was not without deſire to reuenge the wrong vniuſtly don vnto him, and ſpecially being in place where ſhe was not known, and he greatly honoured and eſteemed, for whose loue that Proclamation and ſearch of Phyſicke was made and ordained. Zilia then hauing put in order hir affaires at home departed from Montcall, and paſſyng the Mounts, arrived at Paris, in that time when greatest deſpayre was of the dumbe Knight's recoverу. Beynge arryued, wythin fewe Dayes after ſhe inquyred for them that had the charge to entertaine ſutche as came, for the cure of the pacient. "For (ſayd ſhe) if ther be any in the world, by whom the knigt may recover his health, I hope in God that I am ſhe that ſhal haue the prayſe." Heereof the Commissaries deputed hereunto, were aduertyfed, who caused the fayre Phyſitian to come before them, and asked her if it were ſhe, that would take vpon hir to cure this dumbe Gentleman. To whom ſhee aunſweared. "My mayſters it bath pleased God to reueale vnto me a certayne ſecrete very proper and meete for the healyng of hys Malady, wherewithal if the pacient wyll, I hope to make hym

speake so well, as he dyd these two yeares past and more.” “I suppose, sayd one of the Commissaries, that you be not ignoraunte of the Circumstances of the Kynges Proclamation.” “I knowe ful wel” (quod she) “the Efecte therefore, and therefore doe say vnto you, that I wyll loose my life yf I doe not accomplaysh that which I doe promyse so that I may haue Lycence, to tarry wyth hym alone, bycause it is of no lesse importaunce than hys Health.” “It is no maruell,” sayde the Commissary, “confideryng your Beauty, which is sufficient to frame a Newe Tongue in the mooste dumbe Person that is vnder the Heauens. And therefore doe your Endeuor, assuring you that you shall doe a great pleasure vnto the King, and besides the prayse you shall gette the good wyll of the dumbe Gentleman, which is the most excellent man of the World and therefore so well recompensed as you shall haue good cause to be contented wyth the kynges Lyberalite. But (to the intente you be not deceyued) the meanyng of the Edicte is, that within fiftene dayes after you begin the cure, you muste make hym whole, or else to satissie the Paynes ordayned in the same.” Whereunto she submitted hir selfe, blinded by Auarice and presumption, thinking that she had like power nowe ouer the Lord of Virle, as when she gaue him that sharpe and cruel penance. These Conditions promyfed, the Commissaries went to aduertise the Knight, how a gentlewoman of Piedmont was of purpose come into Fraunce to helpe him: whereof he was maruelously astouned. Now he would neuer haue thoughte that Zilia had borne hym so great good wil, as by abasing the pryd of hir Corage, would haue come so farre to eafe the grieve of him, whome by futch greate torments she had so wonderfully perfecuted. He thought againe that it was the Gentlewoman his Neighbour, whych sometymes had done hir endeuor to helpe him, and that nowe she had prouoked Zilia to absolute him of his faith, and requite him of hys promise. Musing vpon the diuersitie of these things, and not knowing wherevpon to settle hys iudgment, the deputies commaunded that the Woman Physitian should be admitted to speake with the patient. Which was done and brought in place, the Commissaries presently withdrew themselues. The Lord of Virle seeinge hys Ennemye come before him, whom sometimes hee loued very dearely, iudged by

and by the cause wherefore she came, that onely Auaryce and greedy defire of gaine had rather procured hir to passe the mountayns trauaile, than due and honest Amitye, wherewith she was double bound through his perseuerance and humble seruice, with whose sight hee was so appalled, as he fared like a shadowe and Image of a deade man. Wherefore callyng to mynd the rigour of his lady, hir inciulity and fonde Commaundement, so longe time to forbidde hys Speach, the Loue which once hee bare hir, with vehement defire to obey hir, sodainly was so cooled and qualfyed, that loue was turned into hatred, and will to serue hir, into an appetite of reuenge: whereupon he determined to vse that presente Fortune, and to playe his parte wyth hir, vpon whom hee had so foolyshly doted, and to pay hir with that Money wherewyth she made him feele the Fruictes of vnspeakable crueltye, to giue example to fonde and presumptuous dames, how they abuse Gentlemen of sutch Degree whereof the Knyghte was, and that by hauing regarde to the merite of sutch personages, they be not so prodigall of themselues, as to set their honour in sale for vyle reward and filthy mucke: whych was so constantly conserued and defended by this Gentlewoman, agaynst the assaultes of the good grace, beauty, valour, and gentlenesse, of that vertuous and honest suter. And notwithstanding, in these dayes wee see some to refiste the amity of those that loue, for an opynyon of a certayne vertue, which they thinke to be hydden within the corps of excellent beauty, who afterwards do set themselues to sale to hym that giueth most, and offreth greatest reward. Sutch do not deserue to be placed in rank of chraft Gentlewomen, of whome they haue no smacke at al, but amongs the throng of strumpets kynde, that haue some sparke and outward shew of loue: for she which loueth money and hunteh after gayne, wyl make no bones, by treason's trap to betray that vnhappy man, which shall yelde himselfe to hir: hir loue tending to vnsensible things, and sutch in dede, as make the wifest forte to falsifie their fayth, and sel the ryghte and Equity of their Indgmet. The Lorde of Virle, seeing Zilia then in his company, and almost at his commaundement, fayned as though hee knew hir not, by reason of his small regard and leffe intertaynnment shewed vnto hir at hir first comming. Which

greatly made the poore Gentlewoman to muse. Neuerthelesse she making a vertue of necessity, and seeing hir selfe to bee in that place, from whence shee could not depart, without the losse of hir honor and Lyfe, purposed to proue Fortune, and to committe hir selfe vnto his mercy, for all the mobilytie whych the auncients attribute vnto Fortune. Wherefore shutting fast the doore, shee went vnto the Knight, to whom she spake these words: "And what is the matter (sir knight) that now you make so little accompte of your owne Zilia, who in times past you sayd, had great power and Authorytye ouer you? what is the cause that moueth you hereunto? haue you so foone forgotten hir? Beholde me better, and you shal see hir before you that is able to acquyte you of youre promyse, and therefore prayeth you to pardon hir committed faultes done in tymes past by abusing so cruelly the honest and firme loue which you bare hir. I am she, which through follye and temeritie did stoppe your mouth, and tyed vp your Tongue. Giue me leaue, I befeech you, to open the same agayne, and to breake the Lyne, whych letteth the liberty of your Speache." She seyng that the dumbe Gentleman would make no aunswere at all, but mumme, and shewed by signes, that he was not able to vndoe his Tongue, weeping began to kysse hym, imbrace hym and make mutch of hym, in futch wyse, as he whych once studyed to make Eloquent Orations before hys Ladye, to induce hir to pity, forgat then those Ceremonyes, and spared his talke, to shewe hymselfe to be futch one as shee had made at hir Commaundement, mused and deuyfed altogether vpon the executyon of that, which sometyme bee hadde so paynfully purfued, both by Woords and contynuall Seruyce, and coulde profite nothing. Thus waked agayne by hir, whych once had Mortyfyed hys Mynde, assayed to renue in hir that, whych long tyme before seemed to be a sleepe. She more for feare of losse of Lyfe, and the pryce of the rewardē, than for any true or earnest loue suffred hym to receyue that of hir, whych the long Suter desireth to obtaine of his mistresse. They liued in this ioy and Pleasure the space of fiftene Dayes ordained for the assignd Terme of his Cure, wherein the poore Gentlewoman was not able to conuert hir offended Fryende to speake, although she humbly prayed him to shewe so

mutch favour as at least she might goe free, from either losse : telling hym howe lyttle regard shee hadde to hir honour, to come so farre to doe him pleasure, and to discharge him of his promise. Mutch other gay and lowlye talke shee hadde. But the knyghte nothing moued with what she sayde determined to brynghe hir in futch feare, as he had bene vexed with heauineffe, which came to passe at the expyred tyme. For the Commissaries seeing that their pacient spake not at all, summoned the Gentlewoman to pay the Penaltie pronounced in the Edict, or else to loose hyr lyfe. Alas, howe bytter seemed thys drynke to thys poore gentlewoman who not able to dissemble the gryef that prest on euery syde, beganne to faye : “ Ah, I Wretched and Caytyfe Woman, by thinking to deceiue an other, haue sharpened the Sworde to finissh myne owne lyfe. Was it not enough for me to vse futch crueltye towardes this myne Enemye, which most cruelly in double wyse taketh Reuenge, but I must come to bee thus tangled in his Snares, and in the Handes of him, who inioyng the Spoyles of myne Honour, will with my Lyfe, depryue me of my Fame, by making mee a Common Fable, to all Posterity in tyme to come ? O what hap had I, that I was not rather devoured by some Furious and cruell beast, when I passed the mountaines, or else that I brake not my Necke, downe some steepe and headlong hil, of those high and hideous mountains, rather than to bee set heare in stage, a Pageant to the whole Citye to gaze vpon, for enterprysing a thing so vayne, done of purpose by him, whome I haue offended. Ah, Signior Philiberto, what Euill rewardest thou for pleasures receiued, and fauors felt in hir whom thou didst loue so much, as to make hir dye futch shameful, and dreadfull death. But O GOD, I know that it is for worthy guerdon of my folysh and wycked Lyfe. Ah disloyaltye and fickle trust, is it possible that thou be harbored in the hearte of hym which hadde the Brute to bee the most Loyall and Curteous Gentleman of hys Countrey ? Alas, I see well nowe that I must die through myne onelye simplicity, and that I muste sacrifice mine Honoure to the rygour of hym, which with two aduauntages, taketh ouer cruell reuenge of the lyttle wrong, wherewith my chastitye touched him before.” As she thus had finished hir complainte, one came in to carrie

hir to Pryson, whether willinglye shee wente for that she was already resolued in desire, to lyue no longer in that miserie. The Gentleman contented wyth that payne, and not able for to dissemble the gryefe, which hee conceyued for the passion whych hee fawe hys Welbeloued to endure, the enioyinge of whome renued the beate of the flames forepast, repayred to the Kyng, vnto whome to the great pleasure of the Standers by, and exceeding reioyce of hys Maiestye (to heare hym speake) he told the whole discourse of the Loue betweene hym and cruell Zilia, the cause of the losse of his speach, and the somme of hys reuenge." By the fayth of a Gentleman (sayed the king) but here is so straunge an hystorye as euer I heard: and verely your fayth and loyaltye is no leffe to be praised and commended than the cruelty and couetousnes of the Woman worthy of reproch and blame, which truly deserueth some greeuous and notable iustice, if so be she were not able to render some apparent cause for the couerture and hiding of hir folly." "Alas fir," (sayd the Gentleman) "pleaseth your maiesty to deliuer hir (although she be worthy of punishment) and discharge the rest that be in prison for not recovery of my speach, fith my onely help did rest, eyther at hir Commaundemente whych had bounde me to that wrong, or else in the expired time, for whych I had pleadged my fayth." To which request, the Kinge very willingly agreed, greatly prayng the Wifedome, Curtesie, and aboue all the fidelity of the Lord of Virle, who causynge his penitencary to be set at liberty, kept hir company certayne dayes, as well to Feaste, and basket hir, in thos Landes and Posseſſions which the kinges maiesty had liberally bestowed vpon him, as to faciate his Appetite with some fruiſtes whereof he had fauoured his taste when he was voluntaryly Dumbe. Zilia founde that fauour so pleasaunt, as in maner shee counted hir imprisonment happy, and hir trauell rest, by reason that distresse made hir then feele more liuely the force and pleasure of Liberty, which shee had not founde to bee so delicate, had she not receyued the experience and Payne thereof. Marke heere how Fortune dealeth with them which trustinge in their force, despise (in respect of that which they doe themſelues) the little portion that they iudge to bee in others. If the Vayneglory, and arrogante

Presumption of a Chastity Impregnable had not deceiued this Gentlewoman, if the sacred hunger of gold had not blinded hir, it could not haue bene knowne, wherein hir incontinency consisted, not in the Mynion delights, and alluring Toyes of a passionate Louer, but in the couetous desire of filling hir Purse, and Hypocriticall glory of praiife among men. And notwithstanding yee fee hir gaine to serue hir turne nothing at all but to the perpetuall reproch of hir name, and the flaunder futch as ill speakers and enimies of womankinde, do burden the Sexe withall. But the fault of one Woman, which by hir owne presumption deceyued hir selfe, ought not to obscure the glory of so many vertuous, Fayre, and Honest dames, who by their Chastity, Liberality, and Curtesy, be able to deface the blot of Folly, Couetousnes and cruelty of this Gentlewoman heere, and of all other that do ressemble hir. Who taking leaue of hir Louer, went home agayne to Piedmount, not without an ordinary grieve of heart, which serued hir for a spur to hir Conscience, and continually forced hir to thinke, that the force of man is lesse than nothing, where God worketh not by his grace, which fayling in vs, oure worckes can fauor but of the stench and corruption of our nature, wherein it tumbleth and tosfeth lyke the Sow that walloweth in the puddle of filth and dirt. And because yee shall not thincke in generall termes of Woman's chastity, and discretion, that I am not able to vouche some particular example of later years, I meane to tell you of one, that is not onely to bee praysed for hir Chastity in the absence of hir husband, but also of hir Courage and Policy in chasfisinge the vaunting natures of two Hungarian Lords that made their braggs they would win hir to their Willes, and not only hir, but all other, whatsoeuer they were of Woman-kynde.

THE TWENTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Two Barons of Hngarie assuring themselues to obtayne their fute to a fayre Lady of Boeme, receyued of hir a straung and maruelous repulse, to their great shame and Infamy, cursinge the tyme that euer they aduentured an Enterprise so foolish.

PENELOPE, the woful Wife of absent Vlisses, in hir tedious longing for the home retourne of that hir aduenturous knight, assayled wyth Carefull heart amid the troupe of amorous Suters, and within the Bowels of hir royall Pallace, deserued no greater fame for hir valiaunt encountries and stoute defence of the inuincible, and Adamant fort of hir chasfity than this Boeme Lady doth by resistyng two mighty Barrons, that canoned the Walles, and well mured rampart of hir pudicity. For being threatned in his Princes Court, whether al the well trayned crew of eche science and profession, dyd make repayre, beyng menaced by Venus' band, which not onely summoned hir fort and gaue hir a camisado by thick *Al' Armes*, but also forced the place by fierce assault, she lyke a couragious and politike captayne, gaue those braue and lusty Souldiers, a fowle repulse, and in end taking them captiues, vrged them for their victuals to fall to woman's toyle, more shamefull than shamelesse Sardanapalus amid hys amorous troupe. I neede not amplifie by length of preamble, the fame of this Boeme Lady, nor yet briefly recompt the Triumph of hir Victory: vayne it were also by glorious hymnes to chaunte the wisedome of hir heleuing maake, who not carelesse of hir Lyfe, employed hys care to serue hys Prynce, and by fernice atchieued the cause that draue him to a fouldier's state. But yet for trutlesse faith in the pryme conference of his future porte, hee consulted wyth a Pollaco, for a compounded druge, to ease his suspect mind, whych medicine so eased his maladie, as it not onely preferued hym from the infected humour, but also made hir happy for euer. Sutch fall the euentys of valiaunt mindes, though many tymes mother iealousie that cancreth Wytch steppeth in hir foote to annoy the well disposed heart. For had he ioyned to his valyaunce credite of his louyuge wife,

without the blynde aduyse of futch as professe that blacke and lying scyence, double glorye hee had gayned: once for endeuor- yng by seruice to seeke honour: the seconde, for absolute trusfe in hir, that neuer ment to beguyle him, as by hir firste aunswere to his first motion appeareth. But what is to be obiected against the Barons? Let them answere for their fault, in this discourse ensuing: whych so lessoneth all Noble Myndes, as warely they ought to beware how they aduenture upon the honour of Ladies, who bee not altogither of one selfe and yelding trampe, but wel forged and steeled in the shamefast shoppes of Loyaltie, which armure defendeth them against the fond skirmishes and vnconfidred conflicts of Venus' wanton band. The maiesties also of the king and Queene, are to be aduaunced aboue the starres for their wife dissuasion of those Noblemen from their hot and hedleffe enterpryse, and then their Iustice for due execution of their forfaict, the particularity of whych discourse in this wyse doth begynne. Mathie Coruine, sometime king of Hungarie, aboue the yeare of oure Lorde 1458, was a valiaunt man of Warre, and of goodly personage. Hee was the first that was Famous, or feared of the Turks, of any Prynce that gouerned that kingdome. And amongs other his vertues, so well in Armes and Letters, as in Lyberallyty and Curtefie he excelled al the Prynces that raygned in his time. He had to Wyfe Queene Beatrice of Arragon, the Daughter of olde Ferdinand kyng of Naples, and sister to the mother of Alphonfus, Duke of Ferrara, who in learnyng, good conditions, and all other vertues generally dispersed in hir, was a surpaffing princeffe, and shewed hirself not onely a curteous and Liberall Gentlewoman to king Mathie hir husband, but to all other, that for vertue seemed worthy of honour and reward: in futch wise as to the Court of these two noble Princes, repayred the most notable Men of al Nations that were giuen to any kind of good exercise, and euery of them according to theyr desert and degree welcomed and entertained. It chaunced in this time, that a knight of Boeme the vafall of Kinge Mathie, for that he was likewyse kyng of that countrey, born of a noble house, very valiant and wel exercised in armes, fell in loue with a passing faire Gentlewoman of like nobility, and reputed to be the fairest of al the country, and had a brother

that was but a pore Gentleman, not lucky to the goods of fortune. This Boemian knight was also not very rich, hauing onely a Castle, wyth certain reuenues thervnto, which was scarce able to yeld vnto him any great maintenance of liuing. Fallyng in loue then with this faire Gentlewoman, he demaunded hir in mariage of hir brother, and with hir had but a very little dowrie. And this knight not wel forseeing his poore estate, brought his wyfe home to his house, and there, at more leisure considering the same, began to fele his lacke and penury, and how hardly and scant his reuenues were able to mainteine his port. He was a very honest and gentle person, and one that delighted not by any meanes to burden and fine his tenants, contenting himself with that reuenuue which his ancesters left him, the same amounting to no great yerely rent. When this gentleman perceiued that he stode in neede of extraordinary relyefe, after many and diuers consyderations with himself, he purposed to folow the Court, and to serue king Mathie his souerain lord and master, there by his diligence and experience, to feke meanes for ability to sustaine his wife and himself. But so great and feruent was the loue that he bare vnto his Lady, as he thought it impossible for him to liue one houre without hir, and yet iudged it not best to haue hir with him to the court, for auoidinge of further Charges incydente to Courtyng Ladyes, whose Delight and Pleasure resteth in the toyes and trycks of the same, that cannot be wel auoyded in poore Gentlemen, without theyr Names in the Mercer's or Draper's Iornals, a heauy thynge for them to consyder if for their disport they lyke to walke the stretes. The daily thynkyng thereupon, brought the poore Gentleman to great sorrow and heauiness. The Lady that was young, wife and discrete, marking the maner of hir husband, feared that he had some misliking of hir. Wherefore vpon a day she thus sayd vnto hym : "Dere husband, willingly would I desire a good turne at your hand, if I wist I should not displease you." "Demaund what you will," (said the knight) "if I can, I shall gladly performe it, bicause I do esteeme your satiffaction, as I do mine owne lyfe." Then the Lady very sobrely praied him, that he would open vnto hir the cause of that discontentment, which hee shewed outwardly to haue, for that his mynd and behauour seemed to bee

contrary to ordinary Custome, and contriued Daye and Nyghte in fighes, auoydinge the Company of them that were wont specially to delyght him. The Knight hearing his Ladys request, pausd a whyle, and then sayd vnto bir: "My wel beloued Wyfe, for so mutch as you desyre to vnderstand my thoughte and mynde, and whereof it commeth that I am sad and pensife, I wyll tell you: all the Heauiness wherewith you see me to be affected, doth tend to this end. Fayne would I denye that you and I may in honour lyue together, accordyng to our calling. For in respect of our Parentage, our Liuelode is very slender, the occasion whereof were our Parents, who morgaged theyr Lands, and consumed a great part of their goods that our Auncestors lefte them. I dayly thynking hereupon, and conceiuyng in my head dyuers Imaginations, can deuise no meanes but one, that in my fansie seemeth best, which is, that I go to the Court of our soueraine lord Mathie who at this present is inferring Warres vpon the Turk, at whose hands I do not mistrust to receyue good intertainment, beyng a most Lyberal Prynce, and one that esteemeth al futch as be valiant and active. And I for my parte wyll so gourne my selfe (by God's grace) that by deserte I wyll procure futch lyuing and fauour as hereafter we may lyue in oure Olde Dayes a quyet Lyse to oure great stay and conforte: For althoughe Fortune hitherto hath not fauored that state of Parentage, whereof we be, I doubt not wyth Noble Courage to win that in despyle of Fortune's Teeth, which obstinately hitherto she hath denied. And the more assured am I of thys determination, bycause at other tymes, I haue serued vnder the Vaiuoda in Transiluania, agaynst the Turke, where many tymes I haue bene requyred to serue also in the Courte, by that honourable Gentleman, the Counte of Cilia. But when I dyd consider the beloued Company of you (deare Wyfe) the swetest Companyon that euer Wyght possessed, I thought it vnpossible for me to forbeare your prefence, whych yf I should doe, I were worthy to sustayne that dishonour, which a great number of carelesse Gentlemen doe, who following their pryuate gayne and Wyll, abandon theyr young and fayre Wyues, neglectinge the fyre which Nature hath instilled to the delycate bodies of futch tender Creatures. Fearing therewythal, that so foone as I shoulde depart

the lusty yong Barons and Gentlemen of the Countrey would pursue the gaine of that loue, the pryce whereof I do esteeme aboue the crowne of the greatest Emperour in all the World, and woulde not forgoe for all the Riches and Precious Iewels in the fertyle Soyle of Arabie, who no doubte would swarne togyther in greater heapes then euer dyd the wowers of Penelope, within the famous graunge of Ithaca, the house of Wandering Vlisses. Whych pursue if they dyd attayne, I shoulde for euer hereafter be ashamed to shewe my face before thos that be of valour and regard. And this is the whole effect of the scruple (sweete wyfe) that hyndreth me, to seeke for our better estate and fortune." When he had spoken these words, he held his peace. The Gentlewoman which was wyfe and stout, perceyuing the great loue that her husband bare hir, when hee had stayed himselfe from talke, with good and merry Countenance answered hym in thys wyse: "Sir Vlrico," (which was the name of the Gentleman) "I in lyke manner as you haue done, haue deuyfed and thoughte vpon the Nobilitye and Byrth of our Auncestors, from whose state and port (and that wythout oure fault and cryme) we be far wyde and deuyded. Notwythstanding I determined to set a good face vpon the matter, and to make so mucht of our paynted sheath as I could. In deede I confesse my selfe to be a Woman, and you Men doe say that Womens heartes be faynt and feeble: but to bee playne wyth you, the contrary is in me, my hearte is so stoute and ambitious as peraduenture not meete and consonant to power and ability, although we Women will finde no lacke if our Hartes haue pith and strength inough to beare it out. And faine woulde I support the state wherein my mother maintayned me. Howe be it for mine owne part (to God I yeld the thanks) I can so moderate and stay my little great heart, that contented and satisfied I can be, with that which your abilitye can beare, and pleasure commaund. But to come to the point, I say that debating with my selfe of our state as you full wisely do, I do verily think that you being a yong Gentleman, lusty and valiaunt, no better remedy or deuyse can be found than for you to aspyre and seeke the Kyng's fauor and seruice. And it must needes ryse and redounde to your gaine and preferment, for that I heare you say the King's Maiestye doth

already knowe you. Wherefore I do suppose that hys grace (a skilfull Gentleman to way and esteeme the vertue and valor of ech man) cannot chose but reward and recompence the well doer to his singuler contentation and comfort. Of this myne Opinion I durst not before thys time vtter Word or figne for feare of your displeasure. But nowe sith your selfe hath opened the way and meanes, I haue presumed to discouer the same, do what shal seeme best vnto your good pleasure. And I for my parte, although that I am a woman (accordingly as I saied euen now) that by Nature am desirous of honor, and to shew my selfe abrode more rich and sumptuous than other, yet iu respect of our fortune, I shal be contented so long as I lyue to continue with you in this our Castell, where by the grace of God I will not fayle to serue, loue and obey you, and to keepe your House in that moderate forte, as the reuenues shall be able to maintayne the same. And no doubt but that poore liuing we haue orderly vsed, shal be sufficient to finde vs two, and fwe or fixe seruaunts with a couple of horffe, and so to lyue a quyet and merry Lyfe. If God doe send vs any Children, tyl they come to lawfull age, we will with our poore liuing bryng them vp so well as wee can and then to prefer them to some Noble mens seruices, with whome by God's grace they may acquire honoure and lyuing, to keepe them in their aged dayes. And I doe trust that wee two shall vse futch mutuall loue and reioyce, that so long as our Lyfe doth last in wealth and woe, our contented mindes shall rest satifified. But I waying the stoutnesse of your minde, doe know that you esteeme more an Ounce of honor, than all the Golde that is in the world. For as your birth is Noble, so is your heart and stomacke. And therefore many tymes seeing your great heauinessse, and manyfolde muses and studies, I haue wondred with my selfe whereof they shoule proceede, and amongs other my conceipts, I thought that either my behauior and order of dealyng, or my personage did not lyke you: or else that your wonted gentle minde and disposition had ben altered and transformed into soime other Nature: many times also I was contente to thynke that the cause of your disquiet mynde, dyd ryse vpon the disuse of Armes, wherein you were wonte dailye to accustome youre selfe amongs the Troupes of the honourable, a company in

dede most worthy of your presence. Reuoluing many times these and futch lyke cogitations, I haue sought meanes by futch alurementes as I could deuyse, to ease and mitigate your troubled minde, and to wthdraw the great vnquiet and care wherewith I fawe you to be affected. Bycause I do esteeme you aboue all the Worlde deemyng your onely gryefe to be my double Payne, your aking Fynger, a feruent Feuer fit, and the least Woe you can fustayne moste bytter Death to me, that loueth you more dearelye than my selfe. And for that I doe perceyue you are determinyd to serue our Noble King, the forrowe which without doubte wyll assayle mee by reason of your absence, I wyll sweeten and lenifie wth Contentatyon, to see your Commendable defyre appeased and quiet. And the pleasaunt Memory of your valyaunt factes beguyle my pensife thoughts, hopyng our nexte meetyng shall bee more ioyfull than thys our dysiunction and departure heauy. And where you doubt of the Confluence and repaire of the dyshonefte whych shall attempt the wynnynge and subduing of myne heart and vnspotted bodye, hytherto inuyolably kepte from the touch of any person, cast from you that feare, expel from your minde that fonde conceipt: for death shall sooner close these mortall Eyes, than my Chasfitye shall bee defyled. For pledge whereof I haue none other thyng to gyue but my true and symple fayth, whych if you dare trust it shal hereafter appeare so firme and inuiolable as no sparke of suspition shal enter your careful minde, which I may wel terme to be carefull, bicause some care before hand doth rise of my behauior in your absence. The tryall wherfore shall yelde sure eidence and testimony, by passing my careful life which I may with better cause so terme in your absence, that God knoweth wil be right pensife and carefull vnto mee, who ioyeth in nothinge else but in your welfare. Neuerthelesse all meanes and wayes shall bee agreeable vnto my minde for your assurance, and shall breed in me a wonderful contentation, which lusteth after nothing but your satiffaction. And if you list to close me vp in one of the Castell towers til your return, right glad I am there to continue an Ankresse life: so that the same may ease your desired mind." The knight with great delyght gaue ear to the aunswere of his Wife, and when she had ended hir talke, he began to reply

vnto hir: "My welbeloued, I doe lyke wel and greatly commended the stoutnesse of your heart, it pleaseth me greatly to see the same agreeable vnto mine. You haue lightned the same from inestimable woe by vnderstanding your conceiued purpose and determination to gard and preserue your honor, praying you therein to perseuere, still remembraunce that when a Woman hath lost hir honor, shee hath forgone the chiefeſt Iewel ſhe hath in this Life, and deferueth no longer to be called woman. And touching my talke propofed vnto you although it be of great importaunce, yet I meane not to depart ſo ſoone. But if it do come to effect I affure thee Wife, I will leaue thee Lady and miſtrefſe of all that I haue. In the meane time I will conſider better of my buſineſſe, and conſult with my fryendes and kinsmen, and then determine what is beſt to be done. Til when let vs lyue and ſpend our tyme ſo merely as we can." To bee ſhorte there was nothing that ſo mutch moleſted the knight, as the doubt he had of his wife, for that ſhe was a very fine and faire yong Gentlewoman: And therefore he ſtil deuifed and imagined what affurance he myght finde of hir behauior in his absence. And reſting in this imagination, not long after it cam to paſſe that the knight being in company of diuers Gentleman, and talking of fundry matters, a tale was tolde what chaunced to a gentleman of the Countrey whych had obtained the fauoure and good wyll of a Woman, by meanes of an olde man called Pollacco, which had the name to be a famous enchaunter and Phyſitian, dwelling at Cutiano a Citie of Boeme, where plenty of ſiluer mines and other metals is. The knight whose Castle was not far from Cutiano, had occaſion to repaire vnto that Citye, and according to his deſire found out this Pollacco, which was a very old man, and talking with him of diuers things, perceiued him to be of great ſkil. In end he entreated him, that for ſo mutch as he had don pleaſure to many for apprehenſion of their loue, he wold alſo inſtruct him, how he might be affured that hys wife did keepe hir ſelf honest all the time of his absence, and that by certaine ſigndes hee might have ſure knowledge whether ſhe brake hir faith, by ſending his honesty into Cornwall. Sutche vaine truſt this knight reposed in the lying Science of Sorcery, whych although to many other is found deceit-

ful, yet to him serued for sure euidence of his wiue's fidelity. This Pollacco which was a very cunning enchaunter as you haue heard sayd vnto him: "Sir you demaund a very straunge matter, sutch as wherwyth neuer hitherto I haue bene acquainted, ne yet searched the depthe of thosse hydden secrets, a thyng not comonly sued for, ne yet practized by me. For who is able to make assurance of a woman's chasfity, or tel by signes except he were at the deede doing, that she had don amisse? Or who can gaine by proctors wryt, to summon or sue at spiritual Courte, peremptorily to affirme by neuer so good euydence or testimony, that a woman hath hazarded hir honesty, except he sweare Rem to be in Re, which the greatest Ciuilian that ever Padua bred neuer sawe by processe duely tried? Shall I then warrante you the honesty of such slippery Catell, prone and ready to lust, easy to be vanquished by the suites of earnest pursuers? But blameworthy surely I am, thus generally to speake: for some I know, although not many, for whose poore honesties I dare aduenture mine owne. And yet that number how small so euer it be, is worthy all due Reuerence and Honoure. Notwythstandyng (bycause you seeme to bee an Honeste Gentleman) of that Knowledge which I haue, I will not bee greatelye squeimyshe, a certayne secrete experiment in deede I haue, wherewith perchaunce I may satifly your demaund. And this is it: I can by mine Arte in smal time, by certaine compositions, frame a Woman's Image, which you continually in a lyttle Boxe may carry about you, and so ofte as you list behold the same. If the wife doe not breake hir maryage faith, you shall still see the same so fayre and wel coloured as it was at the first making, and seeme as though it newly came from the painter's shop, but if perchaunce she meane to abuse hir honesty the same wil waxe pale, and in deede committing that filthy Fa&t, sodainly the colour will bee blacke, as arayed with Cole or other filth, and the smel thereof wyl not be very pleasaunt, but at al times when she is attempted or pursued, the colour will be so yeallow as Gold." This maruellous secrete deuyse greatly pleased the Knyght verely beleuing the same to be true, specially mutch moued and assured by the fame bruted abrode of his science, whereof the Cytyzens of Cutiano, tolde very

straunge and increyble things. When the pryece was paied for this precious Iewel, hee receiued the Image, and ioyfully returned home to his Castell, where tarryinge certain dayes, he determined to repayre to the Court of the glorious king Mathie, making his wife priuy of hys intent. Afterwards when he had disposed his household matters in order, he committed the gouernment therof to his Wife, and hauinge prepared all Necessaries for his voyage, to the great sorrow and grief of his beloued, he departed and arryued at Alba Regale, where that time the king lay with Beatrrix his Wife, of whom hee was ioyfully receiued and entayned. He had not long continued in the Court, but he had obtained and won the fauor and good wyll of all men. The king which knew him full well very honorably placed him in his Courte, and by him accomplished diuers and many waighty affars, which very wisely and trustely he brought to passe according to the king's mind and pleasure. Afterwards he was made Colonell of a certain number of footmen sent by the king against the Turks to defende a holde which the enimies of God began to affaile vnder the conduct of Mustapha Basca, which conduct he so wel directed and therin stoutly behaued himself, as he chafed al the infidels oute of those coasts, winning therby the name of a most valiaunt soldier and prudent Captaine, whereby he merueylously gayned the fauor and grace of the king, who (ouer and besides his dayly intertayntment) gaue vnto him a Castle, and the Reuenue in fee farme for euer. Sutch rewards deserue all valiaunt men, which for the honour of theyr Prince and countrey do willingly imploy their seruice, worthy no doubt of great regard and clearishinge, vpon their home returne, because they hate idlenes to win Glory, deuisinge rather to spende whole dayes in fielde, than houres in Courte, which this worthy knight deserued, who not able to sustayne his poore Estate; by politick wisdome and prowesse of armes endeuored to serue his Lord and countrey, wherein surely hee made a very good choyse Then he devoutly prayed God, for that he put into his minde sutch a noble enterprize, trusting dayly to atchieue greater Fame and Glory: but the greater was his ioy and contentation, because the Image of hys Wyfe inclosed wythin a Boxe, whych still hee caried about him in hys purse, continued freshe of coloure with-

out alteration. It was noysed in the Court how thys valiaunt Knight Vlrico, had in Boeme the fayrest and goodliest Lady to his Wife that liued eyther in Boeme, or Hungary. It chaunced as a certaine company of young Gentlemen in the Courte were together (amongs whom was this Knight) that a Hungarian Baron sayd vnto him: "How is it possible, fyr Vlrico, being a yare and a halfe since you departed out of Boeme, that you haue no minde to returne to see your Wife, who, as the common fame reporteth, is one of the goodliest Women of all the Countrey: truely it seemeth to me, that you care not for hir, which were great pitty if hir beauty be correspondent to hir Fame." "Syr," (quod Vlrico) "what hir beauty is I referre vnto the World, but how so euer you esteeme me to care of hir, you shall vnderstand that I doe loue hir, and wil do so duringe my lyfe. And the cause why I haue not visited hir of long time, is no little prooef of the great assurance I haue of her vertue and honest lyfe. The argument of hir vertue I proue, for that she is contented that I should serue my Lord and king, and sufficient it is for me to giue hir intelligence of my state and welfare, whych many tymes by Letters at opportunity I fayle not to do: The prooef of my Fayth is euydent by reason of my bounden duety to our Soueraigne Lord of whom I haue receyued so great, and ample Benefites, and the Warrefare which I vse in his grace's seruice vpon the Frontiers of his Realme agaynst the enimies of Christe, whereunto I bear more good will than I doe to Wedlocke Loue, preferring duety to Prince before mariage: albeit my Wiue's fayth, and constancy is sutch, as freely I may spend my lyfe without care of hir deuoyr, being assured that besides hir Beauty shee is wife, vertuous and honest, and loueth me aboue al worldly things, tending me so dearely as she doth the Balles of hir owne eyes." "You haue stoutly sayd," (answered the Baron) "in defencie of your Wiue's chastity, whereof she can make vnto hir selfe no great warrantice, becaufe a woman some tymes will bee in minde not to be mooued at the requests, and gifts offred by the greatest Prince of the World who afterwards within a day vpon the onely sight, and view of some lusty youth, at one simple worde vttered with a few Teares, and shorter suite, yeldeth to his request. And what is she then that can conceyue

futch affraunce in hir selfe? What is hee that knoweth the secretes of heartes which be impenetrable? Surely none as I suppose, except God him selfe. A Woman of hir owne nature is moouable and plyant, and is the mooste ambitious creature of the Worlde. And (by God) no Woman doe I know but that she lusteth and desireth to be beloued, required, fued vnto, honored and cherished? And oftentimes it commeth to passe that the moft crafty Dames which thincke with fayned Looke to feede their diuers Louers, be the firſt that thrust their heads into the amorous Nets, and lyke little Birdes in hard distrefſe of weather be caught in Louer's Lime-twigges. Whereby, ſir Vlrico, I do not ſee that your Wyfe (aboue all other Women compact of flesh and bone) hath futch priuiledge from God, but that ſhe may be ſoone entiſed and corrupted.” “Well fir,” (ſayd the Boeme Knight) “I am perſuaded of that which I haue ſpoken, and verely doe beleue the effect of my beſtſe moft true. Euer man knoweth his owne affayres, and the Foole knoweth better what hee hath, than hys neighbors, do, be they neuer ſo wife. Beleue you what you thincke for good. I meane not to diſgrefſe from that which I conceyue. And ſuffer me (I pray you) to beleue what I lift, fith beliefe cannot hurt me, nor yet your diſcredite can hinder my beliefe, being free for ech man in ſemblable chaunces to thinke, and belieue what his mynde luſteth and liketh.” There were many other Lordes and Gentlemen of the court preſent at there talke, and as we commonly fee (at futch like meetinges) euer man vterereth his minde: whereupon fundry opinions were produced touching that queſtion. And because diuers men be of diuers natures, and many preſuminge vpon the pregnancy of their wife heads there roſe ſome ſtur about that talke, each man obſtinate in hys alledged reaſon, more froward peraduenture than reaſon, more rightly required: the communication grew ſo hot and talke brake forth ſo loude, as the fame was reported to the Queene. The good Lady fory to heare tell of futch ſtrife within hir Court, abhorring naturally all controuerſie and contention, ſent for the parties, and required theym from poynct to poynct to make recitall of the beginning, and circumſtance of their reaſons, and arguments. And when ſhe vnderſtoode the effect of al their talke, ſhe ſayd, that euer man at his

owne pleasure might beleue what he list, affirming it to be presumptuous and extreme folly, to iudge all women to be of one disposition, in like sort as it were a great errore to say that all men bee of one quality and condicion: the contrary by dayly experience manifestly appearing. For both in men and women, there is so great difference and variety of natures, as there bee heades, and wits. And how it is commonly scene that two Brothers, and Sisters, borne at one Byrth, bee yet of contrary Natures and Complexions, of Manners, and Conditions so diuers, as the thinge which shall please the one, is altogeaither displeasaunt to the other. Wherewpon the Queene concluded, that the Boeme knight had good reason to continue that good and honest credit of his Wyfe, as hauing proued hir fidelity of long time, wherein she shewed hirself to be very wise and discret. Now because (as many times we see) the natures and appetites of diuers men be insatiable, and one man sometimes more foolish hardy than another, euen so (to say the troth) were those two Hungarian Barons, who seeming wife in their owne conceiptes, one of them sayd to the Queene in this manner: "Madame, your grace doth wel maintaine the sexe of womankinde, because you be a Woman. For by nature it is gieuen to that kinde, stoutly to stand in defence of themselues, because their imbecillity, and weakenes otherwise would bewray them: and although good reasons might be alledged to open the causes of their debility, and why they be not able to attayne the hault excellency of man, yet for this tyme I doe not meane to be tedious vnto your grace, least the little heart of Woman should ryse and display that conceit which is wrapt within that little Moulde. But to retourne to this chaste Lady, through whom our talke began, if we might craue licence of your Maiesty, and faulfe Conduct of thys Gentleman to knowe hir dwelling place, and haue leaue to speake to hir, we doubt not but to breake with our batteringe talke the Adamant Walles of hir Chasfity that is so famous, and cary away that Spoile which victorioufly we shall atchieue." "I know not," aunswere the Boeme Knight, "what yee can, or will doe, but sure I am, that hitherto I am not deceyued." Many things were spoken there, and sundry opinions of eyther partes alledged, in ende the two Hungarian Barons persuaded

them felues, and made their vaunts that they were able to climbe the Skyes, and both would attempt and also bring to passe any enterprize were it neuer so great, affirming their former offer by othe, and offering to Guage all the Landes, and goods they had, that within the space of 5 moneths they woulde eyther of them obtayne the Gentlewoman's good will to do what they list, so that the knight were bound, neyther to returne home, ne yet to aduertise hir of their determination. The Queene, and all the standers by, laughed heartely at this their offer, mocking and iesting at their foolish, and youthly conceites. Whych the Barons perceiuing, fayde: "You thinke Madame that we speake triflingly, and be not able to accomplish this our proposed enterprize, but Madame, may it please you to gieue vs leaue, wee meane by earnest attempt to gieue prooфе thereof." And as they were thus in reasoninge and debating the matter, the kinge (hearinge tell of this large offer made by the Barons) came into the place where the queene was, at such time as she was about to dissuade them from the frantik devise. Before whom he being entred the chamber, the two Barons fell downe vpon their Knees, and humbly besought his Grace, that the compact made betwene sir Vlrico and them might proceede, disclosing vnto him in few wordes the effect of all their talke, which franckly was graunted by the king. But the Barons added a Prouiso, that when they had won their Wager, the Knight by no meanes shoulde hurt his Wyfe, and from that tyme forth should gieue ouer hys false Opinion, that women were not naturally gieuen to the futes and requests of amorous persons. The Boeme Knight, who was assured of hys Wyue's great Honesty, and Loyall fayth, beleueu so true as the Gospell, the proportion and quality of the Image, who in all the tyme that hee was farre of, neuer perceyued the same to bee eyther Pale or Black, but at that tyme lookinge vpon the Image, hee perceiued a certayne Yeallow colour to rise, as hee thought his Wyfe was by some loue pursued, but yet fodeynly it returned agayne to his naturall hewe, which boldned him to say these words to the Hungarian Barons: "Yee be a couple of pleasaunt, and vnbeleeuing Gentlemen, and haue conceyued so fantasticall opinion, as euer men of your calling did: but fith you proceede in your obftinate folly, and

wil needs guage all the Lands, and goods you haue, that you bee able to vanquishe my Wyue's Honest, and Chaste heart, I am contented, for the singuler credite which I repose in hir, to ioyne with you, and will pledge the poore lyuinge I haue for prooфе of mine Opinion, and shall accomplishe al other your requestes made here, before the maiesties of the Kinge and Queene. And therefore may it please your highnesse, sith this fond deuice can not be beaten out of their heads, to gieue Licence vnto thosse Noblemen, the Lords Vladislao and Alberto, (so were they called) to put in prooфе the mery conceipt of their disposed mindes (whereof they do so greatly bragge) and I by your good grace and fauoure, am content to agree to their demaundes: and wee, answere the Hungarians, do once agayne affirme the same which wee haue spoken." The king willing to haue them gyue ouer that strife, was intreated to the contrary by the Barons: whereupon the kinge perceyuinge their Follies, caused a decree of the bargayne to be put in writing, eyther Parties interchaungeably subscribing the same. Which done, they tooke their leaues. Afterwards, the two Hungarians began to put their enterprise in order and agreed betweene themselues, Alberto to bee the firste that shold aduenture vppon the Lady. And that within fixe Weekes after vpon his returne, the lord Vladislao shold proceede. These things concluded, and all Furnitures for their feuerall Iorneys disposed, the lord Alberto departed in good order, with two seruaunts directly trauayling to the castle of the Boeme Knight, where being arrined, hee lighted at an Inne of the towne adioyning to the Castle, and demaunding of the hoste, the Conditions of the lady, hee vnderstoode that shee was a very fayre Woman, and that hir honesty, and loue towards hir husbande farre excelled hir beauty. Which wordes nothing dismayede the Amorous Baron, but when hee had pulled of his Bootes, and richely arayed hymselfe, he repayred to the Castle, and knockinge at the Gates, gaue the Lady to vnderstand that he was come to see hir. She which was a curteous Gentlewoman, caused him to be brought in, and gently gaue him honourable intertayntment. The Baron greatly mused vppon the beauty, and goodlinesse of the Lady, singulaarily commanding hir honest order and Behauour. And beinge set down, the young

Gentleman sayd vnto hir: "Madame, mooued with the fame of your surpassing Beauty, which now I see to bee more excellent than Fame with hir swiftest Wyngs is able to cary: I am come from the Court to view and see if that were true, or whether lyinge Brutes had scattered their Vulgar talke in vayne: but finding the fame farre more fine and pure than erst I did expect, I craue Lycence of your Ladyship, to conceyue none offence of this my boulde, and rude attempt." And herewithall hee began to ioyne many trifling and vayne words, whych dalyinge Suters by heate of Lusty bloude bee wont to shoothe forth, to declare theym selues not to be Speachlesse, or Tongue tied. Which the Lady well espying speedily imagined into what Porte hys rotten Barke would arriue: wherefore in the ende when shee sawe his Shippe at Roade, began to enter in prety louinge talke, by little, and little to incourage his fond attempt. The Baron thinkinge hee had caught the Ele by the Tayle, not well practised in Cicero his schoole, ceased not fondly to contriue the time, by making hir beleue, that he was farre in loue. The Lady weary (God wote) of his fonde behauour, and amorous reas ons, and yet not to feeme scornfull, made him good countenaunce, in sutch wyfe as the Hungarian two or three dayes did nothing else but proceede in vayne Pursute, Shee perceyuing him to bee but a Hauke of the first Coate, deuysed to recompence hys Follies with sutch entertaynement, as during his life, he shoulde keepe the same in good remembraunce. Wherefore not long after, fayning as though his great wisedome, vttered by eloquent Talke, had subdued hir, shee sayd thus vnto him: "My Lord, the reas ons you produce, and your pleasaunt gesture in my house, haue so inchaunted mee, that impossible it is, but I must needes agree vnto your wyll: for where I neuer thought during lyfe, to stayne the purity of mariage Bed, and determined continually to preferue my selfe inuiolably for my Husbande: your noble grace, and curteous behauour, haue (I say) so bewitched mee, that ready I am to bee at your commaundement, humbly beseeching your honour to beware, that knowledge hereof may not come vnto myne Husband's eares, who is so fierce and cruell, and loueth me so dearely, as no doubt he will without further triall eyther him selfe kill me, or otherwise procure my

death: and to the intent none of my house may suspect our doings, I shall desire you to morrow in the morninge about nyne of the Clock, which is the accustomed time of your repayre hither, to come vnto my Castle, wherein when you be entred, speedily to mount vp to the Chaumber of the highest Tower, ouer the doore whereof, yee shall finde the armes of my Husband, entayled in Marble: and when you be entred in, to shut the Doore fast after you, and in the meane time I will wayte and prouyde, that none shall molest and trouble vs, and then we shall bestowe our felues for accomplishmente of that which your loue desireth." Nowe in very deede this Chaumber was a very strong Pryson ordayneid in auncient time by the Progenitours of that Territory, to Impryson, and punishe the Vassals, and Tenants of the same, for offences, and Crimes committed. The Baron hearynge this Lyberall offer of the Ladye, thinking that he had obteined the summe of al his ioy, so glad as if he had conquered a whole kingdome, the best contented man aliue, thanking the Lady for hir curteous answere, departed and retourned to his Inne. God knoweth vpon howe merry a Pinne the hearte of this young Baron was sette, and after he had liberally banketted his hoste and hostesse, pleasantly disposing himselfe to myrth and recreation, he wente to bed, where ioy so lightned his merry head, as no slepe at all could close his eyes, futch be the sauage pangs of those that aspyre to like delyghts as the best reclamer of the wildest hauk could neuer take more payne or deuise mo shiftes to Man the same for the better atchieuing of hir pray than dyd this braue Baron for brynging hys Enterprise to effect. The nexte day early in the morning hee rose, dresing himselfe with the sweete Perfumes, and puttinge on hys finest suite of Apparell, at the appointede hour hee went to the Castell, and so secretly as he could, accordinge to the Ladies instruction, hee conueyed himselfe vp into the Chaumber which hee founde open, and when he was entred, hee shut the same, the maner of the Doore was futch, as none within coulde open it without a Key, and besides the strong Locke, it hadde both barre and Bolt on the outside, wyth futch fasteninge as the Deuill himselfe being locked within, could not breake forth. The Lady whych wayted hard by for his comming, so soone as she perceyued that

the Doore was shut, stept vnto the same, and both double Locked the Doore, and also without she barred, and fast Bolted the same, caryng the Key away with hir. This Chamber was in the hyghest Tower of the House (as is before sayd) wherein was placed a Bedde wyth good Furniture, the Wyndow whereof was so high, that none coulde looke out wythout a Ladder. The other partes thereof were in good, and conuenient order, apt and meete for an honest Prys-
son. When the Lorde Alberto was within, hee sat downe, wayting (as the Iewes do for Meffias) when the Lady according to hir appoyn&ment shoulde come. And as he was in this expectation building castles in the Ayre, and deuising a thousand Chimeras in his braine, behold he heard one to open a little wicket that was in the doore of that Chamber, which was as straight, as scarcely able to receiue a loafe of bread, or cruse of Wyne, vsed to be fent to the prysioners. He thinkyng that it had ben the Lady, rose vp, and hearde the noyse of a lyttle girle, who looking in at the hole, thus sayd vnto him : " My Lord Alberto, the Lady Barbara my mistresse (for that was hir name) hath fent me thus to say vnto you : ' That for as much as you be come into this place, by countenaunce of Loue, to dispoyle hir of hir honour, shee hath imprysoned you like a theefe, accoordinge to your deserte, and purpofeth to make you suffer penance, equall to the measure of your offence. Wherefore so long as you shal remain in thys place, shee mindeth to force you to gaine your bread and drinke with the arte of spinning, as poore Women doe for gayne of theyr lyuinge, meanyng thereby to coole the heate of your lusty youth, and to make you taft the sorrow of sauce meete for them to assay, that go about to robbe Ladyes of theyr honour : she bad me lykewife to tell you, that the more yarne you spin, the greater shall be the abundance and delycacie of your fare, the greater payne you take to earne your foode, the more lyberall she will be in dystrybutyng of the same, otherwise (she sayeth) that you shall faste wyth Breade and Water.' Which determinate sentence shee hath decreed not to be infringed and broken for any kinde of sute or intreaty that you be able to make." When the maiden had spoken these Wordes, she shut the lyttle dore, and returned to hir Ladye, the Baron which thought that he had ben commen to a mariage, did eate nothing al the mornyng

before, bycause he thought to be enterteyned with better and daintier store of viandes, who nowe at those newes fared like one out of his wittes and stoode still so amazed, as though his leggs would haue fayled hym, and in one moment his Spyrites began to vanysh and hys force and breath forsoke hym, and fel downe vpon the Chamber flore, in futch wise as hee that had beheld hym would haue thought him rather dead than liuyng. In this stafe he was a great tyme, and afterwardes somewhat commynge to himselfe, he could not tel whether hee dreamed, or else that the Words were true, which the maiden had sayde vnto hym: In the end seeing, and beyng verely assured, that he was in a Pryson so sure as Bird in Cage, through disdayne and rage was like to dye or else to lose his wits, faring with himselfe of long time lyke a madde Man, and not knowing what to do, passed the rest of the Day in walking vppe and downe the Chaumber, rauing, stamping, staring, Cursynge and vsing Words of greatest Villarie, lamenting and bewailinge the time and day, that so like a beast and Brutylsh man, he gave the attempt to dispoyle the honesty of au other man's Wyfe. Then came to his mind the losse of all his Lands and Goods, which by the king's authority were put in comprimise, then the shame, the scorne, and rebuke whych hee shold receiue at other mens handes, beyonde measure vexed him: and reporte bruted in the Courte (for that it was impossible but the whole Worlde shold knowe it) so gryeuued hym, as his heart seemed to be strained with two sharp and biting Nailes: the Paynes whereof, forced hym to loose hys wyttes and vnderstandynge. In the myddes of whych Pangs furiously vauntyng vp and downe the Chaumber, hee espied by chaunce in a Corner, a Dystaffe furnyshed with good store of flaxe, and a spyndle hangyng thereupon: and ouercome wyth Choler and rage, hee was aboute to spoyle and break the same in pieces: but remembryng what a harde Weapon Necessitie is, hee stayed his wysedome, and albeit he hadde rather to haue contruyed hys leyture in Noble and Gentlemanlyke pastyme, yet rather than he would be idle he thought to referue that Instrument to auoyde the tedious lacke of honest and Familiar Company. When supper time was come, the mayden retourned agayne, who opening the Portall dore, saluted the Baron, and sayde: "My

Lord, my mistresse hath sent mee to vyfite your good Lordshyp, and to receiue at youre good Handes the effeete of your laboure, who hopeth that you haue sponne some substaunciall store of threede for earning of your Supper, whych beyng done, shall be readily brought vnto you." The Baron full of Rage, Furie, and felonious moode, if before he were fallen into choler, now by protestation of these words, seemed to transgresse the bounds of reason, and began to raile at the poore wench, scolding and chiding hir like a strumpet of the stews, faring as though he would haue beaten hir, or don hir some other mischiefe: but his moode was stayed from doyng any hurt. The poore Wench lessoned by her mistresse, in laughing wife sayd vnto him: "Why (my Lord) do you chafe and rage againste mee? Me thinks, you do me wrong to vse futch reprochful words, which am but a seruaunt, and bounde to the commaundement of my mistresse: Why sir, do you not know that a pursuaunt or messanger suffreth no paine or blame? The greatest Kyng or Emperour of the Worlde, receiuing defiaunce from a meaner Prynce, neuer vseth his ambassador with scolding Wordes, ne yet by villany or rebuke abuseth his person. Is it wisdome then for you, being a present prysoner, at the mercy of your kepers, in thys dishonorable forte to reuile me with disordred talke? But fir, leaue of your rages, and quiet your selfe for this present tyme, for my mistresse maruelleth much why you durst come (for al your Noble state) to giue attemptes to violate hir good name, which message shee requyred me to tell you, ouer and besides a desire shee hath to know whether by the Scyence of Spynning, you haue gained your meat for you feeme to kicke against the wynd, and beat Water in a morter, if you think from hence to goe before you haue earned a recompense for the meat which shal be givien you. Wherefore it is your lot paciently to suffer the penance of your fond attempt, which I pray you gently to sustaine, and think no scorn thereof hardely, for desperate men and hard aduentures must needes suffer the daungers thereunto belonging. This is the determinate sentence of my mistresse mynd, who fourdeth you no better fare than Bread and Water, if you can not shewe some pretty Spyndle full of yarne for signe of your good wyll at this prefent pynch of your distresse." The

Mayden feyng that hee was not dysposid to shewe some part of wylling mind to gaine his lyuing by that prefixed scyence shut the portall Doore, and went her way. The unhappy Baron (arryued thether in very yll tyme) that Nyght had Neyther Breade nor Broth, and therefore he fared accordynge to the Prouerbe : He that goeth to bed supperlesse, lyeth in his Bed restlesse, for during the whole night, no sleepe could fasten hys Eyes. Now as this Baron was clofed in pryon faste, to the Ladye tooke order, that secrely wyth great cheare hys Seruauntes should be interteyned, and his Horffe wyth fweete haye and good prouender well mainteined, all his furnitures, sumpture horfe and caryages conueyed within the Castle, where wanted nothyng for the stafe of futch a personage but onely Lyberty, makyng the host of the Inne belegue (wher the Lord harbored before) that he was returned into Hungarie. But now turne we to the Boeme knight, who knowynge that one of the two Hungarian Competitors, were departed the Court and ridden into Boeme, dyd still behold the quality of the inchaunted Image, wherein by the space of thre or foure Dayes, in whych time, the Baron made his greatest fute to his Ladie : he marked a certaine alteration of Coloure in the same, but afterwards returned to his Natvie forme: and feeing no greater tranformation, he was wel assured, that the Hungarian Baron was repulfed, and employed his Labor in vaine. Whereof the Boeme knight was exceedingly pleased and contented, bycause he was well assured, that his Wyfe had kept hir selfe ryghte pure and honest. Notwithstandyng hys Mynde was not wel settled, ne yet hys heart at rest, doubting that the lord Vladislao, which as yet was not departed the courte, would obtayne the thing, and acquite the faulte, which his Companion had committed. The impryfoned Baron which all this tyme had neither eaten nor dronken, nor in the night could sleepe, in the mornyng, after he had confidred his misaduenture, and well perceyued no remedy for him to goe forth, except hee obeyed the Ladie's heft, made of Necessity a Vertue, and applyed himselfe to learne to Spynne by force, which freedome and honour could neuer haue made him to do. Whereupon he toke the distaffe and beganne to Spynne. And albeyt that hee neuer Sponne in al hys Lyfe before, yet instructed by Necessity, so well as he could, he

drewe out his Threede, now small and then greate, and manye times of the meanest fort, but verye often broade, yl fauored, yll closed, and worse twisted, all oute of fourme and fashyon, that fundry tymes very heartely he laughed to himselfe, to see his cunning, but would haue made a cunning Woman spinner burst into Ten Thousand laughters, if she had ben there. Thus all the morning he spent in spynning, and when dynner came, his accustomed messenger, the mayden, repayred vnto him againe, and opening the wyndow demaunded of the Baron how his worke went foreward, and whether he were disposed to manifest the cause of hys comming into Boeme? Hee well beaten in the schoole of shame, vttered vnto the Maide the whole compact and bargayne made betweene him and his Companion, and the Boeme knyghte hir mayster, and afterwards shewed vnto hir his Spyndle ful of threde. The young Wenche smylyng at hys Woorke, sayd: "By Sainct Marie this is well done, you are worthy of victual for your hire: for now I well perceiue that Hunger forceth the Woulf oute of hir Denne. I conne you thanck, that like a Lord you can so puissantly gayne your lyuing. Wherefore proceeding in that which you haue begonne, I doubt not but shortly you will proue sutche a workeman, as my mistresse shall not neede to put oute hir flax to spinne (to hir great charge and coste) for making of hir smockes, but that the same may wel be don within hir own house, yea althoughe the same doe serue but for Kitchen Cloathes, for dreffer bordes, or cleanyng of hir Vessell before they bee fernes forth. And as your good deserts doe merite thankes for this your arte, now well begonne, euen so your new told tale of comming hyther, requyreh no lesse, for that you haue dysclosed the trouth." When she had spoken these Woords, she reached hym some store of meates for hys dynner, and bade hym fare well. When shee was returned vnto hir Lady, shee shewed vnto hir the Spyndle full of threde, and told hir therewythall the whole story of the compact betwene the knight Vlrico, and the two Hungarian barons. Whereof the Lady sore astonned, for the snares layd to entrappe hir, was notwithstanding wel contented, for that shee had so well forseene the same: but most of all reioyfed, that hir husband had so good opinion of hir honest lyfe. And before she would aduer-

tise hym of thosse euent, she purposed to attend the commyng of the lord Vladislao to whome she ment to do like penance for his carelesse bargayne and dishonest opinion, accordyngly as he deserued, maruellng very mutch that both the Barons, were so rash and presumptuous, daungerously (not knowing what kind of Woman she was) to put their Landes and goodes in hazard. But considering the Nature of diuers brainfick men, which passe not how carelesly they aduenture their gained goods, and inherited Lands, so they may atchieue the pray, after which they vainly hunt, for the preindice and hurt of other, she made no accompt of these attemptes, sith honest Matrones force not vpon the sutes, or vayne consumed time of lyght brained Cockscombs, that care not what fond cost or ill imployed houres they waste to annoy the good renoume and honest brutes of Women. But not to discourse from point to point the particulers of this intended iorney, this poore deceived Baron in short time proued a very good Spinner, by exercise whereof, he felt fitch solace, as not onely the same was a comfortable sporte for his captiue time, but also for want of better recreation, it seemed so ioyfull, as if he had bene pluming and feding his Hawke, or doing other sports belongyng to the honourable state of a Lord. Which his wel attriued labour, the Maiden recompensed with abundance of good and delycate meates. And although the Lady was many times requyred to vifite the Baron, yet she would neuer to that request consent. In whych tyme the knyght Vlrico ceased not continually to viewe and reuewe the state of his Image, which appeared styll to bee of one well coloured sorte, and although thys vse of hys was diuers times marked and seene of many, yet being earnestly demaunded the cause thereof hee would neuer disclose the same. Many conjectures thereof were made, but none could attayne the trouthe. And who would haue thought that a knight so wyse and prudente had worne within his purfse any inchaunted thyng? And albeyt the Kyng and Queene had intelligence of thys frequent practyse of the knight, yet they thought not mete for the priuate and secrete Mystery, to demaund the cause. One moneth and a halfe was passed now that the Lorde Alberto was departed the Court, and become a Castle knyghte and cunning Spynster: which made the

Lord Vladislao to muse, for that the promise made betweene them was broken, and hearde neyther by Letter or messenger what succeſſe he had receiued. After diuers thoughts imagyned in his mynde, he conceyued that his companion had happily enioyed the ende of his desired ioy, and had gathered the wyſhed fruiſts of the Lady, and drowned in the mayne Sea of his owne pleasures, was ouerwhelmed in the bottome of Obliuion: wherefore he determined to ſet forward on his iourney to giue onſet of his desired fortune: who without long delay for execution of his purpose, prepared all neceſſaries for that voyage, and mounted on horſebacke with two of his men, he iourneyed towards Boeme, and within a few daies after arryued at the Castle of the fayre and moſt honest Lady. And when hee was entred the Inne where the Lord Alberto was firſt lodged, he dilygently enquyred of him, and heard tell that he was returned into Hungarie many dayes before, whereof mutch maruellung, could not tel what to ſay or think. In the end purpoſing to put in profe the cauſe wherefore he was departed out of Hungarie, after dilygent ſearche of the maners of the Lady, he vnderſtoode by general voyce, that ſhe was without comparifon the honeſteſt, wifeſt, gentleſt, and comeleyeſt Lady within the whole Countrey of Boeme. Incontinently the Lady was aduertised of the arriuall of this Baron, and knowing his meſſage, ſhe determyned to paye him alſo wyth that Money whych ſhe had already coyned for the other. The next Day the Baron went vnto the Castle, and knocking at the Gate, ſent in woord how that he was come from the Court of king Mathie, to viſite and ſalute the Lady of that Castle: and as ſhe did entertayne the firſt Baron in curteous guife, and with louing Countenaunce, euen ſo the dyd the ſecond, who thought thereby that he had attayned by that plefaunt entertaynment, the game which he hunted. And diſcourſing vpon dyuers matters, the lady ſhewed hir ſelfe a plefaunt and Familyar Gentlewoman, whych made the Baron to thynk that in ſhort tyme he ſhould wyn the prycē for which he came. Notwithſtanding, at the fyrfte brunt he would not by any meaneſ descend to any particularity of his purpoſe, but hys Words ran general, which were, that hearynge tell of the fame of hir Beauty, good grace and comelineſſe, by hauiing

occasion to repayre into Boeme to doe certayne his affaires, he thought it labor wel spent to ride some portion of his iourney, though it were besides the way, to dygreffe to do reuerence vnto hir, whom fame aduaunced aboue the Skyes: and thus passing his first visitation he returned againe to his lodging. The lady when the Baron was gone from hir Castle, was rapt into a rage, greatlye offended that those two Hungarian Lordes so presumptuously had bended themselues lyke common Theeues to wander and roue the Countreys, not onely to robbe and spoyle hir of hir honour, but also to bryng hir in displeasure of hir husband, and thereby into the Daunger and Peryll of Death. By reason of which rage (not without cause conceived) she caused an other Chamber to be made ready, next Wall to the other Baron that was become futch a notable Spynster, and vpon the nexte returne of the Lord Vladislao, she receiued him with no lesse good entertainement than before, and when Nyght came, caused him to be lodged in hir owne houfe in the Chamber prepared as before, where he slept not very soundly all that Night, through the continuall remembraunce of hys Ladies beauty. Next morning he perceiued himself to be locked fast in a Pryfon. And when he had made him readye, thinking to descend to bid the Lady good Morrow, seeking meanes to vnlock the Doore, and perceiuing that he could not, he stooode styll in a dumpe. And as hee was thus standyng, maruelling the cause of his shuttyng in so fast, the maiden repaired to the hole of the dore, giuing his honor an vnaccustomed salutation, which was that hir mistrefesse commaunded hir to giue him to vnderstand, that if hee had any lust or appetyte to his breakfast, or if he minded from thenceforth to ease his hunger or conteine Lyfe, that he should giue him selfe to learne to reele yarne. And for that purpose she willed him to looke in futch a corner of the Chamber, and he should find certaine spindles of thred, and an instrument to winde his yarn vpon. "Wherefore" (quod she) "apply your self thereunto, and loose no time." He that had that tyme beholden the Baron in the Face, would haue thought that hee had seene rather a Marble stome, than the figure of a man. But conuerting his could conceyued moode, into mad anger, he fell into ten times more displeasure

with himselfe, than is before described by the other Baron. But seeinge that his mad behauour, and beastly vface was bestowed in vayne, the next day he began to Reele. The Lady afterwardeſ when ſhee had intelligence of the good, and gaynefull Spinning of the Lord Alberto, and the wel diſpoſed, and towardly Reeling of the Lord Vladilao, greatly reioyced for makinge of ſutche two Notable Workemen, whose workemanſhip exceeded the labours of them that had been Appreſtyzes to the Occupation ſeuene Yeares togeather. Sutche bee the apt and ready Wyts of the Souldiers of Loue: wherein I would wiſhe all Cupides Dearlings to be nouſled and applied in their youthly time: then no doubt their paſſions woule appeafe, and rages affuage, and would giue ouer bolde attempts, for which they haue no thancke of the chafe and honest. And to thyſ goodly ſight the Lady brought the Seruaunts of theſe noblemen, willing them to marke and beholde the diligēce of their Mayſters, and to imitate the induſtry of their gallant exer- cise, who neuer attayned meate before by labour they had gayned the fame. Which done, ſhee made them take their Horſe, and Furnitures of their Lords, and to depart: otherwiſe if by violence they refiſted, ſhe would cauſe their choller to be cauſmed with ſutche like ſeruice as they ſaw their Lordes doe before their Eyes. The Seruaunts ſeeing no remedy, but muſt needes depart, tooke their leaue. Afterwardeſ ſhe ſent one of hir Seruaunts in poaſt to the Courte, to aduertife hir husband of all that which chaunced. The Boeme knight receyuinge theſe good newes, declared the fame vnto the King and Queene, and recited the whole ſtory of the two Hungarian Barons, accorſingly as the tenor of his Wyues letters diſ purport. The Princes ſtoode ſtill in great admiration, and highly commended the wiſedome of the Lady, eſteeming hir for a very ſage and politiſche woman. Afterwardeſ the knight Vlrico humbly beſougheſ the king for execution of his decree and perſonaunce of the Bargayne. Whereupon the king aſſembled his counſell, and required euery of them to faye their minde. Upon the deliberation whereof, the Lord Chauncellor of the King- dome, with two Counſellers, were ſent to the Caſtle of the Boeme knight, to enquire, and leaſne the proceſſe and doinges of the two Lordes, who diligenty accomplishmented the kinge's commaundement.

And hauinge examined the Lady and hir mayden with other of the house, and the barons also, whom a little before the arriuall of these Commissioners, the Lady had caused to be put together, that by Spinning and Reeling they might comfort one another. When the Lord Chauncellor had framed and digested in order the whole discourse of this history, returned to the Court where the king and Queene, with the Pieres and Noblemen of his kingdome, caused the acts of the same to be diuulged and bruted abroade, and after much talk, and discourse of the performaunce of this compact, pro, and contra, the Queene taking the Ladie's part, and fauoring the knight, the kinge gaue sentence that sir Ulrico should wholly possesse the landes and goods of the two Barons to him, and to his Heyres for euer, and that the Barons should be banished the kingdomes of Hungary and Boeme, neuer to returne vpon Payne of death. This sentence was put in execution, and the vnfortunat Barons exiled, which specially to thosse that were of their consanguinity and bloud, seemed to feuere, and rigorous. Neuerthelesse the couenaunt being most playne and evident to most men, the same seemed to bee pronounced with greate Iustice and equity, for example in time to come, to lesson rash wits how they iudge and deeeme so indifferently of Womens behaviours, amongs whom no doubt there bee both good and bad as there bee of men. Afterwards the 2 princes sent for the Lady to the Court, who there was courteously intertayned, and for this hir wife and polliticke fact had in great admiration. The Queene then appoynted hir to be one of hir women of honor, and esteemeed hir very deereley. The knight also daily grew to great promotion well beloued and fauored of the king, who with his lady long time liued in greate ioy and felicity, not forgetting the cunning Pollacco, that made him the image and likenes of his wife: whose frendship and labor he rewarded with money, and other Benefits very liberally.

THE TWENTY-NINTH NOUELL.

*Dom Diego a Gentleman of Spayne fell in loue with fayre Gineura, and she with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied Dom Diego his happy choyse, was by default of light credit on hir part interrupted. He constant of mynde, fell into despayre, and abandoninge all his frends and liuing, repayred to the Pyrene Moun-
taynes, where he led a sauage lyfe for certayne moneths, and after-
wardes knowne by one of hys freendes, was (by marueylous Circum-
staunce) reconciled to hys froward mistresse, and maryed.*

MENS mischaunces occurring on the brunts of dyuers Tragical fortunes, albeit vpon their first taste of bitternesse, they fauor of a certayne kinde of lothsome relish, yet vnder the Rynde of that vnsauerouse Sap, doth lurke a sweeter honnye, than sweetenesse it selfe, for the fruit that the Posterity may gather, and learne by others hurts, how they may loathe, and shun the like. But bicause all thinges haue their seasons, and euery thynge is not conuenient for all Times, and Places, I purpose now to shew a notable example of a vayne and superstitious Louer, that abandoned his liuing and friendes, to become a Sauage Desert man. Which History resembleth in a maner a Tragical Comedy, comprehending the very same matter and Argument, wherewyth the greatest part of the sottishe forte Arme themselues to couer and defend their Follies. It is red and seene to often by common custome, and therefore needelesse heere to display what rage doth gouerne, and headlong hale fonde and licentious youth (conducted by the pangue of loue, if the same be not moderated by reason, and cooled with sacred Lessons) euen from the cradle to more murture and riper age. For the Tiranny of Loue amonges all the deadly Foes that vexe and affliet our mindes, glorieth of his force, vaunting hymselfe able to chaunge the proper nature of things, be they neuer so sounde and perfect: who to make them like his lustes, transformeth himselfe into a substaunce qualified diuersly, the better to intrap sutch as be giuen to his vanities. But hauing auouched so many examples before, I am content for this present to tell the

discourse of two persons, chaunced not long fithens in Catheloigne. Of a Gentleman that for his constancy declared two extremities in himselfe of loue and folly. And of a Gentlewoman so fickle and inconstant, as loue and they which wayted on him, be disordered, for the trustleffe grounde whereupon futch foundation of seruice is layed, which yee shall easely conceiue by well viewing the difference of these twayne: whom I meane to summon to the lists, by the blast of this sounding trump. And thus the same beginneth. Not long after that the victorious and Noble Prynce, younge Ferdinandus, the Sonne of Alphonsus Kynge of Aragon was deade, Lewes the Twelfth, that tyme being Frenche king, vpon, the Marches of Catheloigne, betwene Barcelona, and the Moun-
taynes, there was a good Lady then a Wyddow, which had bene the Wyfe of an excellant and Noble knight of the Countrey, by whom she hadde left one only Daughter, which was so carefully brought vp by the mother as nothinge was to deare or hard to bee brought to passe for hir desire, thinking that a creature so Noble and perfect, could not be trayned vp to delicately. Now besides hir incomparable furniture of beauty, this Gentlewoman was adorned with Hayre so fayre, curle, and Yeallow, as the new fined golde was not matchable to the shining locks of this tender Infant, who therefore was commonly called Gineura la Blonde. Halfe adaye's iorney from the house of this Wyddow, lay the lands of another Lady a Wydow also, that was very rich, and so wel allied as any in all the Land. This Lady had a Sonne, whom she caused to be trayned vp so well in Armes and good letters, as in other honest Exercises proper and mete for a Gentleman and great Lorde, for which respect shee had sent him to Barcelona the chyefe City of all the Countrey of Catheloigne. Senior Dom Diego, (for so was the Sonne of that Wydow called) profited so well in all thynges, that when hee was 18 yeares of age, there was no Gentleman of his degree, that did excell him, ne yet was able to approche vnto his Perfections and commendable Behauiour. A thing that did so well content the good Lady his mother as she could not tell what countenaunce to keepe to couer hir ioy. A vice very common to fond and foolish mothers, who flatter themselues with a shadowed hope of the future goodneffe of their children, which many times

doth more hurt to that wanton and wilfull age, than profit or aduaancement. The persuation also of futch towardnesse, full oft doth blinde the Spirites of Youth, as the Faults which follow the same bee farre more vile than before they were: whereby the first Table (made in his first coloures) of that imagined vertue, can take no force or perfection, and so by incurring fundry mishaps the Parent and Chylde commonly escape not without equall blame. To come agayne therefore to our discourse: It chaunced in that tyme that (the Catholike Kyng deceased) Phillippe of Austrich which Succeeded him as Heyre, passing through Fraunce came into Spayne to bee Inuested, and take Posseffion of all hys Seigniories, and Kyngdomes: which knownen to the Cittyzens of Barcelona, they determined to receiue hym with futch Pompe, Magnificence, and Honor, as duely appertaineth to the greatness and maiesty of so great a Prince, as is the sonne of the Romane Emperour. And amonges other thinges they prepared a Triumphe at the Tilt, where none was suffred to enter the lists, but yong Gentlemen, futch as neuer yet had followed armes. Amongs whom Don Diego as the Nobleſt person was chofen chiefe of one part. The Archduke then come to Barcelona after the receyued honors and Ceremonies, accustomed for futch entartayntment, to gratifie his Subiects, and to fee the brauery of the yong Spanish Nobility in armes, would place himſelfe vpon the ſcaffolde to iudge the courſes and valiance of the runners. In that magnifique and Princely conflict, all mens eyes were bent vpon Dom Diego, who courſe by courſe made hys aduerſaries to feele the force of his armes, his manhoode, and dexterity, on horsebacke, and caused them to muse vpon his toward valiance in time to come, whose noble Ghefts then acquired the victory of the Campe on his ſide. Which mooued King Phillip to ſay, that in all his life he neuer ſaw triumph better handled, and that the ſame ſeemed rather a battell of ſtrong and hardy men, than an exercife of yong Gentlemen neuer wonted to ſupport the deedes of armes, and trauayle of warfare. For which cauſe calling Dom Diego before him he ſayd: "God graunt (yong Gentleman) that your ende agree with your good beginnings and hardy ſhocke of prooſe done this day. In memory whereof I will this night that ye do your watch, for I meane to

morrow (by God's affiance) to dub you Knight." The yong Gentleman blushing for shame, vpon his knees kisst the Prince's hands, thanking him most humbly of the honor and fauor which it pleased his maiesty to do to him, vowing and promising to do so wel in time to come, as no man should be deceyued of their conceyued opinion, nor the king frustrate of his seruice, which was one of his most obedient Vassals and subiects. So the next day he was made knight, and receyued the collar of the order at the hands of king Phillip, who after the departure of his prince which tooke his iorney into Castille, retired to his owne landes and house more to see his mother, whom long time before he had not seene, than for desire of pleasure that be in fieldes, which notwithstanding he exercised so wel as in end he perceyued refiaunce in townes and Citties, to be "an imprifonment in respect of that he felt in Countrey. As the Poets whilome fayned Loue to shooote his Arrowes amid the Woods, Forrests, fertile Fields, Sea coasts, Shores of great Ryuers, and Fountayne brinkes, and also vpon the tops of Huge, and hygh Mountaynes at the pursute of the sundry sorted Nymphes, and fieldish Dimigods, deeming the same to bee a meane of liberty to follow Loue's tract without suspition, voyde of company and lothsome cries of Citties, where Iealousie, Enuy, false report, and ill Opinion of all things, haue pitched their Camp, and raysed their Tents. And contrariwise franckly and wythout dissimulation in the fieldes, the Freende discouering his passion to his Mistresse, they enioy the pleasure of hunting, the naturall musicke of Byrds and sometimes in pleasaunt Herbers compassed with the murmur of some running Brookes, they communicate their Thoughts, beautifie the accorde and vnity of Louers, and make the place famous for the first witnesse of their amorous acquaintaunce. In like manner thrice, and foure times blest be they there, who leeuing the vnquiet toyle that ordinarily doth chaunce to them that abyde in Citties, doe render duety of their studies to the Muses wherenvnto they be most Addicted. Now Dom Diego at his owne house loued and cherished of his mother, reuerenced and obeyed of hys Subiects after he had imployed some time at his study, had none other ordinary pleasure but in rousing the Deere, hunting the wylde Bore, run the Hare, sometimes to fly at the Hearon, or fearful

Partrich alongs the fields, Forests, Ponds, and steepe Mountaynes. It came to passe one day, as he Hunted the wylde Mountayne Goate, which he had dislodged vpon the Hill top, he espied an olde Hart that his Dogges had found, who so ioyfull as was possible of that good lucke, followed the course of that swift, and fearefull beast. But (futch was his Fortune) the Dogges lost the foote of that pray, and he his men: for being horsed of purpose, vpon a fayre Iennet, could not be followed, and in ende loosinge the sight of the Deere, was so farre feuered from company, as he was vtterly ignoraunt which way to take. And that which grieued him moste was his Horse out of Breath scarce able to goe a false Gallop. For which cause he put his horne to his mouth, and blew so lounde as he could: but his men were fo farre of, as they could not here him. The young Gentleman being in this distresse, could not tell what to doe, but to returne backe, wherein he was more deceyued than before, for thinkinge to take the way home to hys Castle, wanded still further of from the same. And trotting thus a long tyme, he spied a Castle Situated vpon a little Hill, whereby he knew himselfe far from his owne house. Neuerthelesse hearing a certayne noyse of Hunters, thinking they had bene his People, resorted to the same, who in deede were the Seruaunts of the Mother of Gineura with the golden Locks, which in company of their Mistresse had hunted the Hare. Dom Diego, when he drue neere to the cry of the Hounds, saw right well that hee was deceyued. At what tyme Night approched, and the Shadowes darkening the Earth, by reason of the Sunnes departure, began to Cloth the Heauens with a Browne and misty Mantell. When the Mother of Gineura saw the knight which Rode a soft pace, for that his Horsse was tired, and could trauayle no longer, and knowing by his outward apperance that he was some great Lord, and ridden out of his way, sent one of hir men to knowe what he was, who returned agayne with futch aunswere as shee desired. The Lady ioyfull to entertayne a Gentleman so excellent and famous, one of hir next neighbors, went forwarde to bid hym welcome, which she did with so great curtefy as the Knight sayd vnto hir: "Madame, I thinke that fortune hath done me this fauour, by setting me out of the way, to proue your

curtesie and gentle entartayntment, and to receyue this ioy by visiting your house, whereof I trust in time to come to be so perfect a frend, as my predeceffors heretofore haue bene." "Sir," sayd the Lady, "if happynesse may be attributed to them, that most doe gayne, I thincke my selfe better fauored than you, for that it is my chaunce to lodge and entartayne him, that is the worthiest person and best beloued in all Catheloigne." The Gentleman blushing at that prayse, sayd nothing els, but that affection forced men so to speake of his vertues, notwithstandinge sutch as hee was, he vowed from thenceforth his seruice to hir and all hir Houshold. Gineura desirous not to bee flacke in curtesie, sayd that he should not so do, except she were partaker of some part of that, which the knight so liberally had offered to the whole Family of hir Mother. The Gentleman which till that time tooke no heede to the deuine Beauty of the Gentlewoman, beholding hir at his pleasure, was so astoونned, as hee could not tell what to aunswere, his eyes were so fixed vpon hir, spendinge his lookes in contemplation of that freshe hew, stayned with a red Vermilion, vpon the Alabaster and fayre colour of hir cleare and beautifull face. And for the imbelishing of that naturall perfection, the attire vpon hir head was so couenable and proper, as it seemed the same day shee had Looked for the comming of him, that afterwardes indured so mucht for hir sake. For hir head was Adorned with a Garlante of Floures, interlaced wyth hir Golden, and Enamiled hayre, which gorgeously couered some part of hir Shoulders, disparcled, and hanging down some tyme ouer hir passing fayre Foreheade, somewhyles vpon hir ruddy Cheeke, as the Sweete, and Pleasaunt windy Breath dyd mooue them to, and fro: Yee shiould haue seene hir wauering and crisped tresses disposed with so good grace, and comelyneffe, as a man would haue thought that Loue and the three Graces coulde not tell els where to harbor themselues, but in that riche and delectable place of pleasure, in gorgeous wife laced and imbraudred. Vpon hir Eares did hang two Sumptuous and Riche orientall Pearles, which to the artificiall order of hir hayre added a certen splendent brightnes. And he that had beholden the shining and large Forehead of that Nymph which Gallantly was beset with a Diamonde of inestimable price

and value, chased with a tresse of Golde made in form of little Starres, would haue thought that he had feene a Rancke of the twinckeling Planettes, fixed in the Firmament in the hottest time of Sommer, when that fayre season discouereth the order of his glittering Cloudes. In lyke maner the sparkeling eyes of the fayre Gentlewoman, adorned with a stately vaulte with two Archers, equally by euen spaces distin&t, and deuided, stayned with the Ebene Indian tree, did so well set forth their Brightnesse, as the eyes of them that stayed their lookes at Noone daye's directly vpon the Sunne, could no more be dazeled and offended, than those were that did contemplate those two flaminge Starres, which were in force able throughly to pierce euen the Bottome of the inward partes. The Nose well fourmed, iuſtly placed in the Amiable valley of the Vysage, by equall conformity Diftinguished the two Cheekes, stayned wyth a pure Carnation, reſemblinge two lyttle Apples that were arryued to the due time of their maturity and ripenesse. And then hir Coralline mouth, through which breathing, iffued out a breath more foote and fauorous than Ambre, Muske, or other Aromaticall Perfume, that euer the sweete Soyle of Arabie brought forth. She fometime vncloſing the doore of hir Lips, discouered two rancke of Pearles, fo finely blanched, as the pureſt Orient would blushe, if it were compared with the Beauty of thys incomparable whiteneſſe. But hee that will take vpon hym to ſpeakē of all hir inspeakable Beauty, may make his vaunte that he hath feene all the greatest perfections that euer dame Nature wrought. Now to come a little lower, on this freshe Diana appeared a Neck, that furmountēd the Blaunch colour of Mylke, were it neuer fo excellent white, and hir Stomacke ſome-what mounting by the two Pomels, and firme Teates of hir Breasts ſeparated in equal diſtaunce, was couered wyth a vayle, fo loſe, and fine, as thos two little prety Mountaynes might eaſily be Diſcried, to moue, and remoue, according to the affection that roſe in the centre of that modeſt, and sober Pucelle's mynde: who ouer, and beſides all thys, had ſutche a pleaſaunt Countenaunce, and ioyefull cheere, as hir Beauty more than wonderfull, rendred hir not fo woorthy to be ferued, and loued, as hir natural good-nesſe, and diſpoſed curteſie appearing in hir Face, and hir excel-

lent entertainement and comely Grace to all indifferently. This was not to imitate the maner of the most parte of our fayre Ladies, and Gentlewomen, who (mooued wyth what Opinion I know not) be so disdaynefull, as almost theyr name causeth discontentment, and breedeth in them great imperfection. And who by thinking to appeare more braue, and fine, by to mutch squeymishe dealing, doe offuscate and darken with folly their exterior Beauty, blotting, and defacing that which beauty maketh amiable, and worthy of honor. I leaue you now to consider wheather Dom Deigo had occasion to Forgo his Speach, and to bee bereft of Senfe, being liuely assayled with one so well armed as Gineura was withir Graces and Honesty: who no lesse abashed with the Port, Countenaunce, sweete talk, and stately Behauour of the knight, which she vewed to be in him by stealing lookes, felt a motion (not wonted or accustomed) in hir tender heart, that made hir to chaunge color, and by like occasion speachleffe: an ordinary custome in them that be surprised with the malady of loue to lose the vse of speach where the same is most needfull to gieue the intier charge in the heart, which not able to support and beare the burden of so many passions, departeth some portion to the eyes, as to the faythful messengers of the mynde's secret conceipts, which tormented beyond measure, and burninge with affection, causeth sometimes the Humor to gushe out in that parte that discouered the first assault, and bred the cause of that Feuer, which frighted the hearts of those two yong persons, not knowing well what the same might be. When they were come to the Castle, and dismounted from their Horfies, many Welcomes and Gratulations were made to the knight, which yelded more wood to the fire, and liuely touched the yong Gentleman, who was so outraged with loue, as almost he had no minde of himselfe, and rapt by litle, and little, was so intoxicated with an Amorous passion, as all other thoughtes were lothsome, and Ioye displeasaunt in respect of the fauourable Martirdome which hee suffered by thinking of his fayre and gentle Gineura. Thus the knight which in the morning disposed him selfe to pursue the Hart, was in heart so attached, as at euening he was become a Seruaunt, yea and futch a Slaue, as that voluntary seruitude wholly dispossessed him from his former

Freedome. These be the fruictes also of Folly, inuegling the lookes of men, that launch themselfues with eyes shut into the Gulfe of despayre which in ende doth cause the ruin and ouerthrow of him, that yeldeth thereunto. Loue proceedeth neuer but of opinion: so likewise the ill order of thosse that bee afflicted with that Paffion, ryseth not elswhere, but by the fond persuasione which they conceiyue, to bee Blamed, Despised, and deceyued of the thing beloued: where if they measured that passion according to his valor, they would make no more accoumpt of that which doth torment them, than they do of their health, honor, and life, which loue for their great seruice and labor deludeth them, and recompenseth another with that for which the foolish Louer employeth thys trauel, which at length doth haste despaire, and ende more than desperate, when an other enioy that, for which hee hath so longe time beate the Bushes. During the time that supper was preapyng, the Lady sente hir men to seeke the huntefmen of Dom Diego, to gyue them knowledge where he was become, and thereof to certify his mother, who when she heard tell that her sonne was lodged there, was very glad beyng a ryght good fryend and very familiar Neighbor with the Lady, the hostesse of Dom Diego. The Gentleman at supper after he had tasted the feruent heate that broyled in his Minde, coulde eate little meate, beinge satisfied with the feeding diete of his Amorous eyes, which without any maner of Iealousie, distributed their nourishment to the heart, who sat very soberly, priuily throwing his secretly Prickes, with louely, and wanton lookes, vpon the heart of the fayre Lady, which for hir part spared not to render vsury of rolling regardes, whereof he was so sparing, as almost he durst not lift vp his eyes for dazeling of them. After Supper, the knight bidding the mother and Daughter good night, went to Bed, where in stede of sleepe, he fell to fighinge and imageninge a thoufande diuers deuises, fantasiyng like number of follies, sutch as they doe whose Braynes be fraught loue. "Alas," (sayde hee) "what meaneth it, that alwayes I haue lyued in so great liberty, and nowe doe feele my self attached with sutch bondage as I cannot expresse whose effects neuertheleſſe be fastned in me? Haue I hunted to be taken? Came I from my houſe in liberty, to be

shut vp in Pryson, and do not know wheather I shall be receyued, or being receyued haue intertayntment, according to desert? Ah Gineura, I would to God, that thy Beauty did pricke mee no worffe, than the tree whereof thou takest thy name, is sharp in touching, and bitter to them that taste it. Truely I esteeme my comming hither happy (for all the Passioun that I indure) fith the purchase of a grieve so lucky doth qualify the ioy, that made me to wander thus ouer frankly. Ah Fayre amonges the Fayrest, truely the fearefull Beast which with the bloudy Hare Houndes was torne in pieces, is not more Martired, than my heart deuided in Opinions vpon thyne Affection. And what doe I know if thou louest an other more worthy to bee Fauoured of thee than thy poore Dom Diego. But it is impossible that any can approche the sincerity that I feele in my heart, determining rather to iindure death, than to serue other but fayre and golden Gineura: therefore my loyalty receyuing no comparisyon, cannot bee matched in man sufficient (for respect of the fame) to be called seruaunt of thine excellency. Now come what shal, by meanes of this, I am assured that so long as Dom Diego liueth, his heart shal receyue none other impression or desire, but that which inciteth him to loue, serue, and honor the fairest creature at thys day within the compasse of Spayne." Resolued hereupon, sweating, laboring, and trauelling upon the framing of his loue, he founde nothing more expedient than to tel hir his passion, and let hir vnderstand the good wil that he had to do hir seruice, and to pray hir to accept hym for futch, as from that time forth would execute nothing but under the title of hir good name. On th'other side Gineura could not close hir eyes, and knew not the cause almost that so impeached hir of sleepe, wherefore now tossing on th'one side, and then turning to the other, in hir rich and goodly Bed, fantasied no fewer deuises than passionated Dom Diego did. In th'end she concluded, that if the knight shewed hir any euident signe, or opened by word of mouth any Speach of loue and seruice, she would not refuse to do the like to him. Thus paſſed the night in thoughts, fighes, and wishes betwene these 2 apprentices of the thing, whereof they that be learners, shal foone attayne the experiance, and they that follow the occupation throughly, in short time be their crafts

maisters. The next day the knight would depart so soone as he was vp: but the good widow, imbracing the personage and good order of the knyght in hir heart, more than any other that she had seene of long time, intreated him so earnestly to tarry as he which loued better to obey hir request then to depart, although fayned the contrary, in the end appeared to be vanquished vpon the great importunity of the Lady. Al that morning the Mother and the Daughter passed the time with Dom Deigo in great talke of common matters. But he was then more astonned and inamored than the night before, in sutch wife as many times he aunswereſſe so vnaptly to their demaunds, as it was easilly perceiued that his minde was mutch disquieted with ſome thing, that only did poſſeſſe the force and vehemence of the fame: notwithstanding the Lady imputed that to the shamefaſtneſſe of the Gentleman, and to his ſimplicity, which had not greatly frequented the company of Ladies. When dinner time was come, they were ſerued with ſutch great fare and fundry delicates accordingly as with hir hart ſhe wyſhed to intertwain the young Lord, to the intent from that time forth, he might more willinglye make repaire to hir houſe. After dinner he rendred thanks to his hofteſſe for his good cheare and entertainment that he had receiued, affuring hir, that all the dayes of his Life he would imploymēt himſelfe to recompence hir curteſy, and with all duety and indeuor to acknowledge that fauor. And hauing taken his leaue of the mother, he went to the Damofell, to hir I ſay, that had ſo fore wounded his hearte who already was ſo deeply grauen in his mind, as the marke remained there for euer, taking leaue of hir, kiffed hir handes, and thinking verily to exprefſe that whereupon hee imagined all the Nyghte, his Tongue and Wits were ſo tyed and rapt, as the Gentlewoman perfectly perceiued this alteration, whereat ſhe was no whit discontented and therefore all bluſhyng, ſayde vnto him: "I pray to God fir, to eafe and comfort your gryefe, as you leaue vs desirous and glad, long to enioy your company." "Truely Gentlewoman," (aunswereſſe the Knyght) "I think my ſelfe more than happy, to heare that wyſh proceede from ſutch a one as you be, and ſpecially for the deſire whych you ſay you haue of my preſence, whych ſhall be euer readye

to doe that whych it shall please you to commaunde." The Gentlewoman bashfull for that offer, thanked hym verye heartilye praying him wyth sweete and smilinge Countenance, not to forget the waye to come to visite them, beyng wel assured, that hir mother would be very glad thereof. "And for mine owne part," (quod she) "I shall thinke my self happy to be partaker of the pleasure and great amity that is betwene our two houes." After great reurence and leaue taken between them, Dom Diego returned home, where he tolde his mother of the good interteynment made him, and of the great honesty of the Lady hys hostesse: "Wherfore madam," (quod he to hys Mother) "I am desyrous (if it be your pleasure) to let them know how much their bountifull hospitallity hath tied me to them, and what desire I haue to recompence the same. I am therefore wyllyng to bydde them hyther, and to make them so good cheare, as wyth all theyr Hearte they made me when I was wyth them." The Lady whych was the assured fryende of the Mother of Gineura, lyked well the aduyse of hir sonne, and tolde him that they shoulde bee welcome, for the aunciente amity of long time betwene them, who was wont many times to visit one an other. Dom Diego vpon his mother's words, sent to intreat the Lady and fayr Gineura, that it woulde please them to do him the honour to come into his houe: to which request she so willingly yelded, as he was desirous to bid them. At the appointed day Dom Diego fought al meanes possible honourably to receyue them: In meates whereof there was no want, in Instruments of all sortes, Mummeries, Morefcoes, and a thousand other pastymes, whereby he declared his good bringing vp, the gentlenesse of his Spyryte, and the desire that he had to appeare futch one as he was, before hir, which had already the full possession of his liberty. And bicause he would not faile to accomplayshe the perfection of his intent, hee invyted all the Gentlemen and Gentlewomen that were his neighbours. I will not here describe the mooste part of the prouision for that feast, nor the diuersty of Meates, or the delycate kyndes of Wines. It shall suffise mee to tell that after dynner they daunced, where the knight tooke his mistresse by the hand who was so glad to see hir

selfe so aduanced, as he was content to be so neare hir, that was the sweete torment and vnspeakable paffion of his mynd, whych hee began to discouer vnto hir in this wyfe: "Mistresse Gineura I have ben alwayes of this Minde, that Musike hath a certeine secrete hydden vertue (which wel can not be expressed) to reuiue the thoughts and cogitations of man, be he neuer so mornfull and pensiue, forcing him to vtter some outward reioyse: I speake it by my self, for that I liue in extreme anguish and payne, that al the ioy of the World seemeth vnto mee displeasaunt, care, and disquietnesse: and neuerthelesse my paffion, agreeing with the plaintife voice of the Instrument, doth reioyce and conceiue comforde, as well to heare insensible thinges conformable to my desires as also to see my self so neere vnto hir, that hath the salue to ease my payne, to discharge my diseafe, and to depryue my Mynd from all gryefs. In like maner reasoun it is, that shee hir selfe do remedy my disease, of whom I receiued the prycke, and which is the first foundation of all mine eul." "I can not tell" (sayd the Gentlewoman) what disease it is you speak of, for I shoulde bee very vnkinde to gieue him occasion of grieve, that doth make vs this great cheere." "Ah Lady myne," (sayd the knight, fetching a figh from the bottome of his heart,) "the intertaynement that I receyue by the continuall contemplation of your diuine Beauties, and the vnspeakable brightnesse of those two Beames, which twinkle in your Face, bee they that happily doe vex me, and make me drink this Cup of bitternesse, wherein notwithstanding I finde sutch sweetenesse as al the Heauenly Drincke called Ambrosia, fayned by the Poets, is but Gall in respect of that which I taste in mynde, feeling my deuotion so bent to do you seruice, as onely Death shall vnty the knot wherewith voluntarily I Knyt my selfe to be your Seruaunt for euer, and if it so please you, your Faythfull, and Loyall Freende, and Husbande." The yonge Damosell not wonted for to heare sutch Songs, did chaunge hir coloure at least three or foure times, and neuerthelesse fayned a little angre of that which did content hir most: and yet not so sharpe, but that the Gentleman perceyued well enough, that shee was touched at the quicke, and also that he was accepted into hir

good Grace and Fauoure. And therefore hee continued styll hys talke, all that time after dinner, vntill the Mayden made hym thys aunswere: "Sir, I will nowe confess that grieve may couer alteration of affections proceeding of Loue. For although I had determined to dissemble that which I thinke, yet there is a thinge in my Mynde (which I can not name) that gouerneth mee so farre from my proper Deuises, and Conceyptes, as I am constrayned to doe that which this seconde Inspiration leadeth mee vnto, and forceth my Mynde to receyue an Impression: but what will be the ende thereof, as yet I knowe not. Notwythstandinge, repofinge mee in youre Vertue, and Honesty, and acknowledgynge youre merite, I thincke my selfe happy to haue sutch one for my Freende, that is so Fayre and comely a knight, and for sutch I doe accept you vntill you haue obtayned of the Lady, my Mother, the seconde poynct, which may accomplish that which is mooste defyred of them, that for vertue's sake do loue. And but for that you shall bee none otherwyfe fauoured of me, than hytherto you haue ben." "Tyll now haue I attended for thys ryght happye day of Ioy and Blyffe (sayd the Knyght) in token whereof, I doe kyffe your whyte and delycate Hands, and for acknowledging the fauour that pre-sently I do receiue, I make my vaunt to be the seruaunt of hir that is the fayrest, and most curteous Gentlewoman, on thys fide the Mountaynes." As hee had fynished those words they came to couer for Supper, where they were serued so honourably, as yf they had ben in the Court of the Monarch of Spayne. After Supper they went to walke abroade alongs the Riuier fide, befette wyth Wyllow Trees, where both the Beauty of the time, the runnyng Ryuer, the Charme of the Natural musicke of birds, and the pleasaunt Murmure of the tremblyng Leaues, at the whistlyng of the swete Westerne Wynd, moued them agayne to renew theyr Pastyme after Dynner. For some dyd gyue themselues to talke, and to deuyse of delectable matter: some framed Nosegayes, Garlandes, and other pretty posyes for theyr Fryendes; other some did leape, runne, and throwe the Barre. In the end a great Lord, neighbor to Dom Diego, whose name was Dom Roderico, knowyng by his Fryend's Countenaunce to what saynt hee was vowed, and percey-
.

ing for whose loue the feaste was celebrate, tooke by the hand a Gentlewoman that fete nexte to fayre Gineura, and prayed hir to daunce after a Song, wherunto shee beeyng pleasaunt and wyfe, made no great refusall. Dom Diego fayled not to ioyne wyth hys mystresse, after whome folowed the rest of that noble trayne, euery of them as they thought best. Now the Gentlewoman, that was ledde into daunce, song thys song so apt for the purpose, as if shee had entred the heart of the Ennemy and Mystresse of Dom Diego, or of purpose had made the same in the Name of hir, whom the matter touched aboue the rest.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseſſe in bondage thrall?

The yong and tender febleneſſe
Of myne vnskilfull age,
Whereof alſo the tendernesſe
Doth feeble heart affuage:
Whom Beautye's force hath made to frame
Vnto a Louer's heſt,
So ſoone as firſt the kindled flame
Of louinge Toyſe increſt.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than ſhe that doth hir louer's heart posſeſſe in bondage thrall?

I haue affayed out to put
The fier thus begoone,
And haue attempted of to cut,
The threede which loue hath ſpoone:
And new alliance fayne would flee
Of him whom I loue best,
But that the Gods haue willed me
To yeld to his requeſt.

Who may better sing and daunce among vs Ladies all,
Than ſhe that doth hir louer's heart posſeſſe in bondage thrall?

So amiable is his grace,
Not like among vs all:
So paſſing fayre is his Face,
Whose hue doth ſtayne vs all:

And as the shining funny day
 Doth eu'ry man delight,
 So he alone doth beare the sway,
 Amongs eche louing wight.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseffe in bondage thrall?

Why should not then, the fayref dame,
 Apply her gentle minde,
 And honor giue vnto his name,
 Wyth humble heart and kinde?
 Sith he is full of curtefie,
 Indewd with noble grace,
 And breft replete with honesty,
 Well knowne in euery place.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseffe in bondage thrall?

If I should loue, and serue him than,
 May it be counted vice?
 If I retayne that worthy man,
 Shall I be deemde vnwife?
 I will be gentle to him sure,
 And render him myne ayde:
 And loue that wight with heart full pure,
 That neuer loue assayde.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseffe in bondage thrall?

Thus the most sacred vnyt,
 That doth our hearts combine:
 Is voyde of wicked flattery,
 The same for to vntwine.
 No hardned rigor is our guide,
 Nor folly doth vs lead:
 No Fortune can vs twayne deuide,
 Vntill we both be deade.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseffe in bondage thrall?

And thus assured certaynely,
 That this our loue shall dure,
 And with good lucke hope verely,
 The same to put in vre
 The sowne seedes of amity,
 Begon betwixt vs twayne,
 Shall in most perfect vnity,
 For euermore remayne.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
 Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseſſe in bondage thrall?

Thys Song delighted the Myndes of many in that company, and principally Dom Deigo, and Gineura, who felt themſelues tickled without laughing: And the mayden reioyſed to heare hir ſelue ſo greatly prayſed in ſo noble a company, and ſpecially in the preſence of hir friende who had no leſſe pleasure by hearing the praifes of his beloued, than if he had bin made Lord of all Aragon. She for all hir diſſembléd Countenaunce could not hide the altera‐tion of hir Mynde, without ſending forth a ſodayne chaunge of colour, that forced a fayre and goodly taynt in hir Face. Dom Diego ſeeing that mutation, was ſo ioyful as was poſſible, for thereby he knew and Iudged himſelue auſſured of the good grace of hys Miftrefſe, and therefore wringing hir finely by the hands, ſayd vnto her very soberly Smiling: "What greater pleasure my louinge Wench can there happen vnto your Sernaunt, than to ſee the accomplishment of this Propheticall Song? I affiue you that in all my life I neuer heard muſicke, that delighted me ſo muſch as this, and thereby doe vnderſtand the good will of the Gentlewoman, which ſo curteouſly hath diſcouered yours towards me, and the faythfull ſeruice whereof you ſhall ſee me from henceforth ſo liberall, as neyther goods nor life ſhalbe ſpared for your ſake." Gineura who loued him with all hir heart, thanked him very humbly, and prayed him to beleue that the Song was truely ſoonge, and that without any fayle, ſhe that ſoonge, had thereby manyfested all the ſecrets of hir mynde. The daunce ended, they ſat theym downe rounde about a cleare Fountayne, which by ſilent diſcourse, iſſued from an high and moyſty rock, enuironned

with an infinite number of Maple trees, Poplars, and Ashes. To which place a Page brought a Lute to Dom Diego, whereupon hee could play very well, and made it more pleasauntly to found for that hee accorded hys Fayninge Voyce to the Instrument, Singing this song that followeth.

That I should loue and serue also, good reason doth require,
What though I suffre loathsome grief, my life in woe to wrap?
The same be th'only instruments of my good lucke and hap,
The foode and pray for hungry corps, of rest th'affured hire.

By thought wherof (O heauy man) gush forth of teares great
store
And by and by reioyf agayne, my driery teares do cease:
Which guerdon shall mine honor sure in that triumphant peace,
The summe wherof I offer now, were it of price mutch more.

Which I do make withall my heart, vnto that blessed wight,
My proper Goddesse here on earth, and only mistresse deere:
My goods and life, my brething ghost within this carcase here,
I vow vnto that maiesy, that heauenly starre most bright.

Now sith my willing vow is made, I humbly pray hir grace,
To end th'accord betwene vs pight, no longer time to tracte:
Whych if it be by fured band, so haply brought to paffe,
I must my self thrice happy count, for that most heauenly fact.

Thys Song made the company to muse, who commended the trim inuention of the Knight, and aboue all Gineura praysed him more than before, and could not so well refrayne hir lookes from him, and he with counterchaunge rendring alike agayne, but that the two wydowes their Mothers tooke great heede thereof, reiying greatly to see the same, desirous in time to couple them togeather. For at that present they deferred the same, in confideration they were both very young. Notwithstanding it had bene better that the same Coniunction had ben made, before Fortune

had turned the Wheele of hir vnstablenes. And truely delay and prolongation of time sometimes bryngeth futch and so great missehappe that one hundred times men curse their fortune, and little aduyse in foresight of their infortunate chaunces that comonly do come to passe. As it chaunced to those Wydowes, one of them thinking to loose hir son by the vaine behauior of the other's daughter, who wythout the help of GOD, or care vnto his wil, disparaged hir honor, and prepared a poyson so daungerous for his Mother's age, as the foode thereof hastened the way to the good Ladie's Graue. Nowwhiles this loue in thys manner increased and that the desire of these two Louers, flamed forth ordinarily in fire and flames more violent, Dom Diego all chaunged and tranformed into a new man, receiued no delyght, but iu the sight of his Gineura. And she thought that there could be no greater Felicity or more to be wyshed for, than to haue a Fryend so perfect, and so well accomplayshed wyth all thyngs requisite for the ornament and full furniture of a Gentleman. This was the occasion that the young Knyght let no Weeke to passe without visiting his mystresse twice or thrice at the leaft, and she did vnto hym the greatest curtesy and best Entertainment, that vertue could suffer a Mayden to doe, whych was the diligent Treasurer and careful tutor of hir honor. And this she dyd by consent of hir Mother. In lyk maner, honestie doth not permitt chaste Maydens to vse long talk or immoderate speach, with the fyrst that be suters vnto them, and mutch lesse seemely it is for them to be ouer squeimysh Nice, wyth that man whych seeketh (by way of marryage) to wynne power and tytle of the Body, beyng in very deede, or ought to be the moiety of theyr soule. Sutch was the desyres of these two Louers, which notwithstanding was impeeched by meanes, as hereafter you shal heare. For duryng the rebounding ioy of those faire couple of Loyall Louers, it chaunced that the Daughter of a Nobleman of the Countrey, named Ferrando de la Serre, whych was fayre, very Comely, Wife, and of good behauour, by keepynge daily Company with Gineura, fell extreamely in loue with Dom Diego, and assayed by all meanes to do him to vnderstand what the puissance was of hir Loue which willingly shee meant to bestowe vpon him, if it woold please hym

to honor hir so mutch, as to loue hir with like sincrity. But the knight which was no more his own Man, beyng possessed of another, had with hys Lybertye lost his Wyts and Mynd to marke the affectyon of this Gentlewoman, of whom he made no accompt. The Maiden neverthelesse ceased not to loue him, and to proue all possible wayes to make him hir owne. And knowing how mutch Dom Diego loued Hawking, shie bought a hauke the best in all the countrey, and sent the same to Dom Diego, who wyth all his heart receiued the same, and affectuously gaue hir thanks for that desired gyft, praying the messanger to recommend him to the good grace of his mistresse, and to assure hir self of his faythfull seruice, and that for hir sake he would kepe the Hauke so tenderly as the Balles of his eyes. Thys Hauke was the caufe of the ill fortune that afterwards chaunced to this poore Louer. For going many times to see Gienura with the hauke on his fist and bearing with him the tokens of the goodnesse of his Hauke, it escaped his mouth to say, that the same was one of the things that in all the World he loued best. Truely this Word was taken at the first bound contrary to his meaning, wherewith the matter so fell out, as afterwards by despayre he was like to lose his Lyfe. Certaine dayes after, as in the absence of the knight, talk rose of his vertue and honest condicions, one prayng his prowesse and valyance, another his great Beauty and Curtesy, another passing further, extolling the sincere affectyon and constancy which appeared in him touching matters of Loue, one envious person named Gracian spake his mind of hym in this wyse: "I will not deny but that Dom Diego is one of the most excellent most honest and brauest knyghtes of Catheloigne, but in matters of Loue he seemeth to me so walteryng and inconstant, as in euery place where he commeth, by and by he falleth in loue, and maketh as though he were sicke and would dy for the same." Gineura maruelling at those words said vnto him: "I pray you my frend to vse better talk of the Lord Dom Diego. For I do thynk the Loue whych the Knight doth beare to a Gentlewoman of thys countrey, is so firme and assured, as none other can remoue the same out of the siege of hys mind?" "Lo howe you be deceiued Gentlewoman" (quod Gracian) "for vnder coloure of diffymulate seruice, he and futch as he is doe abuse the simplicite of young

Gentlewomen. And to proue my sayinge true, I am assured that he is extremely enamored wyth the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre, of whom he receyued an Hawke, that he loueth aboue all other things." Gineura remembryng the words which certayn dayes before Dom Diego spake touching his hauke, began to suspect and beleue that which Gracian alleaged, and not able to support the choler, whych cold Iealousy bred in hir stomack, went into hir Chaumber full of so greate gryefe and heauynesse as she was many tymes lyke to kyll hir selfe. In the end, hopyng to be reuenged of the wrong whych shee beleued to receyue of Dom Diego, determyned to endure hir fortune paciently. In the meane tyme shee conceyued in hir Mynd a desperte and hatred so great and extreame agaynst the poore Gentleman that thought lyttle hereof, as the former loue was nothing in respecte of the reuenge by death which shee then desired vpon hym. Who the next day after his wonted maner came to see hir, hauing (to hys great damage) the hauke on his fiste, which was the onely cause of all her Iealousie. Nowe as the knyght was in talke with the Mother, seeynge that his beloued came not at al (accordyng to hir custome) to salute him and bid him welcome, inquired how shee dyd. One that loued hym more than the rest, sayd vnto him: "Syr, so soone as shee knewe of your comming, immedyately shee wythdrew hir self into hir Chaumber." He that was wyfe and well trayned vp dissembled what he thought, imagining that it was for some lyttle fantasie, whereunto Women wyllingly be subiecte. And therfore when he thought time to depart he tooke leaue of the wydow, and as he was goyng down the staires of the great Chamber, he met one of the maides of Gineura, whom he prayed to commend him to hir mistresse. Gineura duryng al this time tooke no rest, deuising howe shee myghte cutte of cleane hir loue entertained in Dom Diego, after shee knewe that hee carryed the hawke on his fyft: beyng the onely instrument of her frensie. And therfore thynkyng hir selfe both despysed and mocked of hir Knyght, and that he had done it in desperte of hir, she entred into so greate rage and Choler as shee was like to fall mad. Shee being then in this trouble of Mynde, behold hir Gentlewoman came vnto hir, and dyd the knyght's mesage. Who hearing but the symple name of hir sup-

posed Ennimy, began to figh so straungely, as a Man would haue thought hir soule prefently would haue departed hir Body. Afterwards when she had vanquished hir raging fit whych stayed hir speach, she gan very tenderly to weepe, saying: "Ah traytor and vnfaythful Louer, is thys the recompence of the honest, and firme Amity whych I haue borne thee, so wyckedly to deceiue me vnder the colour of so faint and detestable a Fryendship? Ah rashe and arrant Theefe, is it I vpon whom thou oughtest to bend thy wycked Trumperies? Doste thou thinke that I am no better worth but that thou prodigally shouldest waste myne honor to bear the spoyles thereof to hir, that is in nothing comparable vnto me? Wherein haue I deserued thys discurtesy, if not by louyng thee more than thy beauty and fained loue deserue? Diddest thou dare to aduenture vpon me, hauyng thy conscyence wounded wyth sutch an abhominable and deadly Treason? Durste thou to offer thy Mouth to kysse my Hand, by the mouth of another, to whome thou haddest before dedicated thy lying Lyppes in thine owne person? I most humbly thancke Almighty God that it pleased him to let me see the Poisone by thee prepared for the ruine of my lyfe and honor. Ha foole, hope not to take me in thy Trap, nor yet to deceyue me through thy sugred and deceitfull Words. For I sweare by the Almyghty God, that so long as I shall liue, I will accompte thee none other, but the most cruell and mortall Ennimy that I haue in this world." Then to accomplish the rest of hir carefull Minde she wrote a Letter to giue hir farewell to hir olde Friend Dom Diego. And for that purpose instructed hir Page with this Leffon, that when the knyght shouldest come, he shouldest be ready before hir lodging and say vnto him in the behalfe of hir, that before he passed any further, hee shoulde reade the Letter, and not to fayle to doe the Contents: the Page which was malicious, and il affectioned to Dom Diego, knowyng the appointed day of hys comming, wayted for hym a quarter of a mile from the Castle, where he had not long taryed, but the innocent louer came, agaynst whome the page went, bearyng about him more hurtfull and noysome weapons than al the Theeues and robbers had in all the Countrey of Catheloigne. In this manner prefenting his mystresse letters, he said vnto him: "My Lord, madame Gineura my

mistresse hath sent me vnto you: and bicause she knoweth how feareful you be to dysplease hir, prayeth you not to fayle to reade this Letter before you passe anye further, and there wyth al to accomplish the effecte thereof." The knyght abashed wyth that fodayne messhage, aunswered the Page: "God forbid my fryend," (quod he) "that I should disobey hir by anye meanes, vnto whom I haue gyuen a full authority and puissaunce over myne affectyons." So receyuing the letters, he kissted them thre or four times, and openyng them, found that he loked not for, and red that whych he thought not off. The contents were thefe.

The letters of faire Gineura, to the Knight Dom Diego.

There shall passe no day of my Lyfe, from makynge complaynts of the disloyall and periured Louer, who being more esteemed and better beloued than thou dydft deserue, hast made so small accompte of mee, whereof I wyll be reuenged vpon my selfe, for that I so lyghtly beleued thy wordes so full of crafte and guyle. I am in mynd that thou henceforth shalt flye to buzzes and beat the Bushes, where thou suspectest to catch the pray: for heere thou art lyke to be deceiued. Goe varlet, (goe I say,) to deceyue hir whych holdeth thee in hir nets and fnares, and whose Presentes (althoughe of small Value) moued thee more than the Honeste, Vertuous and Chaste Loue, that Vertue hir selfe began to knytte betweene vs. And sith a Carrion Kyte hath made the fly further off, than the Wynde of the Ayre was able to bear thee, God defende that Gineura should goe aboue to hynder thy follyes, and mutch lesse to suffer hir selfe to bee beguyled throughe thine Excuses. Nay rather God defend (except thou desirest to se me dy) that thou shouldest euer bee in place where I am, assuryng thee of thys my mynde, neuer to be chaunged so long as my soule shall rest wythin my body: which giuing breath vnto my panting breast, shal neuer be other, but a mortall enemy to Dom Diego: and futch one as enen to the Death wyl not fayle to prosecute the default of the most traiterous and vnfaythfull Knyght that euer was gyrtle in girdle, or armed with Sword. And behold the last fauour that thou canst, or oughtest to hope of me, who

lyueth not but onelye to martir and crucify thee, and neuer shal
beother but

The greatest Enimy, that euer thou haddest, or
shalt haue, Gineura the fayre.

The myserable louer had no sooner red the Letter, but lifting vp his eyes to the heauens, he sayd: “Alas, my God thou knowest well if euer I haue offended, that I ought to be banyshed from the place, where my contention is chyefly fixed, and from whence my heartshall neuer departe, chaunce what myfshappe and Fortune so euer shall.” Then tournyng himself towards the Page, hee sayd: “Sir Page my fryend, say vnto my Ladye, most humblye commanding me vnto hir, that for this prefent time I wyll not see hir, but hereafter she shall heare some newes from me.” The page well lessoned for the purpose, made hym aunswere, saying: “Sir, she hath wylled me to say thus mutch by mouth, that ye cannot do hir greater pleasure, than neuer to come in place where shee is: for so mutch as the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre hath so catched you in hir nettes, that loth she is your faithfull heart shoulde hange in ballance, and expect the vncertaine Loue of two Ladyes at once.” Dom Diego hearing the truth of hys misfshap, and the occasion of the same, made Lyghte of the matter for that tyme, till at length the Choler of his Mistresse were abated, that thereby shee might know vpon how bryttle Ground she hadde planted a suspition of hir most faythfull and louing Seruaunt, and so retiring to his House, altogither vexed and yll contented, he wente into hys Chaumber where with his Dagger he paunched the gorge of the poore birde, the cause of hys Ladies Anger, saying: “Ha vyle carraine kite, I sweare by the bloud of him, that thou shalt neuer be the caufe agayne, to make hir fret for sutch a triflyng thing as thou art: I beleue that what so euer fury is hidden within the Body of this cursed Kite, to engender a Plague, the same now is feased on me, but I hope to doe my Mystresse vnderstande what Sacrifice I haue made of the thyng that was sent me, ready to do the lyke vppon mine owne flesh, where it shall please her to commaund.” So taking Inke and Paper, he made aunswere to Gineura as foloweth.

The Letters of Dom Diego, to Gineura the faire.

But who would euer thynck (my Lady deare) that a Lyght Opinion could so soone haue deuided your good iudgement, to condempn your Knight before you had heard what he was able to say, for himself? truely I thought no more to offend you, than the man which you neuer knew, although you haue bene deceiued by colored words, vttered by those that be enuious of my happe, and Enimies of your ioy, who haue filled your minde full of false report. I swere vnto you (by God, my good Lady) that neuer thinge entred into my fantasie more, than a desire to serue you alone and to auoide the acquaintance of all other, to preferue for you a pure and entire heart. Whereof longe agone I made you an offer. In wytnesse whereof I humbly beseech you to beleue, that so soone as you see this Birde (the cause of your anger and occasion of my mishap) torne and pluckte in pieces, that my heart feeleth no lesse alteration or torment: for so long as I shall vnderstand your displeasure to endure against mee, assure your selfe my Life shal abide in no lesse paine than my ioye was great when I franckly possessed your presence. Be it sufficient (Madame) for you to know, that I neuer thought to offend you. Be contented I beseech you, with this sacrifice which I send you, if not that I doe the like vpon myne owne body, which without your good will and grace can no longer liue. For my lyfe depending vpon that only benefit, you ought not to be astonned if the same fayling his nourishment doth pearish, as frustrate of that foode, propre, and apt for his Appetite: and by like meanes my sayd life shall reuiue, if it may please you to spread your beames ouer mine obscure and base personage, and to receiue thys satifaction for a fault not committed. And so wayting a gentle aunswere from your great curtesie, I humbly kisse your white and delicate handes, with all humility, praying God sweete Lady, to let you see how mutch I suffer without desert, and what puissaunce you haue ouer him that is all your

Faythfull and euer servaunt
most obedient, Dom Diego.

The letter closed, and sealed, he deliuered to one of his faythfull and secret Seruaunts, to beare (with the deade Hauke) vnto Gineura, charging him diligently to take heede to hir countenaunce, and aboue all, that faithfully he shoule beare away what she dyd say vnto him for aunswere. His man fayled not to speede himselfe with diligence: and being come before Gineura, he presented that which his maister had sent hir. She full of wrath and indignation, would not once vouchsafe to reade the letter, and mutch lesse to accept the present which was a witnesse of the contrary of that shee did beleue, and turninge vnto the messenger, she sayde: "My Frende, thou mayest goe get thee backe agayne, wyth the selfe fame charge which thou haft brought, and say vnto thy mayster, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters, his Excuses, or any other thing that commeth from his handes, as one hauing good experiance of his fleyghts and deceipts. Tell him also, that I prayse God, in good time I haue taken heede to the little fayth and trust that is in him for a countergarde, lightly neuer hereafter to bee deceiued." The seruynge man would fayne haue framed an Oration to purge his maister, but the fierce Gentlewoman brake of his talke, saying vnto hym, that she was wel resolued vpon hir intent, whych was that Dom Diego shoule neuer recover place in hir minde: and that shee hated hym as mutch at that time as euer shee loued him before. Vppon whych aunswere the Messenger returned, so sorrowfull for the Miffortune of his Mayster (knowing hym to bee very innocent) as he knew full well into what despayre his Mayster would fall, when he vnderstode those pitifull and heavy newes: notwithstanding needes he must knowe them, and therefore when he was come before Dom Diego, he recyted vnto hym from poynt to poynt his ambassage, and deliuered hym agayne his Letters. Whereof the infortunate Gentleman was so sore astonned, as he was like to haue fallen downe dead at that instant. "Alas," (sayd he) "what yll lucke is this, that when I thought to enioye the benefite of my attempte, Fortune hath reuolted to bryng me to the extremity of the mooste desparate man that ever lyued? Is it possible that my good seruice should bee the cause of my approached ouerthrow? Alas, what may true and faithfull louers henceforth hope for, if not the losse of theyr tyme, when

after long deuoire and duetye, an Enuious fool shall come to depryue them of theyr ioy and gladneffe, and they feelyng the bytterneffe of theyr abandoned farewell, one that loueth leffe shall beare away the sweete fruiſte of futch hope, and shall posſeſſe withoute deserte the glory due to a good and faythfull futer. Ah fayre Gineura, that thou feest not the grieſe whych I do feele, and the affection wherewith I ferue thee, and how mucht I would ſuffer to gayne and recouer thy good grace and fauor. Ha vayne hope, which vntill now haſt fylled me, with mirth and gladneffe, altogether ſpent and ouerwhelmed in the gauſe of thy bytter fauour, and in the taſt of thy corrupted lycour: better it had ben for me at the begining to haue refuſed thee, than afterwards received, cheriſhed, and ſincereſly beloued, to be baniſhed for ſo light occaſion, as I am ful fore aſhamed to conceyue the fame within remembrance: but fortune ſhal not haue hir wil ouer me: for ſo long as I haue liue I wyll contynue the feruaunt of Gineura, and my lyfe I wyll preferue, to lette her vnderſtand the force of Loue: by continuaunce whereof, I wyll not ſtiche to ſette my ſelfe on fyre with the liuely flames of my paſſions, and then withdrawe the fyrebrandes of my ioy, by the rigour and frowardneſſe that ſhall proceede from hir." When he had fyniſhed his talke, he began to ſigh and lament ſo ſtrangely, as his man was about to go cal the lady his mother. In whom dyd appeare futch fignes, as if death had ben at hand, or els that he had ben attached wyth the ſpirite of phrenſie. But when hee fawe hym aboue to come agayne to himſelfe, he ſayed thus vnto him: "How now, ſyr, wyl you caſt your ſelfe away for the fooliſhe toy of an vndiſcrete girle, yll mannered and taught, and who perchaunce doth al this to proue how conſtant you would be? No, no ſir, you muſt turne ouer an other Leafe, and ſith you bee determyned to loue hir, you muſt perſeuere in your purſute. For at length it is imposſible, but that this Diamont hardneſſe, muſt needeſ bee mollified, if ſhe be not a Diuell incarnate, more furious than the wildeſt beaſts, whych haunt the deſerts of Lybia." Dom Diego was comforted with that admonition, and purpoſed to perſiſt in hys affection, and therefore ſent many meſſages, giſtes, letters, and excuses to hys angry miſtreſſe Gineura. But ſhe made yet leſſe accompt

of them than of the first, charging the messangers not to trouble themselfes about those trifles, for shee had rather dye than see hym, or to receyue any thyng from him, whom she deadly hated. When newes hereof came to the knyght, he was altogether impaient, and seeing the small profite which he did gaine by pursuynge his folysh opinion, and not able to bestow his loue elsewhere, he determined to die: and yet vnwilling to imbrue his hands with his owne bloud, he purposed to wander as a vacabond into some deserte, to perfourme the course of his vnhappye and sorrowfull dayes, hoping by that meanes to quench the heat of that amorous rage, either by length of tyme, or by death, the last refuge of the myserable. For which purpose then, he caused to be made two pylgrims wedes, the one for himselfe, and the other for his man, and prepared al their necessaries for his voiage. Then writing a Letter to his Gineura, he called one of his men, to whom he said: "I am going about certayne of myne affayres, whereof I will haue no man to knowe, and therefore when I am gone, thou shalt tell my Lady Mother what I say to thee, and that within twenty dayes (God willing) I meane to retourne: moreouer I require thee, that foure dayes after my departure, and not before, thou beare theefe letters to mistresse Gineura, and if so be she refuse to receyue them, fayle not to deliner them vnto hir mother. Take heede therefore if thou loue me, to do all that which I haue geuen thee in charge." Afterwards he called his seruaunt vnto hym, which had done the first message vnto Gineura, which was a wise, and gentle fellow, in whom the knight reposeth great affiaunce, to him he declared all his enterprize, and th'ende whereunto his fierce determination did extend. The good Seruaunt whych loued his mayster, hearing his intent so vnreasonable, sayde vnto him: "Is it not enough for you sir, to yelde your selfe a pray to the most fierce, and cruell woman that luyeth, but thus to augment hir glory, by seeing hir selfe so victorious over you? Are you ignoraunt what the mallice of Women is, and how mucht they triumph in tormenting the poore blynched soules that become their Seruaunts, and what prayse they attribute vnto themselfes, if by some misfortune they driue them to dispaire? Was it without cause that the Sage in times past did so greatly hate that Sexe,

and Kinde, as the common Ruine, and ouerthrow of men? What mooued the Greeke Poet to sing theese veres against all sorts of Women?

A common woe though filly woman be to man,
Yet double ioy againe she doth vnto him bring:
The wedding night is one, as wedded folk tell can,
The other when the knill for hir poore soule doth ring.

If not for that he knew the happynesse of man consisted more in auoyding the acquaintaunce of that fury, than by imbracinge, and chearishing of the same, sith hir nature is altogether like vnto *Æsop's* Serpent, which being deliuered from pearill and daunger of death by the shepeheard, for recompence thereof, infected his whole house with his venomous hissing, and rammish Breath. O howe happy is hee that can mayster his owne affections, and like a free man from that passion, can reioyce in liberty, fleeing the sweete euill which (as I well perceyue) is the caufe of your despayre. But fir, your wisedome ought to vanquish those light conceipts, by setting so light of that your rebellious Gentlewoman, as shee is vnworthy to be fauoured by so great a Lord as you be, who deserueth a better personage than hir's is, and a frendlier entertainment than a farewell so fondly giuen." Dom Diego, although that he tooke pleasure to heare those discourses of his faythfull seruaunt, yet he shewed so fower a Countenaunce vnto him, as the other with theese fewe wordes helde his peace: "Sith then it is so syr, that you be resolued in your mishap, it may please you to accept mee to wayte vpon you, whither you are determined to goe: for I meane not to liue at mine ease, and suffer my mayster, in payne, and grieve. I will be partaker of that which Fortune shall prepare, vntill the heauens doe mitigate their rage vpon you, and your predestinate mishap." Dom Diego, who desired no better company, imbraced him very louingly, thankinge him for the good will that hee bare him, and sayd: "This present Night about midnight, we wil take our Iourney, euen that way wheather our Lot and also Fortune shall Guide vs, attendinge eyther the ende of my Passion, or the whole ouerthrow of my selfe." Their intent they did put in proofe: for at Midnight the Moone being cleere

when all things were at rest, and the Crickets chirpinge through the Creauises of the Earth, they tooke their way vnseene of any. And so foone as Aurora began to garnish hir Mantle with colors of red and white, and the morning Starre of the Goddesse of stealing loue, appeared, Dom Diego began to sigh, saying: "Ah yee freshe and dewy Morninges, that my hap is farre from the quiet of others, who after they haue rested vpon the Cogitation of their Ease, and ioye, doe awake by the pleasaunte Tunes of the Byrdes, to perfourme by effect that which the Shadowe and Fantasie of their Minde, did present by dreaming in the Night, where I am constrainyd to separate by great distaunce exceeding vehement continuation of my Torments, to followe wilde Beasts, wandring from thence where the greatest number of men doe quietly sleepe and take their rest. Ah Venus, whose Starre now conducteth me, and whose beames long agoe did glow and kindle my louing heart, how chaunceth it that I am not intreated according to the desert of my constant minde and meaning most sincere? Alas, I looke not to expect any thyng certayne from thee, sith thou hast thy course amongs the wandring starres. Must the Influence of one Starre that ruleth ouer mee, deface that which the Heauens would to bee accomplished, and that my cruel mistresse, deluding my languors and griefs, triumpheth ouer mine infirmity, and ouerwhelmeth me with care and forow, that I liue pyning away, amongs the sauage beasts in the Wildernesse? For somutch as without the grace of my Lady, all company shalbe so tedious and lothsom vnto me, that the only thought of a true reconciliation with hir, that hath my heart, shal serue for the comfort and true remedy of all my troubles." Whiles he had with these pangs forgotten himselfe, hee sawe that the day began to waxe cleere, the Sun already spreading his golden beames vpon the earth and therefore hastely he set himselfe forthwards, vsing Bywayes, and far from common vsed trades, so neere as he could, that hee might not by any meanes be knowne. Thus they rode forth till Noone: but seeing their horsse to be weary and faynt, they lighted at a village, farre from the high way: where they refreshed themselues, and bayted their horsse vntill it was late. In this fort by the space of three daies they trauerfed the Countrey vntill they arriued to the foote

of a mountayne, not frequented almost but by Wilde and sauage Beasts. The countrey round about was very fayre, pleasaunt, and fit for the solitarines of the Knight: for if shadow pleased him, hee might be delighted with the couert of an infinite number of frui^tfull trees, wherewith only nature had furnished those hideous and Sauage Deserthes. Next to the high and wel timbred Forrests, there were groues and bushes for exercise of hunting. A man could desyre no kinde of Veneson, but it was to be had in that Wildernesse: there might be seene also a certain sharpe and rude situation of craggy, and vnfrui^tful rocks, which notwithstanding yelded some pleasure to the Eyes, to see theym tapiffed with a pale moafie greene, which disposed into a frizeled guise, made the place pleasaunt and the rock soft, according to the fashyon of a couerture. There was also a very fayre and wide Cau^e, which liked him well compassed round about with Firre trees, Pine apples, Cipres, and Trees distilling a certayne Rosen or Gumme, towards the bottom whereof, in the way downe to the valley, a man might haue viewed a passing company of Ewe trees, Poplers of all sortes, and Maple trees, the Leaues whereof fell into a Lake or Pond, which came by certayne smal gutters into a fresh and very cleare fountayne right agaynst that Cau^e. The knight viewing the auncienty and excellency of the place, deliberated by and by to plant there the siege of his abode, for performing of his penaunce and life. And therefore sayd unto his seruaunt: "My friend, I am aduised that this place shall be the Monastery, for the voluntary profession of our religion, and where we will accomplish the Voyage of our Deuotion. Thou seest both the beauty and solitariness, which do rather commaund vs here to rest, than any other place nere at hand." The Seruaunt yelded to the pleasure of his mayster, and so lightinge from their horsse, they diffurnished them of their Saddles, and Bridles, gieuing to them the liberty of the fields, of whom afterwards they neuer heard more newes. The saddles they placed within the Cau^e and leauing their ordinary apparell, clothed themselues in Pilgrimes weedes, fortifying the mouth of the caue, that wilde beasts should not hurt them when they were a sleepe. There the seruaunt began to play the Vpholster, and to make 2 little beds of mosse,

(whose spindle and wheele were of wood, so well pollished and trimmed, as if he had bin a carpenter wel expert in that Science. They liued of nothing els, but of the fruictes of those wilde trees, sometimes of herbs, vntill they had deuised to make a crosbow of wood, wherewith they killed now and then a Hare, a Cony, a Kid, and many times some stronger beast remayned with them for gage: whose bloude they preffed out betwene two pieces of wood and rofted them against the Sunne, seruing the same in, as if it had bene a right good Dishe for their first course of their sober and vndelicate Table, whereat the pure water of the fountayne, next vnto their hollow and deepe house, serued in steade of the good Wynes, and delicious Drinks that abounded in the house of Dom Diego. Who liuing in this poore state, ceased night nor day to complayne of his hard fortune and cursed plight, going many times through the Desertes all alone, the better to muse and study thereupon, or (peraduenture) desirous that some hungry Beare should descend from the mountayne, to finishe his life and paynefull grieves. But the good Seruaunt knowing his Mayster's forow and mishap, would neuer go out of his sight but rather exhorted him to retourne home againe to his goods and posseſſions, and to forget that order of lyfe, vnworthy for futch a personage as he was, and vncormely for him that ought to be indued with reaſon and iudgement. But the desperate Gentleman wilfull in his former deliberation, would not heare him speake of futch retrayt. So that if it escaped the seruaunt to be earnest and sharpe agaynst the rudeneſſe and fottish cruelty of Gineura, it was a pastime to see Dom Diego mount in choller against him, saying: "Art thou fo hardy to speak il of the gentlewoman, which is the moft vertuous personage vnder the coape of heauen? Thou maist thancke the loue I beare thee, otherwife I would make thee feele how much the flaunder of hir toucheth mee at the heart, which hath right to punishe me thus for mine indiscretion, and that it is I that commit the wronge in complayning of hir feuerity." "Now fir," fayd the seruaunt, "I do indeede perceyue what maner of thing the contagion of loue is. For they which once doe feele the corruption of that Ayre, think nothing good or fauory, but the filthy ſmel of that pestiferous meat. Wherfore

! canſy the

dried!

I humbly beseech you a little to set apart, and remoue from minde, that feare and presumptuous dame Gineura, and by forgetting hir beauty, to measure hir Desert and your grieve, you shall know then (being guided by reason's lore) that you are the simplest and weakest man in the worlde, to torment your selfe in this wise, and that shee is the fondeft Girle, wholly straught of wits, so to abuse a Noble man that meriteth the good grace and sweete embracement of one more fayre, wife and modest, than she sheweth hirselfe to be." The knight hearing these words thought to abandon pacience, but yet replied vnto him: "I sweare vnto thee by God, that if euer thou haue any futch talke agayne, eyther I will dye, or thou shalt depart out of my company, for I cannot abide by any meanes to suffer one to despise hir whom I do loue and honor, and shal so do during life." The seruaunt loth to offend his mayster held his peace, heauy for all that in heart, to remember how the poore gentleman was resolued to finish there, (in a desert unknownen to his Freendes) all the remnaunt of his life. And who aswell for the euill order, and not accustome nourture, as for affiduall playnts and weepings, was become so pale and leane, as he better resembled a dry Chip, than a man, hauing feeling or lyfe. His eyes were fonke into his Head, his Beard vnkempt, his hayre staring, his skin ful of filth, altogether more like a wilde and Sauage creature (futch one as is depainted in brutal forme) than faire Dom Diego, so mutch commended, and esteemed throughout the kingdome of Spayne. Now leaue we this Amorous Hermit to passionate and playne his misfortune, to see to what ende the Letters came that he wrote to his cruel Mistresse. The day prefixed for deliuery of his Letters, his seruaunt did his charge, and being come to the house of Gineura, founde hir in the hall with hir mother, where kissing his Mayster's Letters, hee presented them with very great reuerence to the Gentlewoman. Who so soone as shee knew that they came from Dom Diego, all chaunged into raging colour, and foolishe choller, threwe theym incontinently vpon the grounde, sayinge: "Suf-
ficeth it not thy Mayster, that already twice I haue done him to vnderstand, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters nor Ambassades, and yet goeth he about by futch assualtes to encrease

my displeasure and agony, by the only remembrance of his folly?" The Mother seeing that vnicuile order, although shee vnderstoode the cause, and knowinge that there was some discorde betweene the two Louers, yet thought it to bee but light, sith the Comike Poet fayeth :

The Louers often falling out,
And pretty warling rage:
Of pleasaunt loue it is no doubt,
The sure renewing gage.

She went vnto hir Daughter, and sayd vnto hir: "What great rage is this: let me see that Letter that I may reade it: for I haue no feare that Dom Diego can deceyue me with the sweetenes of his honny words. And truly Daughter you neede not fear to touch theym, for if there were any Poyson in theym, it proceeded from your beauty that hath bitten and stong the knight, whereof if he assay to make you a partaker, I see no cause why he ought to be thus rigorously reieeted, deseruing by his honesty a better entaynement at your hands." In the meane time one of the seruing men toke vp the Letters, and gaue them to the Lady, who reading them, found written as followeth.

The letters of Dom Diego, to mistreffe Gineura.

My dearest and most wel beloued Lady, sith that mine innocency can finde no resting place within your tender Corpse, what honest excuse or true reason so euer I do alledge, and sith your heart declareth it self to be Implacable, and not pleased with hym that neuer offended you, except it were for ouermutch loue, which for guerdon of the rare and incomparable amity, I perceyue my selfe to be hated deadly of you and in futch wise contemned, as the only record of my name causeth in you an insupportable grieve and displeasure vnspeakable. To auoide I say your indigation, and by my mishap to render vnto you some ease and contentment, I haue meant to dislodge my self so far from this Countrey, as neyther you nor any other, shal euer heare by fame

or true report, the place of my abode, nor the graue wherein my bones shall rest. And although it be an inexplicable heart's sorrow and torment, which by way of pen can not be declared, to be thus misprised of you, whom alone I do loue and shal, so long as mine afflicted soule shall hang vpon the feeble and brittle threedes of life: yet for all that, this grieve falling vpon me, is not irkesome, as the punishment is grieuous, by imagining the passion of your minde when it is disquieted with disdayne and wrath agaynst me, who liueth not, but to wander vpon the thoughts of your perfections. And forsomutch as I doe feele for the debility that is in me, that I am not able any longer to beare the sowre shockes of my bitter torments and martyrdome that I prefently doe suffer, yet before my life doe fayle, and death doe sease vpon my senses, I haue written vnto you this present letter for a testimoniall of your rigour, which is the marke that iustifieth my vnguiltynesse. And although I doe complayne of mine vnhappy fortune, yet I meane not to accuse you, onely contented that eche man doe know, that firme affection and eternall thralldome do deserue other recompence than a farewell so cruell. And I am wel assured, that when I am deade, you will pitty my torment, knowing then, although to late, that my loyalty was so sincere, as the report of those was false, that made you beleue, that I was very far in loue with the Daughter of Dom Ferrande de la Serre. Alas, shall a Noble gentleman that hath bene well trayned vp, be forbidden to receiue the gifts that come from a vertuous Gentlewoman? Ought you to be so incapable and voyde of humanity, that the sacrifice which I haue made of the poore Birde, the cause of your disdayne, my repentaunce, my lawfull excuses, are not able to let you see the contrary of your persuasion? Ah, ah, I see that the dark and obscure vayle of uniuist disdayne and immoderate anger, hath so blindfold your eyes, and inuegled your mynde, as you can not iudge the truth of my cause and the vnrightousnes of your quarell. I will render vnto you none other certificate of myne innocency, but my languishinge heart, which you clepe betweene your hands, feling futch rude intertayntment there, of whom he loaked for reioyse of his trauayles. But forsomutch then as you do hate me, what resteth for me to do, but to procure destruction to my self?

And sith your pleasure consisteth in mine ouerthrow, reason willeth that I obey you, and by deth to sacrifice my life in like maner as by life you were the only mistresse of my heart. One only thing cheereth vp my heart agayne, and maketh my death more myserable, which is, that in dying fo innocent as I am, you shall remayne guilty, and the onely cause of my ruine. My Lyfe will depart like a Puffe, and Soule shall vanish like a sweete Sommer's blast: whereby you shall be euer deemed for a cruell Woman and bloudy Murderer of your deuout and faythfull Seruaunt. I pray to God mine owne sweete Lady, to giue you futch Contentation, Ioyc, Pleasure, and Gladneffe, as you do cause through your Rigor, Discontentment, Griefe, and Displeasure to the poore languishing Creature, and who for euermore shall bee

Your most obedient and affected

seruaunt Dom Diego.

The good Lady hauing red the Letter, was so astonned, as hir words for a long space staied within hir mouth; hir heart panted, and spirite was full of confusion, hir minde was filled with sorrow to consider the anguishes of the poore vagabound, and foster Hermit. In the ende before the houshold dissembling hir passion which mooued hir sence, she tooke her Daughter a fide, whom very sharply she rebuked, for that she was the cause of the losse of so notable and perfect a Knight as Dom Diego was. Then she red the Letter vnto hir, and as all hir eloquence was not able to moue that cruel damsell, more venemous than a Serpent agaynst the knight, who (as she thought) had not indured the one halfe of that which his inconstancy and lightnesse had wel deserued, whose obstinate minde the mother perceyuinge, sayde vnto hir: "I pray to God (deare daughter) that for your fowardnesse, you bee not blinded in your beauty, and for refusall of so great a benefit as is the alliaunce of Dom Diego, you be not abused with futch a one as shall dimme the light of your renoume and glory, which hitherto you haue gayned amongs the sobrest and modest maydens." Hauing sayd so, the wyse and sage widow, went to the seruaunt of Dom Diego, of whom she demaunded what day his mayster departed, which she knowing, and not igno-

raunt of the occasion, was more wroth than before: notwithstanding she dissembled what she thought, and sending backe his seruant, she required him to do hir hearty commendations to the Lady his mistresse, which he did. The good Lady was ioyfull of them not knowing the contents of her sonne's letters, but looked rather that he had sent word vnto his lady of the iust hour of his returne. Howbeit when she saw that in the space of 20 dayes, nor yet within a moneth he came not, shee could not tell what to thinke, so dolorous was she for the absence of hir sonne. The time passinge without hearing any newes from him she began to torment hirselfe, and be so pensie, as if she had heard certayne newes of his death. "Alas," (quod she) "and wherefore haue the heauens giuen me the possession of futch an exquisite fruict, to deprive mee thereof before I do partake the goodnesse, and swetenes therof, and before I do enioy the grifts proceeding from so goodly a stock. Ah God, I fear that my immoderate loue is the occasion of the losse of my sonne, and the whole ruine of the mother, with the demolition and wast of al our goods. And I would that it had pleased God (my Son) the hunter's game had neuer bene so deere, for thinking to catch that pray thou thy selfe wast taken and thou wandring for thy better disport, missing the right way, so strangely didst straggle, that hard it is to reduce thee into the right track agayne. At least wife if I knew the place, whereunto thou arte repaired to finde againe thy losse, I would trauell thither to beare the company, rather than to lyue heere voyde of a Husbande, betrayed by them whom I best trusted and bereft from the presence of the my Sonne, the Staffe and onely comfort of myne olde age, and the certayne hope of all our House and Family." Now if the Mother vexed hir selfe, the Sonne was eased with no great reioyce, being now a free cittizen with the Beasts, and Foules of the Forrests, Dennes, and Caues, leauing not the Profundity of the Woods, the Craggednes of the Rocks, or beauty of the Valley, without some signe or token of his grieve. Sometime with a Puncheon wel sharpned, seruing him in stede of a Penknife, he graueth the successe of his loue vpon an hard stome. Other times the softe Bark of some tender and new growen spray serued him in stede of Paper, or Parchment. For there he

carued in Cyphres properly combined with a Knot (not easilly to be knowne) the name of his Lady, interlaced so properly with his owne, that the finest heads might bee deceyued, to Disciphre the righte interpretation. Vpon a day then, as he passed his time (accordinge to his custome) to muse vpon Myselfe, and to frame his succeffe of loue in the Ayre, hee Ingraued these Verfes vpon a Stone by a Fountayne fide, adioyning to his rude and Sauage house.

If any Forrest Pan, doth haunt here in this place,
 Or wandring Nymph, hath hard my wofull playnt:
 The one may well beholde, and view what drop of grace,
 I haue deferu'de, and eke what grieves my heart do taynt,
 The other lend to me fome broke, or showre of rayne
 To moyft myne heart and eyes, the gutters of my brayne.

Somewhat further of many times at the rising of the Sunne, he mounted the Top of an high and greene Mountayne to folace himfelfe vpon the frefhe and greene graffe, where four Pillers were erected, (eyther naturally done by dame Nature, or wrought by the industry of man,) which bore a ftone in forme four square, well hewed, made and trimmed in maner of an Aulter, vpon which Aulter he dedicated these verfes to the Posterty.

Vpon this holy squared ftone, which Aulter men doe call,
 To fome one of the Gods aboue that consecrated is,
 This dolefull verfe I do ingraue, in token of my thrall,
 And deadly grieves that do my filly heart opprefse,
 And vex with endelefse paynes, which neuer quiet is,
 This wofull verfe (I say) as fureft gage of my distrefse,
 I fixe on Aulter ftone for euer to remayne,
 To fhev the heart of trueft wight, that euer liued in payne.

And vpon the brims of that Table, he carued these Wordes :
 This Mafon worke erected here, shall not fo long abide,
 As shall the common name of two, that now vncoupled bee,
 Who after froward fortune paft, knit eche in one degree,
 Shall render for right earnest loue, reward on either fide.

And before his Lodging in that wilde and stony Forrest vpon the Barke of a lofty Beeche Tree, feeling in himselfe an unaccustomed lustinessse, thus he wrote :

Th'encreasing beauty of thy shape, extending far thy name,
By like increase I hope to see, so strecthed forth my fame.

His man seeing him to begin to be merily disposed, one day said vnto him : " And wherefore sir serueth the Lute, which I brought amongs our Males, if you do not assay thereby to recreate youre selfe, and sing thereupon the prayses of hir whom you lone so wel : yea and if I may so say, by worshipping hir, you do commit idolatry in your minde. Is it not your pleasure that I fetch the same vnto you, that by immitation of Orpheus, you may mooue the Trees, Rocks, and wylde Beastes to bewayle your misfortune, and witnesse the penaunce that you doe for hir sake, without cause of so haynous punishment : " " I see well," (quod the knight) " that thou wouldest I should be mery, but mirth is so far from me, as I am estranged from hir that holdeth me in this misery. Notwithstanding I will performe thy request, and will awake that instrument in this desert place, wherewith sometime I witnesseed the greatest part of my passions." Then the knight receyuing the Lute sounded thereupon this song ensuing.

The waues and troubled scum, that mooues the Seas alofte,
Which runs and roares against the rocks, and threatneth daungers oft
Resembleth lo the fits of lone,
That dayly do my fansie moue.

My heart it is the ship, that drijves on salt Sea fome,
And reason fayles with senselasse wit, and neuer loketh home,
For loue is guide, and leades the daunce,
That brings good hap, or breedes mischaunce.

The furious flames of loue, that neuer ceaseth sure,
Are loe the busie failes and oares, that would my rest procure,
And as in Skies, great windes do blo,
My swift desires runnes, fleeting so.

As sweete Zephyrus breath, in spring time feedes the floures,
 My mistresse voice would ioye my wits, by hir most heauenly powers,
 And would exchaunge my state I say,
 As Sommer chaungeth Winter's day.

She is the Artique starre, the gratiouse Goddesse to,
 She hath the might to make and marre, to helpe or els vndo,
 Both death and life she hath at call,
 My warre, my peace, my ruine and all.

She makes me liue in woe, and guides my fighs and lookes,
 She holds my fredome by a lace, as fish is held with hookes,
 Thus by despaire in this conceite,
 I swallow vp both hooke and baite.

And in the deserts loe I liue, among the sauage kinde,
 And spend my time in wofull fighs, rayf'd vp by care of minde,
 All hopeleffe to in paynes I pyne,
 And ioyes for euer doe refigne.

I dread but Charon's boat if she no mercy giue,
 In darknesse then my soule shall dwell, in Pluto's raygne to liue,
 But I beleue she hath no care,
 On him that caught is in hir snare.

If she release my woe, a thousand thankes therefore,
 I shall hir giue, and make the world to honor hir the more,
 The Gods in Skies will prayse the same,
 And recorde beare of hir good name.

O happy is that life, that after torment straunge,
 And earthly forows on this mould, for better life shal chaunge
 And liue amongs the Gods on high,
 Where loue and Louers neuer die.

O lyfe that here I leade, I freely giue thec now,
 Vnto the fayre where ere she rests, and loke thou shew hir how

I linger forth my yeares and dayes,
To win of hir a crowne of prayfe.

And thou my pleasaunt Lute, ceaſe not my ſongs to ſound,
And ſhew the torments of my minde, that I throughloue haue found,
And alwayes tell my Miftrefſe ſtill,
Hir worthy vertues rules my will.

The Foster Louer.

The Foster louer ſinging this ſong, ſighing fundry tymes betwene, the tricling teares ranne downe his Face: which thereby was fo diſfigured, as ſcarſe could any man haue knowne him, that al the dayes of their lyfe had frequented his company. Sutch was the ſtate of this myferable yong gentleman, who dronke with hys owne Wyne, balanced himſelfe downe to defpayre rather than to the hope of that which he durſt not looke for. Howbeit like as the miſchiefs of men be not alwayes durable, and that all thinges haue their proper ſeafon, euen fo Fortune repenteinge hir euill intreayt which wrongfully ſhee had cauſed this poore penetençyary of Gineura to endure, prepared a meanes to readuaunce him aloft vpon hir Wheele, euen when he thought leaſt of it. And certes, herein appeared the mercy of God, who cauſeth things diſſicult and almoſt iſpoſſible, to be fo eaſy, as thoſe that ordinariily be brought to paſſe. How may this example ſhow how they which be plunged in the bottome of defiaunce, deeming their life vtterly forlorne, be foone exalted euen to the top of all glory, and felicity? Hath not our age feene a man whych was by au&thority of his Enimy iudged to dye, ready to bee caried forth to the Scaffolde miraculoſly deliuered from that daunger, and (wherein the works of God are to be marueyled) the ſame man to be cauſed to the dignity of a Prynce, and preferred aboue all the reſt of the people? Now Dom Diego attending his fieldiſh Philoſophy in the ſolitary valeys of the riche Mountayne Pyrene, was reſcowed with an helpe vnlooked for as you ſhall heare. You haue hard how hee had a Neyghbour and ſinguler Frend a Noble Gentleman named Dom Roderico. Thys Gentleman amoungs all his faithfull Companions did moſt lament the harde fortune of Dom Diego. It came to paſſe that 22 moneths after that the poore Wilde penitent perfon

was gonне on Pilgrimage, Dom Roderico tooke his Iourney into Gascoyne for diuers his vrgent Affayres, which after hee had dispatched, were it that hee was gon out of his way, or that GOD (as it is most likely) did drie him thither, he approched towarde that Coaste of the Pyrene Mountaynes, where that tyme his good Frende Dom Diego did Inhabite, who dayly grew so Weake and Feeble, as if God had not sent him sodayne succour hee had gotten that hee most desired, which was death that shold haue bene the ende of his trauayles and Afflictions. The trayne of Dom Roderico being then a bowe shot of from the sauage Caben of Dom Diego, espyed the tractes of mens Feete newly troden, and beganne to maruayle what hee shold bee that dwelled there, confidering the Solitude, and Infertility of the Place, and also that the same was farre of from Towne or House. And as they deuised hereupon, they saw a man going into a Cauе, which was Dom Diego, comming from making his complayntes vpon the Rock spoken of before. From which hauinge turned his face toward that parte of the worlde where he thought the lodging was of that Saynct, whereunto he addressed his deuotions, Dom Diego hearinge the Noyse of the horſſe, was retired because hee woulde not bee feene. The knight which rode that way, seeing that, and knowing how far he was oute of the way, commaunded one of his men to Gallop towardes the Rocke, to learne what people they were that dwelled within, and to demaund how they might coaste to the high way that led to Barcelona. The Seruaunt approching neare the Cauе, perceiued the same so well Empaled and Fortified with Beasts skins before, fearing also that they were Theeues and Robbers that dwelled there, durſt not approche, and leſſe enquire the way, and therefore returnned towards his mayſter, to whom hee tolde what hee saw. The knight of another maner of Metall and hardineſſe than that Raſcall and coward ſeruaunt, like a ſtout, Couragious, and valiaunt Man, poaſted to the Cauе, and demaundinge who was within, he ſaw a man come forth ſo diſfigured, horrible to looke vpon, pale with ſtaring hayre vpright, as pitifull it was to behold him, which was the ſeruant of the foster Hermit. Of him Roderico demaunded what he was, and which was the way to Barcелone. "Syr," aunſwered that diſguied person: "I know not

how to aunswere your demaund, and mutch leſſe I know the country where we now preſently be. But ſir, (ſayde he fighing) true it is that we be two poore companions whom Fortune hath ſent hither, by what il aduenture I know not, to do penaunce for our Trefpaffes, and Offences." Roderico hearing him ſay ſo, began to call to his remembraunce his Freende Dom Diego, althoſh he neuer before that tyme ſuſpected the place of his abode. He lighted then from his horſſe, defirous to fee the ſingularities of the Rocke, and the magniſcience of the Cauiſh lodging, where hee entred and ſawe him whom he fought for, and yet for all that did not know him: He commoned with him a long tyme of the pleaſure of the ſolitary life in reſpect of theym that liued intangled with the comberſome Follies of this World. "For ſomutch" (quod he) as the ſpirite diſtracted and withdrawen from Worldly troubles is eleuate to the contemplation of heauenly thinges, and ſooner attendeth to the knowledge and reuerence of his God, than thoſe that bee conuersaunt amonſt men, and to conclude, the complaynts, the delights, ambitions, couetouſneſſe, vanities, and ſuperfluities that abounde in the confused Maze of Worldely troupe, doe cauſe a miſknowledge of our felues, a forgetfulneſſe of our Creator, and many times a negligence of piety and pureneſſe of Religion. Whiles the vñknowne Hermit, and the knight Roderico talked of theſe thinges, the Seruauntes of Roderico viſiting all the Corners of the deepe, and Stony Cell of thoſe Penitents, by Fortune eſpied two Saddles, one of theym rychely wroughte and Armed wyth Plates of Steele, that had bene made for ſome goodly Ienet. And vpon the Plate well Wroughte, Grauen and Enameled, the Golde for all the Rust cankering the Plate, did yet appear. For whych Purpose one of theym ſayde to the ſeruaunt of Dom Diego: "Good Father hitherto I ſee neyther Mule, nor Horſſe, for whom theſe Saddles can ferue, I pray thee to ſell them vnto vs, for they will doe vs more pleaſure, than preſently they do you." "Maifters (quod the Hermit,) if they like you, they be at your commaundement." In the meane time Roderico hauing ended his talke with the other Hermit, without knowing of any thinge that he deſired, ſayd vnto his men: "Now firs to horſe, and leaue wee theſe poore people to reſt in peace, and let vs goe ſeeke for the

right way which we so well as they haue lost." "Syr," (quod one of his men,) "there be two Saddles, and one of them is so exceeding fayre, so well garnished and wrought as euer you saw." The knight feeling in himselfe an vnaccustomed motion, caused them to be brought before him, and as he viewed and marked the riche Harneffe, and Trappings of the same, he stayeth to looke vpon the Hinder parte minionly wrought, and in the middest of the engrauing he red this devise in the Spanish Tongue.

Que brantare la fe, es causa muy fea.

That is,

To violate or breake fayth, is a thing detestable.

That only inscription made him to pause a while. For it was the Poesie that Dom Diego bore ordinarily in his armes, which moued him to think that without doubt one of those Pilgrimes was the very same man to whom that Saddle did appertayne. And therefore he bent himselfe very attentiuely afterwardes to behold first the one, and then the other of those desert Citizens. But they were so altered, as hee was not able to know them agayne. Dom Diego seeing his Freende so neare him, and the desire that he had to knowe hym, chafed very mutch in hys mynde, and the more his Rage began to waxe, when hee saw Roderico approch neare vnto hym more aduisedly to looke vpon hym, for hee had not his own Affections so mutch at commaundement, but hys Bloude moued hys Entrailes, and mounting into the most knownen place, caused outwardly the alteration which hee endured, to appeare. Roderico seeing hym to chaunge colour, was assured of that which before hee durst not suspect: and that which made him the sooner beleuee that he was not deceived, was a lyttle tuft of haire, so yellow as Gold, which Dom Diego had vpon his Necke, whereof Dom Roderico takyng heede, gaue ouer all suspition, and was well assured of that he doubted. And therefore displaying himselfe with hys armes opened vpon the necke of his friend, and imbracing him very louingly, his face bedewed with tears, sayd vnto him: "Alas, my Lord Dom Diego, what euill lucke from Heauen hath departed you from the good company of them which dye for sorrow, to see themselues berieued of the Beauty, lyght and ornament of their felowship? What are they that haue giuen

you occasion thus to Eclipse the bryghtnesse of your name, when it oughte most clearely to shyne, both for theyr present pleasure, and for the honour of your age? Is it from me sir, that you oughte thus to hide yourselfe? Do you think me so to be blynd, that I know not ryght well, that you are Dom Diego, that is so renoumed for vertue and proweſſe? I would not haue tarried here so longe, but to carry away a power to reioyce two persons, you being the one, by withdrawing your ſelfe from this heauy and vnſeemely Wyldernesſe, and my ſelfe the other, to enioy your Company, and by bearyng newes to your fryends, who ſith your departure, do bewaile and lament the ſame.” Dom Diego ſeeing that he was not able to conceyde the truth of that which was euidently feene, and the louing imbracemēts of his beſt Friende, began to feele a ccertayne tenderneſſe of heart lyke vnto that whych the Mother conceyuth, when ſhe recouereth hir Sonne that is long abſent, or the chaſte wyfe, the preſence of hir deare Husband, when ſhe clepeth him betwene hir armes, and frankely culleth and cheriſheth hym at hir pleaſure. For whych cauſe not able to refrain any longer for ioy and ſorrow together, weping and ſighing began to imbracē him wyth ſo good and hearty affection, as with good wyl the other had fought and longed to knowe where he was. And being come againe to himſelf, he ſayd to his faithfull and moſt louinge friend: “Oh God, how vneaſy and diſſiſt be thy iudgments to comprehend? I had thought to liue here miſerably, vnknoſen to al the world, and behold, I am here diſcouered, when I thought leaſt of it. I am indeeđe” (quod he to Roderico) “that wretched and vnfotunatē Dom Diego, euen that thy very great and louing fryend, who weary of his lyfe, afflycted wyth his vnhap, and tormented by fortune, is retyred into theſe deſeretes to accomplitsh the ouerplus of the reſt of his il luck. Now ſith that I haue ſatiſfied you herein, I beſeech you that being content wyth my fighte, yee wyll get you hence and leaue me heere to perorme that lyttle remnant whych I haue to lyue, without telling to any person that I am aliue, or yet to maniſte the place of my abode.” “What is that you ſay ſir,” (ſayd Roderico) “are you ſo farre ſtraught from your ryght wits, to haue a minde to continue this brutal Lyfe, to depryue al your

friends from the ioy whych they receiue by inioyng your company? Think I pray you that God hath caused vs to be born noble men, and hauing power and authority not to lyue in Corners, or be buryed amid the flauerly of the popular fort, or remaine idle within great palaces or secrete Corners, but rather to illustrat and giue lyght with the example of our vertue to thosse that shal apply themselfes to our dexterity of good behauior, and do lyue as depending vpon our edicts and commaundments: I appeale to your faith, what good shall succede to your subiects, who haue both heard and also knowne the benefit bestowed vpon them by God, for that hee gaue them a Lord so modest and vertuous, and before they haue experimeted the effect of his goodnesse and Vertue, deprived of him, that is adorned and garnished with sutch perfections? What comfort, contentation and ioy shall the Lady your mother receiue, by feelyng your losse to be so sodaine, after your good and delycate bryngyng up, instructed with sutch great diligence and vtterly berieuied of the fruiict of that education? It is you fir, that may commaund obedience to Parents, succor to the afflicted, and do iustice to them that craue it: Alas, they be your poore subiectes that make complaints, euen of you, for denying them your due presence. It is you of whom my good madame doth complayne, as of him that hath broken and violated his faith, for not comming home at the promised day." Now as he was about to continue his oration, Dom Diego vnwilling to heare him, brake of his talk saying: "Ah fir, and my great Friend: It is an easy matter for you to iudge of mine assayres, and to blame myne absence, not knowing peraduenture the cause thereof. But I esteeme you a man of so good iudgement, and so great a fryend of thinges that be honeste, and a Gentleman of great fidelity, as by vnderstanding my hard luck, when you be aduertised of the cause of my withdrawing into this solitarie place, you wyll rightly confesse, and playnely see that the wiest and most constant haue committed more vaine follies than those don by mee, forced with like spirite that now moueth and tormenteth me." Hauing sayd, he tooke aside Roderico, where he dyd tell vnto hym the whole discourse both of his Loue, and also of the rigor of hys Lady, not without weepyng, in sutch abundaunce

and with futch frequent fighes and fobs interruptyng so hys speach, as Roderico was constrained to keepe him company, by remembryng the obstinacie of hir that was the Mistresse of his heart, and thinkynge that already he had seene the effect of lyke misse-hap to fal vpon his owne head, or neare vnto the lyke, or greater distresse than that which he fawe his deare and perfect Fryend to endure. Notwythstanding he assayed to remoue him from that desperate minde and opinion of continuance in the desert. But the froward penitente swore vnto him, that so long as he liued (without place recouered in the good graces of his Gineura,) he would not returne home to his house, but rather change his being, to feke more fauage abode, and lesse frequented than that was. “ For ” (quod hee) “ to what purpose shall my retourne ferue where continuinge mine affection, I shall fele lyke cruelty that I dyd in time past, which wil bee more painful and heauy for me to beare than voluntary exile and banyshment, or bring me to that end wherein prefently I am.” “ Contente your self I beseech you, and suffer me to be but once vnhappy, and do not perswade mee to proue a second affliction, worse than the first.” Roderico hearing his reasons so liuely and wel applied would not reply, onely content that he would make him promyse to tarry there two monthes, and in that time attempt to reioyfe himselfe so wel as he could. And for hys owne part, he swore vnto him, that he would bee a meanes to reconcile Gineura, and bryng them to talke together. Moreouer, he gaue him assurance by othe, that hee shoulde not bee discouered by hym, nor by any in his Company. Wherewith the knyght somewhat recomforted, thanked him very affe&tuoously. And so leauyng wyth him a fielde bed, two feruaunts, and Money for his Necessties, Roderico tooke hys leaue, tellyng hym that shortly he would visite him againe, to his great contentation, as euer he was left and forsaken with gryefe and forrow, himselfe makynge great mone for the vnseemely state and myserable plught of Dom Diego. And God knoweth whether by the way, he detested the cruelty of pitilesse Gineura, blasphemynge a million of times the whole sexe of Womankyd, peraduenture not without iust cause. For there lieth hydden (I know not what) in the brests of Women, which at times like the

Wane and increase of the Moone, doth chaunge and alter, whereof a man can not tell on what foote to stand to conceiue the reasons of the same: whych fickle fragility of theirs (I dare not say mobility) is futch, as the subtillest wench of them al best skilled in Turner's Art, can not (I say deface) or so mutch as hide or colour that naturall imperfection. Roderico arriued at his house, frequented many times the lodging of Gineura, to espy hir fashions, and to see if any other had conquered that place, that was so well assayled and besieged by Dom Diego. And this wyse and sage knyght vfed the matter so well, that he fell in acquaintance wyth one of the Gentlewoman's Pages, in whom she had so great trust, as she conceyled from him very few of hir greatest secrete, not well obseruing the preceipte of the wyse man, who councelleth vs not to tell the secrete of the mynde to those, whose iudgement is but weake, and tongue very lauish and frank of speach. The Knyght then familiar with this Page, dandled him so with faire words, as by lyttle and lytle he wrong the Wormes out of his Nose, and vnderstode that when Gineura began once to take Pepper in snuffe against Dom Diego, she fell in loue wyth a Gentleman of Biskaye, very poore, but Beautyfull, young and lustye, whych was the Stewarde of the house: and the Page added further that hee was not then there, but woulde returne wythin three Dayes, as he had sent Woerde to hys mystresse, and that two other Gentlemen woulde accompany him to cary away Gineura into Biskaye, for that was their last conclusion: "And I hope" (quod he) "that she will take me with hir, bicause I am made priuy to their whole intent." Roderico hearing the treason of this flight and departure of the vnfaithful daughter, was at the first brunt astonned, but desirous that the Page shoulde not marke his altered Countenaunce, said vnto him: "In very deede meete it is, that the Gentlewoman shoulde make hir owne choice of husband, sith hir mother so little careth to prouide for hir. And albeit that the Gentleman be not so riche and Noble as hir estate deserueth, hir affection in that behalfe ought to suffise, and the honesty of his person: for the rest Gineura hath (thanks be to God) wherewith to intertaine the state of them both." These wordes he spake, farre from the thought of his hearte. For being alone by himself, thus he said:

“ O blessed God, how blinde is that loue, which is vnruled, and out of order: and what dispayre to recline to them, which (voide of reasoun) doe feede so foolishly of vayne thoughts and fond desires, in futch wife as two commodities, presented vnto them, by what ill lucke I know not, they forfake the best, and make choise of the worst. Ah Gineura, the fairest Lady in all this Countrey, and the mooste vnfaithfull Woman of oure time, where be thine eyes and iudgement? Whither is thy mynde straied and wandred, to acquite thyselfe from a great Lord, faire, rich, noble, and vertuous, to be giuen to one that is poore, whose parents be vnknowne, his proweſſe obscure, and birth of no aparant reputation. Behold, what maketh me beleue, that loue (so wel as Fortune) is not onely blynd, but also dazeleth the sight of them that hee imbraceth and captiuateth vnder his power and bondage. But I make a vowe (false woman) that it shal neuer come to passe and that this Biskaye gentleman shall neuer enjoy the spoyles whych iustly bee due vnto the Trauaille and faithfull seruice of the valyaunt and vertuous knyght Dom Diego. It shal be hee, or else I wil dye for it, whych shall haue the recompense of his troubles, and shall feele the caulme of that tempeſt, whych prefently holdeth hym at Anker, amyd the moſt daungerous rockes that euer were.” By this meanes Roderico knew the way how to keepe promise wyth his friende, which liued in expectation of the fame. The two dayes past, whereof the Page had ſpoken, the beloued of Gineura, fayled not to come, and with him two Gallants of Biskaye, valiaunt Gentlemen, and well exercyſed in Armes. That Nighte Roderico wente to ſee the olde Wydowe Lady, the Mother of the Mayden, and fyndyng oportunity to ſpeak to the Page, hee ſaid vnto hym: “ I ſee my Friend, accoordingly as thou diddeſt tell mee, that ye are vpon departing, the ſteward of the houſe beeing now retourned. I pray the tel mee, if thou haue neade of mee, or of any thyng that I am able doe for thee, affuring thee that thou ſhalt obtaine and haue what ſo euer thou requireſt. And therewithall I haue thought good to tel thee, and giue the warning (for thine owne ſake ſpecially) that thou keepe all thynges cloſe and ſecrete, that no ſlaundre or diſhonour do followe, to blot and deface the Same and prayſe of thy Miſtreſſe. And for my ſelfe I had rather dye,

than once to open my mouth, to discouer the least intent of this enterprye. But tell mee, I praye thee, when do ye depart?" "Sir" (quod the Page) "as my Mistrefesse saith, to morow about ten or eleuen of the Clocke in the Euening, when the Lady hir Mother shall bee in the sound of hir first sleepe." The knight hearyng that, and desirous of no better time, tooke hys leaue of the Page, and went home, where he caused to bee fente for tenne or twelue Gentlemen, his Neighbours and Tenaunts, whom he made priuy of his secretes, and partakers of that he went about, to deliuer out of Captiuity and miserie the chiefest of all his Friends. The Nighte of those two Louers departure being come, Dom Roderico, which knewe the way where they should passe, bestowed him selfe and his Company in Ambush, in a little Groue, almost three Miles of the Lodging of this fugitive Gentlewoman: where they hadde not long tarried but they hearde the tramplinge of Horsse, and a certaine whispring noise of People riding before them. Nowe the Nighte was somwhat cleare, which was the cause, that the Knighte amonges the thronge, knew the Gentlewoman, besides whome rode the Miserable Wretche that hadde stolne hir awaye. Whome so foone as Roderico perceyued full of despyte, moued wyth extreme passion, welding his launce into his rest, brake in the nearest way vpon the infortunate louer, with futch vehemency, as neither coate of Maile or Placard was able to saue his lyfe, or warraunt him to keepe company wyth that troupe which banded vnder loue's Enfeigne, was miserably slayne, by the guide of a blynd, naked, and thienish litle boy. And when he saw he had done that he came for, he sayd to the rest of the Company: "My Friends, thys man was carelesse to make inuaision vpon other mens ground." These poore Biskayes surpryfed vpon the sodayne, and seeyng the ambushment to multiply, put spurres to theyr horsse to the best aduantage they could for expedition, leauing their Conduct or guid gaping for breath and geuing a signe that he was dead. Whiles the other were making them-selues ready to runne away, two of Roderico his men, couered with Skarfes, armed, and vnknowne, came to sease vppon sorrowfull Gineura, who beholding her fryende deade, began to weepe and crye so straungely, as it was maruell that hir breath fayled

not. “Ah trayterous Theeues,” (said she) “and bloudy Murderers, why do ye not addrefse your felues to execute cruelty vpon the rest, sith you haue done to death hym, that is of greater value than you all? Ah my deare Fryend, what crooked and grieuous Fortune haue I, to see thee grouelyng dead on ground and I abyding in life, to be the pray of murderous Theeues and thou so cowardly beryued of lyfe.” Roderico wyth his face couered, drew neare vnto her, and sayde: “I beseech you Gentlewoman, to forget these straunge fashions of complaynt, sith by them ye bee not able to reuiue the dead, ne yet make your ende of gryefes.” The maiden knowing the voyce of hym, that had slayne hir fryende, began to cry out more fiercely than before. For whych cause one of the gentlemen in company with Roderico, hauing a blacke counterfeit beard with two lunets, in manner of spectacles, very large and great, that couered the moste part of his Face, approched neare the bashful maiden, and with bigge voice and terrible talk, holding his dagger vpon hir white and delicate breast, said vnto hir: “I sweare by the Almighty God, if I heare thee speake one word more, I wil sacrifice thee vnto the ghost of that varlet, for whome thou makeit thy mone, who deferued to end his daies vpon a gallow tree rather than by the hands of a gentleman. Holde thy peace therefore thou foolysh girle, for greater honour and more ample Benefite is meant to thee, than thou hast deferued. Ingratitude onely hath so ouerwhelmed thy good Nature, as thou art not able to iudge who be thy friends.” The gentlewoman fearing death, whych as she thought was present, held hir peace, downe alonges whose Eyes a ryuer of Teares dyd run, and the passion of whose heart appeared by affiduall fighes, and neuer ceassing sobbes, whych in end so quallifyed hir cheare, that the exteriour sadnesse was wholy inclofed wythin the mynd and thought of the afflicted Gentlewoman. Then Roderico caused the body of the dead to be buried in a lyttle Countrey Chappell, not farre out of theyr way. Thus they trauayled two dayes before Gineura knew any of them, that had taken hir away from hir louer: who permytted none to speake vnto hir nor she to any of hir company, beyng but a waiting maid, and the page that hadde dyscouered al the secrete to Dom Roderico. A notable example

surely for stolne and secrete mariages, whereby the honour of the contracted partes, is most commonly blemyshed, and the Commaundement of GOD violated, whose word enioyneth obedience to Parents in all ryghtfull causes, who if for any lyght offence, they haue power to take from vs the inheritance whych otherwyse naturall law would giue vs, what ought they of duety to doe, where rebellyous Chyldren abusing theyr goodnesse, do consume without feare of Liberty, the thynge that is in theyr free wyll and gouernement. In like maner diuers vndiscrete and folysh mothers are to be accused, which suffer their daughters of tender and chyldysh age to be enamored of theyr seruants, not remembryng how weake the flesh is, how prone and ready men be to do euyl, and how the seducing spirite wayting stil vpon us, is proclue and prone to surpryse and catch vs wythin his Snares, to the intent he may reioyce in the ruine of soules washed and redeemed wyth the blood of the Son of God. This troupe drawing neare to the caue of Dom Diego, Roderico sent one of his men to aduertise him of their comming, who in the absence of his fryende, fyllid and susteined with hope, shortely to see the onely Lady of hys hearte, accompanied wyth a merry and ioyfull Trayne, so foone as hee had somewhat chaunged his wilde maner of Lyfe, he also by lyttle and lyttle gayned a good part of hys lusty and fresh coloure, and almost had recouered that beauty, which he had when he firste became a Citizen of those deserto. Now hauing vnderstanding the mes sage sent vnto him by Roderico, God knoweth if with that pleasaunt tydings he felt a motion of Bloud, futch as made all his members to leape and daunce, whych rendred hys Mynde astonned, for the onely memorie of the thynge that poysed hys mynd vp and downe, not able to be wayed in equall Balaunce whereof rather he ought to haue made reioyfe than complayne, being assured to see hir, of whome he demaunded onely grace and pardon, but for recouery of hir, he durst not repose any certayne Iudgement. In the Ende hoystyng vp hys head lyke one rysen from a long and found sleepe, hee fayd: "Praife be to God, who yet before I dye, hath done me great pleasure, to suffer me to haue a syght of hir, that by causing my Matirdome, continueth hir stubburne manner of Lyfe, whych shall procure in like sort myne

vtter ruine and decay. Vpon the approch of whom I shall goe more ioyfull, charged with incomparable loue, to vyfit the ghosts beneath, in the prefence of that cruel swete, that now tormenteth me with the ticklysh tentation, and who sometymes hath made me taft a kind of Hony sugred with bytter Gal, more daungerous than the fuck of Poyson and vnder the vermyllion ruddē of a new sprouted Rose diuiuely blowne forth, hath hydden secrete Thornes the pryckes whereof hath me so lyuely touched, as my Wound cannot wcll bee cured, by any Baulme that may be thereunto applyed, without enioying of that myne owne missehappe, moste happy or wythout that remedy, whych almost I feele restyng in death, that so long and oftentymes I haue desired as the true remedy of all my paynes and gryefe." In the meane whyle Dom Roderico, whych tyll that tyme was not knownen vnto Gineura, drew neare vnto hir by the way as he rode, and talked wyth hir in this forte : " I doubt not (Gentlewoman) but that you think your self not wel contented to se me in this place, in sutch company and for occasion so vnseemely for my degre, and state, and moreouer knowyng what iniury I feeme to do vnto you, that euer was, and am so affectionate and friendly to the whole stocke of your race and Lynage, and am not ignoraunte that vpon the firste brunte you may iudge my cause vniust to carry you away from the handes of your fryend, to bring you into these deserte, wylde, and solitary places. But if ye confidred the force of that true amity, which by vertue sheweth the common Bondes of hearts and myndes of Men, and shall measure to what end this aēte is done, without to much stayng vpon the lyght apprehension of Choler, for a beginnyng somewhat troublesom, I am assured then (that if you be not wholly depryued of reason) you shall perceiue that I am not altogether worthy blame nor your selfe vtterly voyde of fault. And bycause we draw neare vnto the place, whether (by the help of God) I meane to conduct you, I beseech you to confider, that the true Seruaunt whych by all seruice and duety studieth to execute the commaundementes of him that hath puissance ouer him, doth not deserue to bee beaten or driuen away from the house of his maister, but to be fauored and cherisched, and ought to receyue equal recompense for

his seruice. I speake not this for my selfe, my deuotion beinge vowed elsewhere, but for that honest affection which I beare to all vertuous and chaste persons. The effect whereof I will not deny to tell you in tyme and place, where I shall use futch modefty towards you, as is meete for a maiden of your age and state. For the greatnesse of Noble Men and puissant, doth most appeare and shew forth it self, when they vse Mildenesse and Gentlenesse vnto thos, to whom by reason of their Authority they mighte execute cruelty and malice. Now to the end that I do not make you doubtfull long, al that which I haue done and yet meane to doe, is for none other purpose but to ease the grieuous paines of that moste faithful louer that loueth at thys Daye vnder the Circle of the Moone. It is for the good Knighte Dom Diego, that loueth you so dearely and still worshippeth your Noble fame, who bicause he wil not shew himselfe disobedient, liueth miserably amonge bruite beasts, amid the craggy rocks and mountaines, and in the deepe solitudes of comfortleffe dales and valleis. It is to him I say that I do bryng you, protesting vnto you by othe (Gentlewoman) that the misery wherein I saw him, little more than vi. Wekes past, toucheth me so neare the heart, as if the Sacrifice of my lyfe sufficed alone, (and without letting you to feele this painfull voyage) for the solace of his martirdome I would spare it no more, than I do mine owne endeuer and honor, besfides the hazarding of the losse of your good grace and fauour. And albeit I wel perceiue, that I do grieue you, by caufing you to enter this painfull iourney, yet I besech you that the whole displeasure of this fact may bee imputed vnto my charge, and that it would please you louingly to deale with him, who for your sake vseth so great violence against himself." Gineura as a woman half in despayre for the death of hir friend, behaued hir selfe like a mad woman void of wit and fense, and the simple remembraunce of Dom Diego his name so astonned her, (which name she hated far more than the pangs of death) that she staied a long time, hir mouth not able to shape one word to speake. In the ende vanquished with impacience, burning with choler, and trembling for sorrow, loked vpon Dom Roderico with an Eye no leffe furious, than a Tigrefesse caught within the Net, and feeth before hir face hir young

Fawnes murdered, wringing hir hands and beating hir delicate brest, she vsed these or sutch like woordes: "Ah bloudy traitor and no more Knight, is it of thee that I oughte to looke for so detestable a villany and treason? How darest thou be so hardy to entreat me for an other, that hast in myne owne prefence killed him, whose death I will purfue vpon thee, so longe as I haue life within this body? Is it to thee false theefe and murderer, that I ought to render accompte of that which I meant to doe? Who hath appointed thee to be arbitrator, or who gaue thee commision to capitulate the Articles of my mariage? Is it by force then, that thou wouldest I should loue that vnfaithfull Knighte, for whom thou hast committed and done this acte, that so longe as thou liuest shal blot and blemish thy renoume, and shal be so wel fixed in my mind, and the wounds shal cleave so neare my heart, vntill at my pleasure I be reuenged of this wrong? No, no, I assure thee no force done vnto mee, shall neuer make mee otherwyse dysposed, than a mortall Enimy both to thee which art a Theefe and rauisher of an other man's wife, and also to thy desperate frend Dom Diego, which is the cause of this my losse: and now not satissified with the former wrong done vnto me, thou goest about to deceiue me vnder the Colour of good and pure Friendship. But sith wicked Fortune hath made me thy Prysoner, doe with me what thou wylt, and yet before I suffer and endure that that Traytor Dom Diego doe enioy my Virginity, I will offer vp my lyfe to the shadowes and Ghostes of my faythful fryend and husband, whome thou hast so trayterously murdred. And therefore (if honestlye I may or ought entreat mine Enimy) I pray thee that by dognge thy duety, thou suffer vs in peace, and gyue lycence to mee, thys Page, and my two pore Maydens to depart whether we lyft." "God forbid" (quod Roderico) "that I should doe a Trespass so shamefull, as to depryue my dearest fryend of his ioy and contentation, and by falsifiing my faith be an occasion of hys death, and of your losse, by leauing you without company, wandring amids this wildernesse." And thus he continued his former discourse and talk, to reclaime thys cruell Damosell to haue pity vpon hir poore penytent, but he gained as mutch thereby, as if he had gone aboute to number the Sands alongs the Sea Coastes of

the maine Ocean. Thus deuising from one talke to an other, they arryued neare the Cauе, which was the stately house of Dom Diego: where Gineura lyghted, and saw the pore amorous Knight, humbly falling downe at hir feete, all forworne, pale, and disfigured, who weeping with warme teares, said vnto hir: “Alas, my deare Lady, the alone and onely mistresse of my heart, do you not thinke that my penaunce is long inonghe for the finne which ignorauntly I haue committed, if euer I haue don any fault at al? Behold [I beseech you (good ladie deare) what ioy] I haue conceiued in your absence, what pleasures haue nursed mine hope, and what consolation hath entertained my life: which truely had it not bene for the continual remembraunce of your diuine Beauty, I had of long time abreuiated the pains which do renew in me so many times the pangs of death: as often-times I think vpon the vnkindnes shewed vnto me by making so litle accompt of my fidelity: whych can nor shal receiue the same in good part, wer it so perfect as any assuraunce were able to make it.” Gineura swelling with sorrow and full of feminine rage, blushing with fury, hir eyes sparcklinge forth hir chollerick conceypts, vouchsafed not so much as to gine him one word for aunswere, and bicause she would not looke vppon him, she turned hir face on the other side. The poore and afflicted Louer, seeing the great cruelty of his felonous Mystresse, still kneeling vpon his knees, redoubling his armes, fetching Sighes with a voyce that seemed to bee drawne by force from the bottome of his heart, proceeded in these wordes: “Syth the sincerity of my fayth, and my long seruice madame Gineura, cannot persuade you that I haue beene most Obedient, Faythfull, and very Loyall seruaunt towards you, as euer any that hath serued Lady or Gentlewoman, and that without your fauour and grace it is vnpossible for mee any longer to liue, yet I doe very humbly beseech you, for that all other comfort is denied me, if there bee any gentlenesse and curtesie in you, that I may receyue this onely grace at your hands for the last that euer I hope to craue: which is, that you being thus greeuously offended with me, would do iustice vpon that vnfortunate man, that vpon his Knees doth instantly craue the same. Graunt (cruell mistresse) this my request, doe vengeaunce

at your pleasure vpon him, which willingly yeldeth himselfe to death with the effusion of his poore innocent bloud to satifly you, and verily farre more expedient it is for him thus to die, by appeasing your wrath, than to rest or liue to your discontentment or anoiaunce. Alas, shal I be so vnfortunate, that both life and death should bee denied me by one perfon of the world, whom I hoped to content and please by any fort or meanes what so euer restinge in mine humble obedience? Alas gentlewoman rid mee from this Torment, and dispatch your selfe from the grieve you haue to see this vnhappy Knight, who would say and esteeme himselfe most happy (his life being lothsome vnto you) if he may content you, by death done by your owne handes, sith other fauour he cannot expect or hope for." The Mayden hardned in hir Opinion, stooide still immoueable mutch like vnto a Rocke in the midst of the Sea, disquieted with a tempest of billowes, and fomy Waues in futch wife as one word could not be procured from hir mouth. Which vnlucky Dom Diego perceyuing, attached with the feare of present death, and faylinge his Naturall force fell downe to the Grounde, and faintyng saied: "Ah, what a recompence doe I receiue for this so faythfull Loue?" Roderico beholding that rufull fight, whilst the others went about to relieue Dom Diego, repaired to Gineura, and full of heauiness mingled with fury, said vnto hir: "By God (false fiendish woman) if so be that I doe chaunge my mind, I will make thee feele the smarte, no leſſe than thou shewest thy selfe dishonourable to them that doe thee honour: Art thou so careleſſe of so greate a Lord as this is, that humbleth himselfe so lowe to futch a strumpet as thou art: who without regarde either to hys renoume, or the honour of his House, is content to bee abandoned from his noble state, to become a fugitiue and straunger? What cruelty is this for thee to mispryse the greatest humility that man can Imagin? What greater amends canſt thou wyſh to haue, yea though the offence which thou presuppoſest had ben true? Now (if thou be wyſe) chaunge thy Opinion, except thou wouldest haue mee doe into ſo many pieces, thy cruel corpſe and vnaſſhful heart, as once this poore Knight did in parts the vnhappy hauke, which through thy folly did breed vnto him this diſtreſſe, and to thy ſelfe the

name of the most cruell and disloyall Woman that euer lyued. But what greater benefite can happen vnto thee, than to see thys Gentleman vtterly to forget the fault, to conceiue no finister suspition of thy running away, crauing pardon at thy Hands, and is contented to sacrifice him self vnto thine Anger, to appease and mytigate thy rage? Now to speake no more hereof, but to proceede in that which I began to say, I offer vnto thee then both death and Loue, choose whether thou lyft. For I sweare againe by hym that feeth and heareth all thinges, that if thou play the foole, that thou shalt feele and proue me to be the cruellest Ennemy that euer thou hadst: and sutch a one as shall not feare to imbrue his hands wyth the bloud of hir that is the death of the greatest friend I haue, and truest knight that euer bare armes." Gineura hearing that resolute aunswere, shewed hir selfe to be nothing afrayde nor declared any token of feare, but rather seemed to haue encouraged Roderico, in braue and mannish sort, farre diuers from the simplicite of a young and tender Mayden, as a Man would say, sutch a one as had neuer felt the assualtes and troubles of adverse fortune. Wherefore frouncyng her Browes, and grating hir Teeth wyth closed fifts, and Countenaunce very bold, she made him answere: "Ah thou Knight, whych once gauest assault to commit a villany and Treason thinkest thou now without remorse of confsyence to continue thy mischyefe: I speake it to thee Villayne, whych hauing shed the Bloud of an honeste Man than thou art, fearest not now to make me a Companion of hys Death. Which thyng spare not hardly to accomplaysh, to the intent that I liinge, may not be sutch a one as thou fally judgest me to be: for neuer Man hitherto vaunted, and never shall, that hath had the spoyle of my dearest Iewell: from the Fruict whereof, like an arrant Thiefe, thou hast depryued my loyall Spouse. Now doe what you lyste: for I am farre better content to suffer death, be it as cruel as thou art mischievous, and borne for the disquieting and vexation of honest Maidens then yelde vnto thy furies: notwithstanding I humbly beseech Almyghty God, to gyue thee so mucht pleasure, contentation and ioy in thy loue, as thou hast done to me, by hastening the death of my deare Husband. O GOD, if thou be a iust GOD, sutch a one, as from whom we thy

poore Creatures do beleue al iustice to proceede, thou I say which art the Rampire and refuge of al iustice, poure downe thy vengeance and plague vpon these pestiferous Thieues and murderers, which prepared a worldely plague vpon me thine innocent damsel. Ah wycked Roderico, think not that death can be so fearful vnto me, but that with good heart, I am able to accept the same, trusting verily that one day it shal be the cause of thy ruine, and the ouerthrowe of him for whom thou takest al these paines.” Dom Roderico maruelously rapte in sense imagined the Woman to be fully bente against hym, who then had puissance (as he thought,) ouer hir own heart: and thinking, that he sawe hir moued with like rage against him, as she was against Dom Diego, stode stil so perplexed and voyde of ryghte minde, as he was constrained to fitte downe, so feeble he felt him self for the onely remembraunce of hir euyll demeanor. And whilst this Pageant was a doing, the handmayd of Gineura, and hir page, inforced to persuade their mystresse to haue compassion vpon the Knight that had suffred so mutch for hir sake, and that she would consent to the honest requestes and good counsell of Roderico. But she which was stubbornly bent in hir fonde persuasions, made them aunsere: “What fooles? are you so mutch bewitched, eyther with the fayned teares of this disloyall Knight, whych colorably thus doth torment himselfe, or els are yee inchaunted with the venomous honny and tirannicall brauery of the Theefe which murdered my hufbande, and your mayster? Ah vnhappy caytife mayden, is it my chaunce to endure the assault of sutch Fortune, when I thought to liue at my best ease, and thus cruelly to tomble into the handes of him, whom I hate so mutch as he fayneth loue vnto me? And moreouer my vnlucky fate is not herewith content, but redoubleth my sorrowe, euen by those that be of my trayne, who ought rather to incourage mee to dy, than consent to so vnreasonable requestes. Ah loue, loue, how euill be they recompenced which faythfully doe Homage vnto thee? And why should not I forget all Affection, neuer hereafter to haue mynde on man to proue beginning of a pleasure, which tasted and felt bringeth more displeasure than euer ioy engendreth delight. Alas, I neuer knewe what was the fruiete of that which so straungely did attach me,

and thou O trayterous and theeuishe Loue, haste ordayneid a banquet serued with futch bitter dishes, as forced I am perforce to taste of their egre sweetes: Auaunt sweete folly, auaunt, I doe henceforth for euer let thee slip, to imbrace the death, wherein I hope to find my greatest rest, for in thee I finde noughte else but heapes of strayingne Passions. Auoyde from me all mishap, flee from me ye furious ghostes and Fayries most vnkinde, whose gaudes and toyes dame loue hath wrought to keepe occupied my louing minde, and suffer me to take ende in thee, that I may liue in an other life without thee, being now charged with cup of grieve, which I shall quaffe in venomous drincke soaked in the Sops of bitternesse. Sharpen thou thy selfe, (O death vnkinde) prepare thy Darte, to strike the Corpse of hir, that she may voyde the Quarelles shotte agaynst hir by hir Aduersary. Ah poore hearte, strip thy selfe from hope, and qualifie thy desires. Cease henceforth to wishe thy Lyfe, seeing, and feelinge the appoyncted fight of loue and Life, combattynge within my minde, els where to seeke my peace in an other world, with him to ioy, whych for my sake was sacrificed to the treason of varlets handes, who for the perfite hoorde of his desires, noughte else dyd seeke but to soile his bloudy fistis with the purest bloude of my loyall friend. And I this floud of Teares do shread to faciate his felonous moode that is the iust shortening of my dolefull Dayes.” When she had thus complayned, she began horribly to torment hir selfe that the cruellest of the company were moued with compassion, to see hir thus strangely straught of hir wits: neuertheles they did not discontinue by duety to folcrite hir to haue regard to that which poore fayntyng Dom Diego dyd endure: who so foone as wyth freshe Fountayn water hee was reuiued, seeing still the heauinessse of his Lady, and hir increased disdaine and choler againste hym vanished in diuers foundings: which moued Roderico from studye deepe, wherein he was, to ryse, whereunto the rage of Gineura had cast him downe, bicause forgetting all imaginarie affection of his Lady, and proposing his duety before his eyes, whych ech Gentleman oweth to Gentle Damsels [and womenkind], styll beholding with honorable aspe&ct the gryefes of the martyred wyldernesse Knyght, sighing yet in former gryefes, he sayd vnto Gineura, “Alas, is it possyble,

that in the heart of so young and delicate a maiden, there may bee harbour'd so straunge fury and vnreasonable rage? O God, the effect of the cruelty resting in this Woman, painting it selfe in the imaginatiue force of my mind, hath made me feare the like mysshappe to come to the cruell state of this disaduenturous gentleman? Notwythstanding (O thou cruell beast) thinke not that thys thy fury shall stay me from doing thee to death, to rid thee from follye and disdayne, and this vnfortunate louer from despayre and trouble, verily beleuing, that in tyme it shalbe knowne what profit the World shall gayne by purgyng the fame of sutch an infected plague as is an vnkynd and arrogante hearte: and it shall feele what vtility ryseth by thyne ouerthrowe. And I doe hope besydes in tyme to come, that Men shall prayse this deede of myne, who for preseruyng the Honoure of one House, hath chosen rather to doe to death two offenders, than to leaue one of them aliue, to obfcurse the glory and brightnesse of the other. And therefore" (sayd he, tourning his face to those of his traine,) "cut the throte of this stubborne and froward beast, and doe the like to them that be come with hir, shewe no more fauor vnto them all, than that cursed strumpet doth mercy to the life of that miserable Gentleman, who lieth a dying there for loue of hir." The Mayden hearing the cruel sentence of hir death, cryed out so loud as she coulde, thinking reskue woulde haue come, but the poore Wench was deceiued: for the desert knew none other, but those that were abiding in that troupe. The Page and the woman seruaunt exclamed vpon Roderico for mercy, but he made as though he heard them not, and rather made signe to his men to do what he commaunded. When Gineura fawe that their deathe was purposed in deede, confirmed in opinion rather to dy, than to obey, she said vnto the executioners: "My friends, I beseech you let not these innocentes abide the penaunce of that which they neuer committed. And you, Dom Roderico, be reuenged on me, by whome the fault, (if a woman's faith to hir husband may be termed a faulte) is don. And let these infortunate depart, that bee God knoweth guiltles of any cryme. And thou my friend, which liuest amonges the shadowes of faythfull louers, if thou haue any feelinge, as in deede thou prouest being in another world,

behold the purenesse of mine heart and fidelity of my loue: who to keep the same inuiolable, do offer my self voluntarily to the death, which this cruell tyrant prepareth for me. And thou hangman the executioner of my ioyes, and murderer of the immortall pleasures of my loue (sayd she to Roderico) glut thy vnsaciable defire of bloud, make dronke thy mind with murder, and boast of thy litle triumph, which for all thy threates or persuaſible words, thou canſt not get from the heart of a ſimple maiden, ne cary away the victory for all the battred breach made into the ram-pare of hir honour." When ſhe had ſo ſaid, a Man would haue thought that the memory of death had cooled hir heate, but the ſame ferued hir as an assured ſolace of hir paynes. Dom Diego being come to himſelf and ſeing the diſcourse of that tragedie, being now addreſſed to the laſt act and end of that life and ſtage of faire and golden locked Gineura, making a vertue of neceſſity, recouered a lyttle corage to faue, (if it were poſſible) the life of hir, that had put hys owne in hazard miserably to end. Hauing ſtayed them that held the maiden, he repayred to Dom Roderico, to whom he ſpake in this wife: "I ſee wel my good Lord and great Friende, that the good will you beare me, caufeth you to vſe this honest order for my behalfe, whereof I doubt if I ſhould lyue a whole hundred yeaſes, I ſhall not be able to ſatisfy the leaſt of the bondes wherein I am bound, the ſame ſurpaſſing all mine ability and power. Yet for al that (deare friend) fith you ſee the fault of this miſſeſhap to arife of my predeſtinate ill lucke, and that man cannot auoyde things once ordained, I beſeech you do me yet this good pleaſure (for all the benefits that euer I haue receiued) to ſend back again this gentlewoman with hir trayne, to the place from whence you toke hir, wyth like aſſurance and con-duct, as if ſhee were your ſiſter. For I am pleaſed with your endeuer, and contented with my miſſortune, aſſuring you ſir beſides, that the trouble which ſhe endureth, doth far more gryeue my heart than al the paine which for hir ſake I ſuffer. That hir ſorrow then may decrease and mine may renue againe, that ſhe may lyue in peace, and I in Warre for hir cruel beauty ſake, I wyll wayt vpon Clotho, the Spyner of the threden life of man vntil ſhe breake the twyſted lace that holdeth the fatall courſe of

my dolefull yeares. And you Gentlewoman lyue in rest, as your poore suppliant, wretched Dom Diego, shalbe citizen of wyld places, and vaunt you hardely that yee were the best beloued maiden that euer lived." Maruellous truly be the forces of loue, when they discouer their perfection, for by their meanes thinges otherwise impossible be reduced to sutch facility, as a man would iudge that they had never bene so hard to obtaine, and so painefull to pursue: As appeared by this damsel, in whome the wrath of fortune, the pynche of iealofie, the intollerable rage of hir fryendes losse, had ingendred a contempe of Dom Diego, an extreame desire to be reuenged on Dom Roderico, and a tediousnesse of longer Lyfe. And now putting of the vaile of blynde appetite, for the esclarising of hir vnderstandingy Eyes, and breaking the Adamant Rocke planted in the middes of hir breast, she beheld in open sight the stedfastnesse, pacience and perseueration of hir great fryend. For that supplication of the Knight had greater force in Gineura, than all hys former feruyces. And full wel she shewed the same, when throwyng hir selfe vpon the Necke of the desperate Gentleman, and imbracyng hym very louyngly she sayd vnto him: "Ah sir, that your felicity is the begynnyng of my great ioy of Mynd, whych fauoreth now of sweetnes in the very same, in whom I imagyned to be the welsprynge of bytternesse. The diminutyon of one gryefe is, and shall bee the increase of a bonde, sutch as for euer I wyll call my selfe the moste humble slauie of your honor, lowly beseechynge you neuerthelesse to pardon my follyes, wherewyth full fondely I haue abused youre pacience. Consider a whyle sir, I beseech you, the Nature and secrecye of loue. For thoſe that be blinded in that passion, thynke them selues to be perfeſte Seers, and yet be the firſt that commit moſt filthy faultes. I doe not denie any committed wrong and trespass, and doe not refuse therefore the honest and gentle Correction that you ſhall appointe mee, for expiation of myne offence." "Ah my Noble Lady," (aunſwered the knight, all rapt wyth pleaſure, and halfway out of his wyts for ioy) "I humbly beseech you inflyȝt vpon my poore wretched body no further panges of Death, by remembryng the glory of my thought, ſith the recitall bryngeth with it a taſt of the trauailes which you

haue suffred for my ioy and contentation." "It is therefore," (quod she) "that I think my self happy: for by that meanes I haue knowne the perfect qualties that be in you, and haue proued two extremities of vertue. One confisiting in your constancy and loyalty wherby you may vaunt yourself aboue hym that sacrificed his Lyfe vpon the bloudy body of his Ladye who for dying so, finished his Trauailles. Where you haue chosen a life worse than death, no lesse paynefull a hundred times a Day, than very death it self. The other in the clemency wherwyth you calme and appease the rage of your greatest aduersaries. As my self which before hated you to death, vanquished by your courtesie do confesse that I am double bound vnto you, both for my lyfe and honor: and hearty thankes do I render to the Lord Roderico for the violence he dyd vnto me, by which meanes I was induced to acknowledge my wrong, and the right whych you had to complayne of my beastly resistance." "Al is wel," sayd Roderico, "sith without peril of honor we may returne home to our houses: I intend therefore (sayd he) to send word before to the Ladies your inothers of your returne, for I know how so wel to couer and excuse this our enterpryse and secrete iorneis, as by God's affiance no blame or displeasure shall ensue thereof. And like as (said he smiling) I haue builded the fortresse whych shot into your campe, and made you flie, euen so I hope (Gentlewoman) that I shalbe the occasion of your victorye, when you combat in close campe, with your sweete cruel Ennimy." Thus they passed the iorney in pleasaunt talk, recompensing the 2 Louers with al honest and vertuous intertainment for their griefs and troubles past. In the meane while they sent one of their Seruaunts to the two widow Ladies, which were in greate care for their Children, to aduertise them that Gineura was gone to vist Dom Diego, then being in one of the castles of Roderico, where they were determined if it were their good pleasure, to consummate their mariage, hauing giuen faith and affiance one to the other. The mother of Gineura could not heare tel of more pleasant newes: for she had vnderstood of the foolysh flyght and escape of hir daughter, with the steward of hir house, wherof she was very sorrowful, and for grief was like to die, but assured and recomforted with those newes

she failed not to mete the mother of Dom Diego, at the appointed place whether the 2 louers were arriued two daies before. Ther the mariage of that fair couple (so long desired) was solemnised with futch magnificence as was requisite for the state of those two noble houses. Thus the torment indured, made the ioye to sauour of some other taste than they do feele, which without paine in the exercise of loue's pursute, attaine the top of theyr desires: and truly their pleasure was altogether like to him that nourished in superfluous delicacy of meates cannot aptly so wel iudge of pleasure as he which sometimes lacketh the abundance. And verily loue wythout bitternesse, is almost a cause without effects, for he that shall take away gryefs and troubled fanfies from Louers, depryuet them of the prayse of their stedfastnesse, and maketh vayne the glory of their perseuerence: Forhee is vnworthy to beare away the price and Garland of triumph in the Confliet, that behaueth himselfe like a coward, and doth not obserue the lawes of armes and manlike dueties incident to a combat. This History then is a Mirrour for Loyall Louers and Chaste Suters, and maketh them detest the vnshamefastnesse of those, which vpon the first view do followe with might and mayne, the Gentlewoman or Lady that gieueth them good Face, or Countenaunce whereof any gentle heart, or mynde, nourfed in the Schoolehouse of vertuous education, will not bee squeymishe to those that shall by chaste salutation or other incountry, doe their curteous reuerence. This History also yeldeth contempt of them, which in their affection forget themselues abasing the Generosity of their Courages to be reputed of fooles the true champions of loue, whose like are they that desire such regarde. For the perfection of a true Louer confisfeth in passions, in sorrows, grieves, martirdomes, or cares, and mutch lesse arriueth he to his desire, by fighes, exclamations, Weapings, and childishe playnts: For so mutch as vertue ought to be the bande of that indissoluble amity, which maketh the vnion of the two feuered bodies of that Woman man, which Plato describeth, and causeth man to trauell for hys whole accomplishment in the true pursute of chaste loue. In which labour truly, fondly walked Dom Diego, thinking to finde the fame by his dispayre amiddest the sharpe solitary Deserts of those Pyrene

Mountaynes. And truely the duety of his perfect friende, did more lively disclose the same (what fault so euer he did) than all his Countenaunces, eloquent letters or amorous Messages. In like manner a man doth not know what a treasure a true Friende is, vntill hee hath proued his excellency, specially where necessary maketh him to taste the swetenes of futch delicate meate. For a frend being a seconde himselfe, agreeth by a certayne naturall Sympathie and attonement to th'affections of him whom he loueth both to participate his ioyes and pleasures, and to sorrowe his aduerfity, where Fortune shall vse by some misaduentures, to shewe hir accustomed mobility.

THE THIRTIETH NOUELL.

A Gentleman of Siena, called Anselmo Salimbene, curteously and gently deliuereth his enemy from death. The condemned party seeing the kinde parte of Salimbene, rendreth into his hands his sister Angelica, with whom he was in loue, which gratitudo and curtesie, Salimbene well markinge, moued in Conscience, woulde not abuse hir, but for recompence tooke hir to his wyfe.

WEE do not meane here to discouer the Sumptuosity and Magnificence of Palaces, stately, and wonderfully to the view of men, ne yet to reduce to memory the maruellous effectes of man's Industry to builde and lay Foundations in the deepest Chanel of the mayne sea, ne to describe their ingenious Industry, in breaking the Craggy Mountaynes, and hardest Rocks, to ease the crooked Passages of weary waiers, for Armies to marche through in accesible places. Onely now do we pretend to shewe the effectes of loue, which surmount all Opinion of common thinges, and appeare so miraculous as the founding, and erecting of the Collissæi, Colloffæi, Theatres, Amphitheatres, Pyramides, and other workes wonderfull to the world, for that the hard indured path of hatred and displeasure long time begoon, and obstinately pursued wyth straunge cruelty, was conuerted into loue, by th'effect of concord, futch as I know none, but is so mutch astonned, as hee maye haue good cause to wonder, confyderyng the stately foundations vpon which Kinges and greate Monarchs haue employed the chyefest reuuenues of their prouinces. Now lyke as ingratitude is a vice of greatest blame and discommendation amongs men, euen so Gentlenesse and Kindnesse ought to beare the title of a most commendable vertue. And as the Thebans were accused of that crime, for their great Captaynes Epaminondas and Pelopidas. So the Plateens (contrarywife) are praised for their solempne obseruation of the Grekes benefits, which deliuered them oute of the Persians bondage. And the Sicyonians beare away the prysse of eternall prayse, for acknowledgyng the good turnes receiued of Aratus, that delyuerged them from the cruelty of the tyrants. And

if Philippo Maria, duke of Milan, deserued eternal reproch for his ingratitude to his wife Beatrix, for the secrete killing of hir, he being enryched with hir goodes and treasures: a barbarous Turke borne in Arabia, thal carry the prafe, who being vanquished in Arabia, by Baldouine, kyng of Hierusalem, and he and his Wife taken prysyoners, and his treasures fallen into the hands of that good king, issiued of the Loraine blood, who neuerthelesse seeing that the Chryftian had deliuered him, and restored againe his wife would not be vanquished in magnificence and liberalitye, and mutch lesse beare the name of an vnkind prince, but rather when Baldouine was ouercome of the infidels, and being retyred within a certaine city, the Admiral of Arabie, came to him in the night, and tellyng him the deuice of his companions, conueyed hym out of the City, and was hys guide vntill he sawe hym free from peril. I haue alleaged the premyses, bycause the History whych I purpose to recyte, aduoucheth two examples not Vulgare or Common, the one of very great Loue, and the other of sutch acceptation and knowledgynge thereof, as I thought it pity the same should lurk from the Acquayntaunce of vs Englysh Men. And that they alone should haue the Benefite thereof whych vnderstand the Italian tongue, supposing that it shall bryng some fruyt and commodity to this our Englishe Soyle, that ech Wyghte may frame their lyfe on those whych in straung Countries far from vs, haue lyued vertuously wythout reproch that might soyle or spotte theyr name. In Siena then (an auncient, and very noble City of Toscane, which no longe time past was gouerned by hir Magistrates, and liued in hir own lawes and liberties, as the Lucquois, Pisans, and Florentines do) were two families very rich, noble, and the chiefe of the Citty called the Salimbenes, and Montanines, of the Race and Stock whereof, excellent men in their Common wealth haue descended, very good and expert Souldiers for conducte of Armies. Those two houses in the beginning were so great freendes, and frequented sutch loue and familiarity, as it seemed they had bene but one house and bloude, dayly vsing eche others company, and banketting one another. But Italy in all times being as it were a Store house of troubles, and a very marte of sedition, bandes, and parcialities, specially of ciuill warres in euery Citty, it coulde

not be that Siena shoulde alone enioy hir liberty in peace, and
accoide of Cittizens, and vaunt hir selfe to bee free from know-
ledge of particular debate. For of warres shee had good experience
against the Florentines, who by long remembraunce haue don
what they coulde to make hir subiect vnto them. Nowe the
cause of that discorde rose euen by them which kept the Cittizens
in vnity and concord, and was occasioned by those 2 houses the
nobleſt, and moſt puissant of their common wealth. It is not
vnknowne to any man, that antiquity ordayneſt it to be peculiare
for nobility, to trayne vp there children in huntinge, aſwell
to bolden and Noſell theym in daungers, as to make them ſtronge,
and accuſtomed in trauayle, and to force them ſhun the delicate
lyfe and great Idlenes which accompany honorable houſes, and
thoſe of gentle bloud, forſomutch as by the purſuite of Beaſtes,
ſleyghts of warre bee obſerued: the Hounds be the ſquare battell,
the Greyhoundes be the flanquarts and Wynges to follow the enimy,
the horſeman ſerueth to gieue the Chace, when the Game ſpeedeth
to couert, the Horneſ be the Trumpets to ſounde the Chafe and
Retire, and for incouragement of the Dogges to run. To be ſhort,
it ſeemeth a very Campe in battayle, ordayneſt for the pleaſure
and paſſetyme of noble youth. Neuertheleſſe, by hunting diuers
miſſeſfortunes doe arife, and fundry daungers haue haappened by
the fame. Meleager loſt his Lyfe for the viſtory of the wyld Bore
of Callydonia, Cephalus was ſlaine for kylling his deare beloued
Pocris, and Acaſtus was accuſed for muſtering the King's ſonne
of whome he was the Tutour. William Rufus, one of our Englyſh
Kings, the ſon of the Conquerour, was killed with an Arrow in the
New Forrest by a French Gentleman called Walter Tyrel, as he was
purſuing the Harte. Other histories reporte dyuers peryls chaunced
in hunting, but yet the fame worthy to be cheryſhed, frequented
and uſed by good aduife and moderate paſtyme. So the huntinge
of the wyld Bore defyled the City of Siena, with the bloud of hir
owne Cittizens, when the Salimbenes and Montanines vpon a daye
in an aſſembled company, incountring vpon a greate and fierce Bore,
toke hym by force of men and Beaſtes. When they had don, as
they were banketting and communing of the nimbleneſſe of their
dogs, ech man praifing his owne, as hauing done beſte, there

rose greate debate amongs them [vpon that matter], and proceeded so farre, as fondly they began to reuile one another with words, and from taunting termes to earnest blowes, wherewith diuers in that skirmish were hurt on both fides: In the end the Salimbenes had the woorſſe, and one of the principall slayne in the place, which appalled the rest, not that they were discoraged, but attending time and season of reuenge. This hatred so ſtrangely kindled betwene both partes, that by lyttle and lyttle, after many combats and ouerthrowes of eyther fide, the loſſe lyghted vpon the Montanines, who with their wealth and rycheſſe were almoſt brought to nothing, and thereby the rygour and Choler of the Salimbenes appeaſed, none being able to reſiſt them, and in ſpace of time forgot all iuriſes. The Montanines alſo that remayned at Siena, liued in quyet, wythoute chalenge or quarell of their aduersaries, howbeit muuall talke and haunt of others company vtterly furceafeſed. And to ſay the truthe, there were almoſt none to quarell wythall, for the whole Bloude and Name of the Montanines reſted in one alone, caſted Charles the Sonne of Thomas Montanine, a young man ſo honest, and well brought vp as any then in Siena, who had a fyſter, that for beauty, grace, curteſy and honeſty, was comparable with the beſt in all Thoscane. This poore young Gentleman had no great reueneue, for that the patriomonie of his predeceſſors was wasted in charges for entertainment of Souldiers in the time of the hurly burly and debaſes aforſaid. A good parte alſo was confiſcate to the Chamber of Siena for trefpaffes and forfaitures committed: with the remayne he ſuſtained his family, and indifferently maintained hys porte ſoberly within his owne house, keping his ſiſter in decent and moderate order. The Maiden was caſted Angelica, a Name of trouth, without offence to other, due to hir. For in very deede in hir were harbored the vertue of Curteſy and Gentlenesse, and was ſo wel inſtructed and nobly brought vp, as they which loued not the Name or race of hir, could not forbeare to command hir, and wyſhe theyr owne daughters to be hir lyke. In ſutche wife as one of hir chiefeſt foes was ſo ſharpeſly beſet with hir vertue and beauty, as he loſt his quiet ſleepe, and luſt to eate and drinke. His name was Anſelmo Salimbene, who woulde wyllingly haue made ſute

to marry hir, but the discord past, quite mortified his desire, so soone as he had deuised the plot wythin his brayne and fansie. Notwithstanding it was impossible that the louer so lyuely grauen and roted in his mind, could easly be defaced. For if once in a day he had not seene hir, his heart did fele the torments of tosting flames, and wished that the hunting of the Bore, had neuer decaied a family so excellent, to the intent he myght haue matched himself with hir, whome none other could displace out of his remembraunce, that was one of the rycheſt Gentlemen and of greatest power in Siena. Now for that he durſt not diſcouer his amorous grieſe to any perſon, was the chiefest cauſe that martired moſt his hearte, and for the auncient festred malice of thoſe two fami-lies, he deſpayred for euer, to gather either floure or fruiſt of that affection, preſuppoſing that Angelica would neuer fixe hir Loue on him, for that his Parents were the cauſe of the defeaſte and ouerthrow of the Montanine houſe. But what? There is nothing durable vnder the heauens. Both good and euyll haue theiſr reuoluſion in the gouernment of humaue affayres. The amityes and hatredes of Kynges and Prynces, be they ſo hardened, as commonly in a Moment hee is not ſeene to be a hearty Friende, that lately was a cruell Foe, and ſpyred naught elſe but the ruine of his Aduersary? Wee ſee the variety of Humayne chaunces, and then doe iudge at eye what great ſimplicity it is to ſtay and ſettle certayne, and infaillible iudgement vpon man's vndoinge, ſeeth himſelfe aduaunced to hys eſtate agayne, by reuenge ouer his Enimies. Calir Baffa gouerned whilom the great Mahomet, that wan the Empire of Conſtantinople, who attempted nothing without the aduice of that Baffa. But vpon the ſodayne he ſaw him ſelfe reieected, and the next day ſtrangled by commaundement of him, which ſo greatly honoured him, and without iuft cauſe did him to a death ſo cruell. Contrarywife Aragon the Tartarian entring Armes againſt his Uncle Tangodor Caui, when hee was vpon the Poynct to loſe his Lyfe for his rebellion, and was conueyed into Armenia to be executed there, was refcued by certayne Tar-

tarians the houshold seruaunts of his dead vncle, and afterwards Proclaymed King of Tartary about the year 1285. The example of the Emprefse Adaleda is of no leſſe credit than the former, who being fallen into the hands of Beranger the Vſurper of the Empyre escaped his fury and cruelty by flight, and in the ende maried to Otho the firſte, ſawe hir wrong reuenged vpon Beranger and all his Race by hir Sonne Otho the ſecond. I aduouch theſe Hystories to proue the mobility of fortune, and the chaunge of worldly chaunces, to th'ende you may ſee that the very fame miſery which followed Charles Montanine hoyſted him aloft agayne, and when he looked for leaſt ſuccour, he ſaw deliueraunce at hand. Now to prosecute our Hylſtory: know yee that while Salimbene by little and little pined for loue of Angelica, whereof ſhee was ignoraunt and careleſſe, and albeit ſhee curteouſly rendred health to him, when ſometimes in his amorous fit he beheld hir at a Window, yet for al that ſhee neuer ſo muſch as gueſſed the thoughts of hir louing enemy. During theſe haps it chaunced that a rich Cittizen of Siena, hauiing a ferme adioyning to the Lands of Montanine, deſirous to encrease his Patrimony, and annexe the fame vnto his owne, and knowing that the yong Gentleman wanted many thinges, moued him to ſel his inheritaunce, offring hym for it in ready money, a m. Ducates, Charles which of al the wealth and ſubſtaunce left him by his auncester, had no more remaynyng but that countrey Ferme, and a Palace in the City (ſo the rich Italians of ech City, terme their houſes,) and with that lytle lyued honeſtly, and maintained his ſiſter ſo wel as he could, refuſed flatly to diſpoſe himſelfe of the portion, that renewed vnto him the happy memory of thoſe that had ben the chiefe of all the Common Wealth. The couetous wretch ſeeing himſelfe fruſtrate of his pray, conceiued ſutche rancor againſt Montanine, as he purpoſed by right or wrong to make him not only to forfaſt the fame, but alſo to loſe his lyfe, following the wicked deſire of tirannous Iefabell, that made Naboth to be ſtonned to death to extort and wrongfully get his vineyard. About that time for the quarels and common dyscordeſ raigning throughout Italy, the Nobility were not affuſed of ſafety in their Countreis, but rather the common fort and rafcall number, were the chief rulers and

gouerners of the common wealth, whereby the greatest part of the Nobility or those of beste authority being banished, the villanous band, and grofest kind of common people made a law (like to the Athenians in the time of Solon) that all persons of what degree and condition so euer they were, which practized by himselfe or other meanes the restabylshing or reuocation of futch as were banished out of their Citye, should lose and forfaite the summe of m. Florens, and hauing not wherewith to pay the con- dempnation, their head should remaine for gage. A law no doubt very iust and righteous, scenting rather of the barbarous cruelty of the Gothes and Vandales, than of true christians, stopping the retire of innocents exiled for particular quarels of Citizens incited one against another, and rigorously rewarding mercy and curtesy, with execution of cruelty incomparable. This Citizen then purposed to accuse Montanine for offending against the law, because otherwise he could not purchase his entent, and the same was easy inough for him to compasse, by reason of his authority and estimation in the Citye: for the Endytemente and plea was no sooner red and giuen, but a number of post knightes appeared to depose against the poore Gentleman, to beare witnesse that he had trespassed the Lawes of the Countrey, and had sought meanes to introduce the banished, with intent to kyll the gouerners, and to place in state those factious, that were the cause of the Italian troubles. The myserable Gentleman knewe not what to do, ne how to defend himself. There were against him the Moone and the vii. starres, the state of the City, the Proctor and Judge of the Courte, the wytnesses that gaue euidence, and the law whych con- dempned him. He was sent to Pryson, sentence was pronounced against him with futch expedition, as he had no leyture to consider his affayres. There was no man, for feare to incurre the displeasures of the Magistrates, that durst open hys mouth to speake or make sute for hys delyueraunce. Like as the most part of fryendes in these dayes resembling the crow, that flyeth not but after carrian to gorge his rauenous Crop, and futch friends doe visite the house of the fryend but for profit, reuerencyng him so long as he is in prosperite, accordyng to the Poet's com- playnt.

Like as the purest gold in fieri flames is tried,
Euen so is fayth of fryends in hard estate descried.
If hard missehap doth thee affray,
Ech of thy friends do flie away,
And he which erft full friendly semde to thee,
A friend no more to thy poor state is hee.

And simple Wyghtes ought not to bee afrayde, and thynke amyſſ if Fryendes doe flee away, fith Prynces and great Lords incurre futch hap and Fortune. The great leader of the Romayne Armies, Pompeius, the honor of the people and Senate of Rome, what companion had he to flee with hym? Whych of his auncient friends toke paine to rescue and delyuer him from his Enimyes hands which did pursue him? A king of *Ægypt* which had known and found this good Romane Prynce a kind and gentle fryend, was he that killed him, and fent his head to his Victor and unsatiſble greedy gutte Julius Cæſar, falfifying his promised fayth, and forgetting his receiued pleasures. Amongs all the comforts which this pore Siena Gentleman found, although but a curſſed Traitor, was thys vnfaythfull and pestiferous Camæleon, who came and offred him al the pleasure and kindnesſe he was able to do. But the varlet attended conuenient tyme to make him taste his poyſon, and to let him ſee by effect, how dangerous a thing it is to be il neighbored, hoping after the condempnation of Montanine he ſhould at pleasure purchafe the Lordſhippe, after whych with ſo open mouth he gaped. Ouer whom he had hys wyll: for two or three dayes after the recitall of the endytement, and giuing of the euydence, Charles was condempned, and his fine ſeffed at m. Florins to be payed within xv. dayes, vntyl whych time to remaine in Pryſon. And for default of futch payment to loſe his heade, bicaufe he had infringed the Lawes, and broken the Statutes of the Senate. This ſentence was very diſſicult for poor Montanine to diſteſt, who ſaw all his goodes like to be diſpoyleſt and confiſcate, complaing specially the fortune of fayre Angelica his ſiſter, whych all the tyme of the impryſonment of hir deare brother, neuer went out of the house, ne ceaſed to weepe and lamente the hard fortune whereinto their family was lyke to fall by that new

mischaunce: "Alas," said the fayre curteous damsel, "will the heauens never be appeased but continually extend their wrathe vpon our deplored family, and shal our missehaps neuer cease? Had it not bene more tollerable for our consumed bloude, that the diffentions past, had been tried by dent of sword, than to see the present innocencey of the young Gentleman my brother in daunger to be innocently accused and put to death, through the vniustice of thosse, which beare mortal malice to noble bloud, and glory in depryuation of the whole remembrance of the same? O dampnable stafe that muste hale the guiltieffe to the gibet and irreuocable sentence of thosse iudges remaining in a city, which men cal free, albeit a confused multitude hath the vpper hande, and may so bee, that Nature hath produced them to treda vnder foote noble Wightes for their Offences. Ah dear Brother, I see well what is the cause. If thou hadst not that lytle lordshyp in the Countrey, and Prynely House in the City, no man would haue enuied thine estate, or could haue charged thee with any Crime, which I would to God, thou hadst not onely enterpryfed, but also broughte to passe, to the intent thou mightest haue ben reuenged of the wrong which these cankred Carles ordinarily do vnto my Noble bloud. But what reason is it that marchants and artificers, or the sonnes of villaines should rule a common Wealth? O happy Countreis where kings giue Lawes, and Princes see by proued figh, thosse persons which resemble them, and in their places beare the fway. And O unhappy wee, that be the flaues of a waiwarde stafe; peruerted by corruption. Why dyd our predeceffors minde to stablysh any lyberty at al, to thrust the same into the confused gouernment of the commons of our Countrey? We haue stil the Frenchman at our tayle, or the people of our highest Bishop, or else thosse crafty Florentines, we be the common pray of al thosse that list to follow the haunt, and that which is our extreamest misery, we make oure felues the very flaues of them that of right ought to be reputed the vilest amongs us al. Ah deare Brother, that thy wretched tyme is come, the onely hope of our decayed family. Thou haddest neuer bene committed to Warde, had not thy false assuréd foes bene assuré of witnesse to condempne thee. Ah that my life mighte raunsome thine, and re-

deme agayn thyne estate and succor, thou shouldest be sure that forthwith Angelica would prepare hirself to bee the pray of thoſe hungry rauenynge Wolves, which bleat and bellow after thy Lands and Lyfe." Whyle this fayre Damſell of Siena in this fort dyd torment hir ſelf, poore Montanine, ſeeinge that he was brought to the laſt extremity of his deſired hope, as eche man naturally doth ſeke meanes to prolong his lyfe, knowing that all other help fayled for hys delyuerance except he fold his land, aſwel to ſatisfy the fine, as to preuayle in the reſt of his Affaires, ſent one of the gailers to that worshipfull uſurer the caufe of hys Calamity, to offer him his Land for the pryce and ſum of a m. Ducates. The pernicious and trayterous villain, ſeeing that Montanine was at his mercy, and ſtode in the water up to the very throte, and knew no more what to do, as if already he had tryumphed of hys life and Land ſo greatly coueted, anſwered him in this manner: "My friend thou ſhalt ſay to Charles Montanine, that not long ago I would willingly haue giuen him a good Summe of Money for his Ferme, but ſithens that tymē I haue imploied my Money to ſome better profit: and albeit I was in minde to buy it, I would be loth to give aboue 7. c. Florins, being auſſured that it cannot be ſo commodious, as my Money is able to bring yearly Gayne into my Purſe." See how Auarice is the Pickpurſe of ſecret and hidden gayne, and the very Whirlepoole of Honesty, and Conſcience, couetinge nougħt els but by vnrighteous Pray of other mens goods, to accumulate and heape together. The abundance whereof bringeth no greater good hap vnto the gluttonous Owner, but rather the minde of futch is more miſerable, and carryeth therewithall more decrease of quiet, than increase of filthy muck. The couetous man beareth no loue but to his Treaſure, nor exercifeth charity but vpon his Coafers, who, than he would be diſpoſefſed thereof, had rather ſell the life of his naturall Father. This detestable Villayne haſing ſometimes offered m. Ducates to Charles for his Enherytaunce, will now doe ſo no more, aſpiring the totall Ruine of the Montanine Family. Charles aduertified of his minde, and amazed for the Counſels decree, well ſaw that all thinges contraried hys hope and expeſtation, and that he muſt neeđes dye to ſatisfie the exceilie and couetous Luſt of the Cormerant, whose malice hee

knew to bee so vehement, as none durst offer him Money, by reason of the vnhappy desire of this neuer contented Varlet: For which consideration throughly resolved to dye, rather than to leaue hys poore Sister helpleffe, and without relieve, and rather than he would agree to the bargayne tending to his so great losse and disadvauntage, and to the Tirannous dealing of the wicked Tormentor of hys Lyfe, seeing also that all meanes to purge and auerre his innocency, was taken from him, the finall decree of the Judges being already passed, he began to dispose himselfe to repentaunce and saluation of his Soule, making complaynte of his Mishaps in thys manner.

To what hath not the heauens hatefull bin,
 Since for the ease of man they weave futch woe ?
 By diuers toyles they lap our croffes in
 With cares and grieves, whereon our mischieves groe :
 The bloudy hands and Sword of mortall foe,
 Doe search mine euill, and would destroy me quite,
 Through heynous hate and hatefull heaped spite.

Wherefore come not the fatall sisters three,
 That draw the line of life and death by right ?
 Com furies all, and make an ende of mee,
 For from the world, my sprite would take his flight.
 Why comes not nowe fowle Gorgon full in fight,
 And Typhon's head, that deepe in hell remaynes, |
 For to torment the filly soules in paynes ?

It better were for mee to feele your force,
 Than this missehap of murdring enuy'es rage,
 By cursed meanes and fall vpon my corfe,
 And worke my ruine amid my flouring age :
 For if I were dispatch'de in this desire,
 The feare were gone, of blacke infernall fire.

O Gods of Seas, and cause of blustring winde,
 Thou *Æ*olus and Neptune to I say,
 Why did you let my Barke futch fortune finde,

That safe to shore I came by any way?
 Why brake yee not, agaynst some Rocke or Bay,
 The keele, the sterne, or els blew downe the Maſt,
 By whose large fayles through ſurging feas I paſt?

Had theſe things hapt, I had not ſeene this houre,
 The houſe of dole where wofull ſprites complayne,
 Nor vferers on me had vſde futch power,
 Nor I had feene depaynted in diſdayne,
 The God of care, with whom dead Ghoſts remayne.
 Who howles and Skrekkes in hollow trees and holes,
 Where Charon raygnes among condemned foulſ.

Ah, ah, fince hap will worke my wretched end,
 And that my ruine by iudgement is decreed:
 Why doth not happe futch happy fortune fend,
 That I may lead with me the man in deede,
 That staynd his fayth, and faylde me at my neede,
 For gayne of golde, as vfurers do God knowes,
 Who cannot ſpare the dropping of their noſe?

I ſhould haue ſlayne the flauue that ſeru'd me ſo,
 O God forbiſt my hands were bruued in blood,
 Should I defire the harme of friend or foe?
 Nay better were to wiſhe mine en'my good:
 For if my death I throughly vnderſtood,
 I ſhould make ſhort the course I haue to run,
 Since reſt is got when worldly toyle is done.

Alas, alas, my chiefeſt way is this,
 A guiltleſſe death to ſuffer as I can,
 So ſhall my ſoule be ſure of heauen's bliſſe,
 And good renouume ſhall reſt behinde me than,
 And body ſhall take end where it began,
 And fame ſhall fly before me, ere I flit
 Vnto the Gods, where loue in throne doth fit.

O God conuert, from vyce to vertue now,
 The heart of him that falseth fayth wyth me,
 And chaunge his minde and mend his maners throw,
 That he his fault and fowle offence may see,
 For death shall make my fame immortall bee:
 And whiles the Sunne which in the heauens doth shine,
 The shame is his, and honor shall be mine.

Alas, I mourne not for my selfe alone,
 Nor for the fame of my Forefathers olde,
 'Tys Angelike, that caufeth me to mone,
 'Tys she that filleth my breſt with fansies colde,
 'Tys shee more worth, than was the fliſe of golde,
 That moues my minde and breedes futch paſſions ſtraunge,
 As in my ſelfe I feele a wonderous chaunge.

Hauē pitty Lord of hir and mee this day,
 Since deſtny thus hath ſundred vs in ſpite,
 O ſuffer not hir vertues to decay,
 But let hir take in friendſhip futch delite,
 That from hir breſt all vice be banifted quite:
 And let hir like as did hir noble race,
 When I poore man am deade, and out of place.

Alas my hand would write theſe wofull lines,
 That feeble ſprite denyes for want of might,
 Wherefore my heart in breſt consumes and pines,
 With deepe deſires, that far is from man's fight,
 But God he fees myne innocence and right,
 And knowes the cauſe of myne Accuſer ſtill,
 Who ſeekes my bloud to hauē on mee his will.

When Charles thus complayned himſelf, and throughly was determined to dy, great pitty it was to ſee how fayre Angelica did rent hir Face, and teare hir golden Locks, when ſhe ſaw how i[m]poſſible it was to ſaue hir obſtinate brother from the cruel

tentence pronounced vpon him, for whom she had implored all hir wits and fayre speach, to perfwade the neerest of hir Kin to make fute. Thus rested she alone ful of futch heauiness and vexation as they can think which see themselues depriued of things that they esteeme most dere. But of one thing I can wel assure you, that if ill fortune had permitted that Charles should haue bin put to death, the gentle damsel also had breathed forth the final gasp of hir sorowful life, yeldinge therewithall the last end of the Montanine race and family. What boote it to hold processe of long discourse? Beholde the last day is come deferred by the Judges, whereupon he must eyther satisfie the fine, or dye the next day after like a rebel and Traytor against the state, without any of his kin making fute or meane for his deliueraunce: albeit they vistid the fayre mayden, and comforted hir in that hir wretched state, instructing hir how shee should gouerne hir selfe patiently to suffer things remedileffe. Angelica accompanied with hir kin, and the maidens dwelling by, that were hir companions, made the ayre to sound with outcries and waymentings, and she hir selfe exclaymed like a woman defraught of Wits, whose plaints the multitude affisted with like eidlations and outcries, wayling the fortune of the yong gentleman, and sorowfull to see the mayden in daunger to fal into some mishap. As these things were thus bewayled, it chaunced about nine of the clocke at night, that Anselmo Salimbene, he whom we haue sayd to be surprised with the loue of Angelica, returning out of the Countrey, where he had remayned for a certayne time, and passing before the house of his Lady, according to his custome, heard the voyce of women and maidens which mourned for Montanine, and therewithall stayd: the chiefest cause of his stay was, for that he saw go forth out of the Pallace of hys Angelica, diuers Women making Moane, and Lamentation: wherefore he demaunded of the neyghbors what noyse that was, and whether any in those Quarters were dead or no. To whom they declared at length, al that which yee haue heard before. Salimbene hearing this story, went home to his house, and being secretly entred into his chamber, began discourse with himselfe vpon that accident, and fantasying a thousand things in his heade, in the ende thought that Charles

should not so be cast away, were he iustly or innocently condemned, and for the only respect of his sister, that she might not bee left destitute of the Goods, and Inheritaunce. Thus discoursing diuers things, at length he sayd: "I were a very simple person nowe to rest in doubt, fith Fortune is more curious of my felicity than I could wishe, and seeketh the effect of my desires, when least of all I thought vpon them. For behold, Montanine alone is left of all the mortall enemies of our house, whych to morrow openly shall lose his head like a rebell and seditious person, vpon whose Auncesters, in him shall I be reueged, and the quarell betweene our two Families, shall take ende, hauinge no more cause to feare renuing of discorde, by any that can descend from him. And who shall let mee then from inioying hir, whom I doe loue, hir brother being dead, and his goods confiscate to the Seigniory, and she without all Maynetenaunce, and Reliefe, except the ayde of hir onely beauty and curteſie? What maynetenaunce shall ſhe haue, if not by the loue of ſome honest Gentleman, that for hys pleasure may ſupport hir, and haue pitty vpon the loſſe of ſo excellent beauty? Ah Salimbene, what haſt thou ſayd? Haſt thou already forgotten that a Gentleman for that only cauſe is eſteemed aboue al other, whose glorious facts ought to ſhine before the brightneſſe of thoſe that force theymſelues to followe vertue? Art not thou a Gentleman borne, and Bred in noble house, Iſſued from the Loyns of gentle and noble Parentes? Is it ignorant vnto thee, that it pertayneth vnto a noble and gentle heart, to reuenge receyued Injuries himſelfe, without ſeeking ayde of other or elſe to pardon them by vſing clemency and princely curteſie, burying all deſire of vengeance vnder the Toumbe of eternall obliuion? And what greater glory can man acquire, than by vanquishing himſelfe, and chaſtisng his affections and rage, to bynde him which neuer thought to receyue pleasure or benefit at his hand? It is a thing which exceedeth the common order of nature, and ſo is it meete and requisite, that the moft excellent doe make the effects of their excellency appeare, and ſeeke meaneſes for the immortality of their remembraunce. The great Dictator Cæſar was more prayſed for pardoning hys enemies, and for ſhewing himſelfe curteous and eafe to be ſpoken to, than for subdu-

inge the braue and valiaunt Galles and Britons, or vanquishing the mighty Pompee. Dom Roderico Viuario, the Spaniard, although he might haue bene reuenged vpon Dom Pietro, king of Aragon, for his infidelity, bicause he went about to hinder his voyage agaynst the Saracens at Grenado, yet woulde not Punishe or Raunsome him, but taking him Prysone in the Warres, suffred him to goe without any Tribute, or any exaction of him and his Realme. The more I followe the example of mighty Personages in thinges that be good, the more notorious and wonderful shall I make my selfe in their rare and noble deedes. And not willing to forget a wrong done vnto me, whereof may I complayne of Montanine? What thinge hath hee euer done agaynst me or mine? And albeit his Predeceffors were enimies to our Family, they haue therefore borne the penaunce, more harde than the finne deserued. And truly I should be afrayde, that God would suffer me to tumble into some mishap, if seeing one afflicted, I should reioyce in his affliction, and take by his decay an argument of ioy and pleasure. No, no, Salimbene is not of minde that futch fond Imagination should Bereue good will to make hymselfe a Freende, and to gayne by liberality and curteſie hir, which for hir only vertue deserueth a greater lord than I. Being assured, that there is no man (except he were dispoyled of all good nature and humanity) specially bearing the loue to Angelica, that I do, but he would be fory to see hir in futch heauineſſe and despayre, and would attempt to deliuer hir from futch dolorous grieve. For if I loue hir as I do in deede, must not I likewife loue all that which she earneſtly loueth, as him that is nowe in daunger of death for a ſimple fine of a thouſand Florens? That my heart doe make appere what the loue is, which maketh me Tributary and Subiect to fayre Angelica, and that eche man may knowe, that furious loue hath vanquifht kings and great monarches, it behoueth not me to be abashed, if I which am a man and subiect to paſſions, ſo well as other, doe ſubmit my ſelfe to the ſeruice of hir, who I am assured is ſo vertuous as euen very neceſſity cannot force hir to forget the houſe, whereof ſhe tooke hir originall. Vaunt thy ſelfe then O Angelica, to haue forced a heart of it ſelfe impregnable, and giuen him a wound which the stoutest Lads might

sooner haue deprived of lyfe, than put him out of the way of his gentle kinde: and thou, Montanine, thinke, that if thou wilt thy selfe, thou winnest to day so hearty a frende, as only death shall separate the vnioun of vs twayne, and of all our posterity. It is I, nay it is I my selfe, that shall excell thee in duety, poynting the way for the wifest, to get honor, and violently compel the mooued myndes of those that be our aduersaries, desiring rather vainely to forgo myne own life, than to giue ouer the vertuous conceipts, which be already grifted in my minde." After this long discourse seeing the tyme required dilligence, hee tooke a thoufand Ducats, and went to the Treasurer of the fines, deputed by the state, whom he founde in his office, and sayde vnto him: "I haue brought you fir, the Thousande Ducates, which Charles Montanine is bounde to pay for his deliueraunce. Tell them, and gieue him an acquittance, that presently hee may come forth." The Treasurer woulde haue giuen him the rest, that exceeded the Summe of a Thousand Florens: but Salimbene refused the same, and receyuing a letter for his discharge, he sent one of his Seruaunts therewithal to the chiefe Gayler, who seeing that the Summe of his condemnation was payd, immediately deliuered Montanine out of the Prison where he was fast shut, and fettered with great, and weyglity Giues. Charles thinckinge that some Frier had bin come to confesse him, and that they had shewed him some mercy to doe hym to death in Prison, that abroade in open shame of the world he might not deface the Noble house whereof he came, was at the first sight astonned, but hauing prepared himselfe to die, prayed God, and besought him to vouchsafe not to forget him in the sorrowful passage, wherein the stoutest and coragious many times be faynt and inconstaunt. He recommended his Soule, he prayed forgieuenesse of his finnes: and aboue all, he humbly besought the goodnesse of God, that it would please him to haue pitty vpon his Sister, and to deliuer hir from all Infamy and dishonor. When he was caried out of Pryson, and brought before the Chiefe Gayler, sodaynely his Giues were discharged from his Legges, and euery of the standers by looked merily vpon hym, without speakeinge any Woerde that might affray hym. That Curtesie vnlooked for, made hym attende some better thynge, and assured hym of that whych

before by any meanes hee durste not thyncke. And hys expecta-
tion was not deceiued. For the Gayler sayde vnto hym: "Bee of
good Cheare Sir, for beholde the letters of your discharge, where-
fore you may goe at liberty whether you lift." In saying so, he
opened the Pryson, and licenced Montanine to departe, praying
him not to take in ill part his intreayt and hard imprysonment,
for that hee durst doe none other, the State of the City hauing so
enioyned hym. May not ech Wyght now behold how that the
euent of loue be diuers from other passions of the mind? How
could Salimbene haue so charitably deliuered Montanine, the
hatred beyng so long tyme rooted between the two hou ses, if some
greate occasion whych hath no name in Loue, had not altred his
Nature, and extinguished hys affection? It is meritoryous to fuc-
cour them whome we neuer saw before, fith nature moueth vs to
doe well to them that be lyke our selues. But faith surmounteth
there, where the very naturall inclynation feeleth it self constrainyd
and feeth that to be broken, whych obftynately was purposed to
be kept in mynde. The graces, gentlenesse, Beauty, mild be-
hauior and allurement of Angelica, had greater force ouer Salim-
bene, than the humility of hir Brother, although he had kneeled
a hundred tymes before him. But what heart is so brute, but
may be made tractable and Mylde, by the Contemplation of a
thyng so rare, as the excellent Beauty of that Siena Mayden, and
woulde not humble it selfe to acquyre the good graces of so per-
fect a Damsel? I wyll neuer accuse man for beyng in Loue wyth
a fayre and vertuous Woman, nor esteeme hym a flaine, whych
painefullly serueth a sobre Mayden, whose heart is fraught wyth
honeste affections, and Mynd wyth desyre tending to good ende.
Well worthy of blame is he to be deemed whych is in loue wyth
the outward hew, and prayseth the Tree onely layden with floures,
without regard to the fruiet, whych maketh it worthye of com-
mendation. The young maiden must needes resemble the floure
of the Spryng time, vntill by hir constancy, modesty, and chastity
she hath vanquished the concupisence of the flesh, and brought
forth the hoped fruiete of a Vertue and Chastity not Common.
Otherwyse, shee shall bee lyke the inrolled Souldyer, whose valy-
ance hys only mind doth wytnes, and the offer whych he maketh

to hym that doth register his name in the muster booke. But when the effect of seruyce is ioyned wyth his attempt, and prooef belyeth not hys promyse, then the Captain imbraceth him, and aduaunceth him, as a glasse for his affaires from that time forth. The lyke of Dames hauing passed the assaults and refisted the attempts of theyr assaylants which be honest, not by force being not requyred, but inclyned by ther owne nature, and the dyligence of theyr chāſt and inuincyble heart. But turne we againe vnto our purpose, Montanine, when he was delyuered, forthwyth wente home to hys houſe, to comfort hir, whom he was more than ſure to be in great diſtrefſe and heauineſſe for his ſake, and whych had ſo mutch neede of comfort as he had, to take his reſt. He came to the gate of his Pallace (where beyng knowne that it was Montanine) his ſiſter by any meanes coulde not bee made to beleue the fame: ſo i[m]poſſible ſeeme thynges vnto vs, which we moſt deſyre. They were all in doubt, lyke as wee reade that they were when S. Peter eſcaped Herod's Pryfon by the Angel's meanes. When Angelica was affuſed that it was hir Brother, ſobbes wer layde afide, fighes were caſt away, and heauy weepings conuerted into teares of ioy, ſhe went to imbrace and kiffe hir Brother, praifing God for hys delyuerance, and making accompt that he had ben raifed from death to lyfe, conſidering his stoutnes of minde rather bent to dye than to forgo his Land, for ſo ſmal a pryce. The Dames that wer kin vnto hym, and tarried there in Company of the maiden half in diſpayre, leaſt by diſpayre and fury ſhee might fall into outrage therby to put hir lyfe in peril, with all expedition aduertifed their husbands of Montanine's Lyberty, not looked for, who repayred thither, as wel to reioyce with him in his ioy and good fortune, as to make their excuse, for that they had not trauyaled to ryd him from that miſery. Charles whych cared nothing at al for thoſe mouth blesſings, diſembled what he thought, thanking them neuertheleſſe for their viſitation and good remembrance they had of hym, for viſiting and comforting his ſiſter which honor, he eſteemed no leſſe than if they had imploied the fame vpon his owne perſon. Their friends and kinsfolk being departed, and affuſed that none of them had payde his ransome, hee was wonderfullly aſtonned

and the greater was his gryef for that he could not tell what hee was, whych withoute requeste, had made so gentle a proofe of his lyberality: if he knew nothing, farre more ignoraunte was his sister, forsomutch as the dyd thinke, that he had changed his mind, and that the horrour of death had made him fel his countrey inheritance, to hym whych made the first offer to buy the same: but either of them deceyued of their thought went to bed. Montanine rested not all the Nyght, hauyng still before his eyes, the vnknowne image of hym that had delyuered him. His bed serued his turne to none other purpose, but as a large field or some long alley within a Wood, for walkes to make discourse of hys mynde's conceipts, sometimes remembryng one, sometimes another, without hitting the blanke and namyng of him that was his deliuener, vnto whome he confessed him selfe to owe hys seruice and duety so long as hee lyued. And when hee saw the day begyn to appeare and that the Mornynge, the Vaunterour of the day, summoned Apollo to harnesse hys Horsse to begynne his course in our Hemisphere, he rose and went to the Chamberlaine or Treasurer, sutch as was deputed for receypt of the Fines, fessed by the State, whom he saluted, and receyuing lyke salutation, he prayed hym to shewe hym so mutch pleasure as to tell hym the parties name, that was so Lyberall to satyffie his fine due in the Eschequer of the State. To whome the other aunswered: "None other hath caused thy delyueraunce (O Montanine) but a certain person of the World, whose Name thou mayst easilly gesse, to whome I gaue an acquittance of thyne imprysonmente, but not of the iuste summe, bycause hee gaue me a Thousand Ducates for a Thousand Florens, and woulde not receyue the ouerplus of the debte, whych I am readye to delyuer thee wyth thyne acquytaunce." "I haue not to doe wyth the Money" (sayd Charles) "only I pray you to tell me the name of him that hath don me thys great curtefy, that hereafter I may acknowledge him to be my Friend." "It is" (sayd the Chamberlayne) "Anselmo Salimbene, who is to bee commended and praysed aboue all thy parents and kinne, and came hither very late to bryng the Money, the surplusage whereof, beholde here it is." "God forbid" (sayd Montaine) "that I should take awaye that, whych so happily was brought hither to rid me out of payne."

And so went away wyth his acquittance, his mind charged with a numbre of fanfies for the fact don by Salimbene. Being at home at his houfe, he was long time stayed in a deepe conſideration, desirous to know the caufe of that gentle parte, proceeding from him whos Parents and Aunceſters were the capitall Enimies of his race. In the end lyke one rifyng from a ſound ſleepe, he called to mynd, that very many times he had ſeene Anſelmo with attentiuſe eye and fixed looke to behold Angelica, and in eying hir uery louyngly, he paſſed euery day (before theyr gate) not ſhewing other countenaunce, but of good wyll, and wyth fryendly gesture, rather than any Ennimies Face, faluting Angelica at all tymes when he met hir. Wherefore Montanine was affiſed, that the onely loue of Salimbene towards his ſiſter cauſed that delyueraunce, concluding that when the paſſion doth proceede of good loue, feaſed in gentle heart and of noble enterpryſe, it is i[m]poſſible but it muſte bryng forth the maruellous effects of vertue's gallantize, of honesty and curteſy, and that the ſpyrite wel borne, can not ſo mutch hide hys gentle nourtoure, but the fyre muſt flame abroade, and that whych ſeemeth dyfficult to bee brought to paſſe, is facilitye, and made poſſible by the conceiptes and indeuors ſo wel i[m]ployed: wherefore in the Ende not to bee furmounted in Honesty, ne yet to beare the marke of one, that v[n]thankefully accepþeth good turnes, he determyned to vſe a great prodiſality vpon him, that vnder the name of foe, had ſhewed himſelfe a more faythful friend, then thoſe that bare good face, and at neede wer furtheſt off from afflieted Montanine, who not knowing what preſent to make to Salimbene, but of himſelfe and hys fyſter, purpoſed to impart his minde to Angelica, and then vpon knowledge of hir wil to perfrome his intent. For which caufe vnderſtanding that his graciouſ enemy was gone into the Countrey, he thoughte well to conſyder of his determynatyon, and to breake wyth hir in hys abſence, the better to Execute the ſame, vpon his nexte retourne to the Citye. He caſt Angelica aſyde, and beyng bothe alone together, hee vſed theſe or ſutche lyke Woordes: "You knowe, deare Sister, that the higher the fall is, the more daungerous and greater gryeſe he feeleth that doth fall from highe than hee that tumbleth downe from place more low

and of lesser steepenes. I speak this, bicause I cal to mind the condition, nobility, and excellency of our ancesters, the glorie of our race, and riches of all our house, which constraineth me many tymes to figh, and sheade a streame of teares, when I see the sumptuous palaces that were the homes and resting places of our Fathers, and grand fathers, when I see on al parts of this City, the Armes, and Scutcheons painted and imbossed, bearyng the mark of the Antiquity of our house, and when I beholde the stately marble tombes and brasen Monuments, in dyuers our Temples erected for perpetuall Memorye of many knyghtes and generalles of warres, that sorted forth of the Montanine race: and chyefly I neuer enter thys great Palace, the remnant of our inheritaunce and patrimony, but the remembraunce of our auncesters, so glaunceth ouer mine Hearте, as an hundred hundred tymes, I wysh for death, to thynke that I am the Post alone of the myfery and decay fallen vpon the name and famous familye of the Montanines, whych maketh me thinke our life to be vnhappy, being downe fallen from futch felicity, to feele a myfery most extreame. But one thing alone ought to content vs, that amid so great pouerty, yl luck, ruine and abasement, none is able to lay vnto our charge any thing vnworthy of the nobility and the house, whereof we be descended, our lyfe being conformable to the generositie of our predeceffors: whereby it chanceth, that although our poore estate be generally knowne, yet none can affirme, that we haue forligned the vertue of them, which vertuously haue lyued before vs. If so bee wee haue receiued pleasure or benefit of any man, neuer disdained I with al duety to acknowledge a good turne, stil shunning the vyce of ingratytude, to foyle the reputation wherein hitherto I haue passed my lyfe. Is there anye blot which more spotteth the renoume of man, than not confessing receiued benefites and pleasures perfourmed in our necessity? You know in what peril of death I was, these few daies past, through their false furmise which neuer loued me, and how almost miraculosly I was redeemed out of the hangman's hands, and the cruel sentence of the vnryghteous Magistrate, not one of our kin offryng them selues in deede or word for my defense, which forceth mee to say, that I haue felt of my Kin, which I neuer thought, and haue tasted

futch commodity at his hands, of whome I neuer durst expect or hope for pleasure, relief, aide or any comfort. I attended my delyuerance by sute of thosse whome I counted for Kin and fryends, but the same so soon vanished, as the Neceffity and peryll were present. So preffed with woe, and forsaken of fryends, I was affrayde that our aduersaries (to remoue all feare and fufpition in tyme to come) would haue purchased my totall ruine, and procured the ouerthrowe of the Montanines name, by my Death, and approched end. But good God, from the place whereof I feared the danger, the calme arofe, which hath brought my Barke to the hauen of health, and at his hands where I attended ruine, I haue tafted affiance and fuftentation of myne honor and lyfe. And playnely to proceede, it is Anfelmo Salimbene, the son of our auncient and capital enimies, that hath shewed himself the very loyall and faithful fryend of our family, and hath deliuered your brother by payment to the State, the summe of a Thousand Ducats to raunsome the life of him, who thought him to be his mofte cruel aduersary. O Gentleman's heart in dede and gentle mind, whose rare vertues do fuperpasse all humaine vnderstanding. Friends vntited together in band of Amitye, amaze the World by the effects not vulgar in things whych they do one for an other. But thys furmounteth all, a mortall Ennimy, not reconcyled or requyred, without demaund of affuraunce for the pleasure which he doth, payeth the debts of his aduersarie: which facte exceedeth all confideration in them, that discouer the factes of men. I can not tel what name to attribute to the deede of Salimbene, and what I ought to call that his curtesy, but this must I needes protest, that the example of his honestie and gentlenes is of futch force, and so mucht hath vanquished me, as whether I shal dyé in payne or lyue at eafe, neuer am I able to excede his lyberality. Now my life being ingaged for that which he hath don to mee, and hee hauyng delyuered the same from infamous Death, it is in your handes (deare fister) to practize the deuyse imagined in my mind, to the intente that I may be onely bound to you for fatisfying the iberalitye of Salimbene, by meanes whereof, you which wepte the death and wayled the loft liberty of your Brother, doe fee me free and in safety hauyng none other care but to be acquited of

hym, to whome both you and I be dearely bound." Angelica hearyng
hir brother speak thoſe words, and knowing that Salimbene was
he, that had ſurpaſſed all their kinne in amity and conforſte of
theyr familye, anſwered her brother, ſayinge: "I woulde neuer
haue thought (good Brother) that your deliuuerance had come to
paffe by him whose name euē now you tolde, and that our
Ennimyē breaking al remembraunce of auncient quarels, had care
of the health and conſeruation of the Montanines. Wherefore if
it were in my power I would ſatiffy the curteſy and gentlenesse
of Anſelmo, but I know not which way to begin the ſame. I
being a maid that knoweth not how to recompene a good turne,
but by acknowledging the ſame in heart: and to go to render
thanks, it is neither lawfull or comely for me, and mutch leſſe
to offer him any thynge for the lyttle acceſſe I haue to his
houſe, and the ſmall familiarity I haue with the Gentlewomen of
his kinne. Notwythſtanding, Brother, conſider you wherein my
power refeth to ayde and helpe you, and be assured (myne honor
ſaued) I wyll ſpare nothynge for your contentment." "Sister"
(ſayd Montanine) "I haue of long time debated with my ſelf
what is to be done, and deuized what myghte be the occaſion that
moued this young Gentleman to vſe ſo greate kindneſſe toward
mee, and hauing diligently pondred and waied what I haue ſeene
and knowne, at length I founde that it was the onely force of Loue,
which conſtrained his affection, and altered the auncient hatred
that he bare vs, into new loue, that by no meanes can be quenched.
It is the couert fire which Loue haſte kindled in his intrailes, it is
loue whych hath rayfed the true effects of gentlenesse, and hath
conſumed the conceipts of diſpleaſed mind. O the great force of
that amorous alteration, which vpon the ſodain exchaung,
ſeemeth imposſible to receiue any more chaung or mutation. The
onely Beauty and good grace of you Syſter, hath inducēd our
gracious Enimy, the ſeruaunt of your perfections, to delyuer the
poore Gentleman forlorn of all good fortune. It is the honest lyfe
and commendable behauour of Angelica Montanine, that hath
incyted Anſelmo to doe an aſte ſo praife worthy, and a deede ſo
kinde, to procure the deliuuerance of one, which looked not for a
chaunce of ſo great conſequence. Ah gentle younge gentleman:

Ah pryncely minde, and heart noble and magnanimous. Alas how shall it be possyble that euer I can approche the honest liberalite wherwyth thou haft bound me for euer? My lyfe is thine, myne honour dependeth of thee, my goodes be tyed to thee. What resteth then, if not that you (fister) voyde of cruelty do vse no vnkynndnesse to hym that loueth you, and who for love of you hathe prodygally offred hys owne goodes to ryd me from Payne and dyshonor? If so be, my lyfe and sauegarde haue ben acceptable vnto thee, and the fift of me dyscharged from Pryson was ioyful unto thee, if thou gaueſt thy willing consent that I should fel my patrimony, graunt presently that I may wyth a great, rare, and precious present, requyte the Goodnesse, Pleasure and curtesye that Salimbene hath done for your sake: And syth I am not able with goodes of Fortune to satissie his bountye, it is your perfon which may supply that default, to the intent that you and I may be quytte of the oblygation, wherein we stand bound vnto him. It behoueth that for the offer and reward of Money whych he hath imployed, we make present of your Beautye, not selleng the prycē of your chasfity, but delyueryng the same in exchaunge of curtesye, beyng assured for hys gentlenesse and good Nourtoure sake, hee wyll vſe you none otherwyſe, or vſurpe any greater authority ouer you, than Vertue permitteth in ech gentle and Noble hearte. I haue none other means of satiffacſion, ne larger raumsome to render free my head from the Tribute whych Salimbene hathe gyuēn for my Lyfe and Liberty. Thynke (deare Sister) what determinate aunſwere you wyll make me, and confider if my request be meete to be denyed. It is in your choife and pleasure to deny or consent to my demaund. If so be that I be denyed and loose the meanes by your refuse to be acquitted of my defender, I had rather forſake my Citye and Countrey, than to lyue heere wyth the title of ingratitudo, for not acknowledging ſo greate a pleasure. But alas, with what Eye, ſhall I dare behold the Nobility of Siena, if by greate vnkynndnesse I paffe vnder ſilence the rareſt friendſhip that euer was deuifed? What heartes forrow ſhall I conceyue to bee pointed at wyth the finger, like one that hath forgotten in acknowledging by effecte, the receiued pleasure of my delyueraunce? No (fister) eyther you muſt bee the

quyet of my Minde, and the acquittance of vs bothe, or else must I dye, or wander lyke a vagabond into straunge Countries, and neuer put foote agayne into Italy." At those words Angelica stode so astonned and confused, and so besides hir selfe, like as wee fee one distraught of sence that feeleth himself attached with some amaze of the Palsey. In the end recouering hir sprytes, and bee blubbered al with teares, hir stomacke panting like the Bellowes of a forge, she answeared hir brother in thys manner: "I knowe not louyng Brother by reason of my troubled minde howe to aunswere your demaund, which feineth to be both ryght, and wronge, right for respect of the bond, not so, in consideration of the request. But how I proue the same, and what reason I can alleadge and discouer for that prooef, hearken me so paciently, as I haue reason to complayne and dispute vpon this chaunce more hard and difficulte to auoyde, than by reply able to be defended, sith that Lyfe and the hazarding thereof is nothing, in regarde of that which you wyll haue me to present with too exceeding prodigall Liberality, and I would to God that Life migthe satissie the same, than be sure it shold so soone be employed, as the promise made thereof. Alas, good God, I thought that when I fawe my brother out of Pryson, the neare distresse of death, whereunto vniustly he was thrown, I thought (I say) and firmly did beleue, that fortune the Enimy of our ioy, had vomitted al hir poison, and being despoyled of hir fury and crabbed Nature had broken the bloudy and Venemous Arrowes, wherewyth so longe tyme she hath plagued our family, and that by resting of hir selfe, shee had gyuen some rest to the Montanine house of al theyr troubles and misaduentures. But I (O miserable wight) do fee and feele how far I am deuided from my hope, and deceiued of mine opinion, sith the furious stepdame, appeareth before me with a face more fierce and threatning, then euer she did, sharpening hir selfe against my youth in other fort, then euer against any of our race. If euer she perfecuted our auncesters, if she brought them to ruine and decay, she now doth purpose wholly to subuerte the same, and throw vs headelong into the bottomleffe pit of all misery, exterminating for all together, the remnaunte of our consumed house. Be it either by losse of thee (good brother) or the yoylent death

of me which cannot hazarde my Chasfity for the pryce of myne vnhappy life: Ah, good God, into what anguish is my mynde exponed, and how doe I feele the force and Vyolence of froward Fortune? But what speake I of fortune? How doth hard lucke infuse, that is predestinated by the heauens vpon our family? Must I at so tender yeares, and of so feeble kinde make choyse of a thing, which would put the wyfest vpon Earth into their shiffts? My heart doth fayle me, reason wanteth and Iudgement hangeth in ballaunce by continuall agitations, to see how I am dryuen to the extremity of two daungerous straits, and enuironned with fearefull ieoperdies, forcibly compelled either to bee deuided and separated from thee (my Brother,) whome I loue aboue mine owne life, and in whome next after God I haue fyxed and put my hope and truſt, hauing none other solace, Comfort and helpe, but thee, or else by keping thee, am forced to giue vnto an other, and know not how, the precious treasure which beyng once loft, can not be recouered by any meanes, and for the gard and conſeruation whereof, euery woman of good iudgement that loueth vertue, ought a thousand times to offer hir ſelfe to death (if ſo many wayes ſhe could) rather than to blot or foyle that inestimable Iewell of chafity, wherewith our lyfe is a true lyfe: contrarywyſe ſhee which fondly ſuffreth hir ſelfe to be diffeazēd and ſpoyleſ of the fame, and looſeſ it without honest title, albeit ſhe be a lyue, yet is ſhe buryed in the moſt obſcure caue of death, hauing loſt the honour which maketh Maydens march with head vpryght. But what goodneſſe hath a Ladye, Gentlewoman, Maiden, or Wyfe, wherein ſhe can glory, hir honour being in doubt, and reputatyon darkened with infamie? Whereto ſerued the impereyall house of Auguftus, in thoſe Ladyes that were intituled the Emperour's Daughters, when for their villany, theyr were vnworthy of the title of chafe and vertuous? What profited Faufina the Emperiall Crowne vpon hir head, hir chafity through hir abhominalle Life, being rapt and despoyleſ? What wronge hath bene done to many ſymple Women, for being buryed in the Tombe of dark obliuion, which for their vertue and pudique Lyfe, meryted Eternall prayſe? Ah Charles, my Brother deare, where haſt thou beſtowrd the Eye of thy foreſeeing mynde, that without prouidence and care of the

fame due to honest Dames, and chaste Damosels of our Family, hauyng lost the goodes and Fathers inheritance, wilt haue me in like sort forgoe my Chastity, whych hytherto I haue kept with heedful dilygence. Wilte thou deare Brother, by the pryce of my virginity, that Anselmo shall haue greater victoriye ouer vs, than he hath gotten by fight of Sword vpon the allied remnaunt of our house? Art thou ignorant that the wouides and diseases of the Mynd, be more vehement than those which afflict the Body? Ah I vnhappy mayden, and what ill lucke is referued for me, what destiny hath kept me till this day to be presented for Venus' Sacrifice, to satissify a young manne's lust, which coueteth (peraduenture) but the spoile of mine honor? O happy the Romain maide, slayne by the proper hands of hir woefull Father Virginius, that she myght not be foyled with infamy, by the Lecherous embracements of rauenous Appius, which desired hir acquaintaunce. Alas, that my brother doe not so, rather I woulde to God of his owne accord he be the infamous minister of my life ready to be violated, if God by his grace take not my cause in hand? Alas death, why dost thou not throwe against my hearte thy most pearcing dart, that I may goe waite vpon the shadowes of my thryce happy Parents, who knowing this my gryefe, wyl not be voide of passion to helpe me wayle my woefull state. O God, why was not I choaked and strangled, so soone as I was taken forth the secret imbracements of my mother's Wombe, rather than to arriue into this mishap, that either must I lose the thing I deeme moste deare, or die with the violence of my proper hands? Come death, come and cut the vnhappy threede of my woefull Lyfe: stope the pace of teares with thy trenchant Darte that streame outragiously downe my face, and close the breathing wind of fighes, which hynder thee from doing thine office vpon my heart, by suffocation of my lyfe and it." When she had ended those Words, hir speache dyd faile, and waxing pale and faint, (sitting vppon hir stoole) she fared as though that very death had fitten in hir place. Charles thynking that his sister had bene deade, mated with sorrowe, and desirous to lyue no longer after hir, seeing he was the cause of that fownyng, fell downe dead vpon the Ground, mouing neither hand nor foote, as though the soule had ben departed from the bodye. At the noyse

which Montanine made by reason of hys fall, Angelica reuied out of hir fowne, and seeinge hir Brother in so pytifull plyght, and supposing he had bene dead for care of hys request, for beyng berieued of hir Brother, was so moued, as a lyttle thynge would haue made hir do, as Thisbe dyd, when she viewed Pyramus to be slayne. But conceyuing hope, she threw hir selfe vpon hir Brother, cursing hir Fortune, bannynge the Starres of cruelty, and hir lauish speach, and hir self for hir little loue to hir brother, who made no resuall to dye to faue his Lande for reliefe of hir: wher she denied to yeld hir selfe to him that loued hir with so good affection. In the end she applied so many remedies vnto hir brother, sometimes casting cold water vpon his face, sometimes pinching and rubbing the temples and pulses of his armes and his mouth with vineger, that she made hym to come agayne: and seeing that his eyes were open, beholding hir intentiue with the countenance of a man half in despayre, she saied vnto him: "For so mucht brother as I fee fortune to be so froward, that by no meanes thou canst auoide the cruel lot, which launceth me into the bottome of mortall mifery, and that I must aduenture to folowe the indeuors of thy minde, and obey thy will, which is more gentle and Noble, than fraught with reason, I am content to satisfy the same and the loue which hitherto thou hast born me. Be of good cheere, and doe wyth mee and my body what thou list, giue and presente the same to whom thou pleaseft. Wel be thou sure, that so fone as I shal bee out of thy hands and power, I wyl be called or esteemed thine no more, and thou shalt haue leffe authority to stay me from doing the deuises of my fantasie, swearing and protesting by the Almighty GOD, that neuer man shall touch Angelica, except it be in mariage, and that if he assay to passe any further, I haue a heart that shall incourage my hands to sacrifice my Life to the Chasfitye of Noble Dames whych had rather dye than liue in flaunder of dyshonesty. I wyl die a body without defame, and the Mynde voyde of consent, shall receiue no shame or filth that can foyle or spot the same." In saying so, she began againe to weepe in sutch abundance, as the humour of hir brayne ranne downe by the issue of bothe hir Eyes. Montanine albeit sorrowful beyond measure to see his gentle and chaste sister

in futch vexation and heauiness, reioyfed yet in his mind, that she had agreed to his request, which presaged the good lucke that afterwardes chaunced vnto him, for hys Lyberal offer. "Wherefore" (said he to Angelica,) "I was neuer in my Lyfe so desirous to lye, but that I rather choose to dye, than procure a thinge that should turne thee to displeasure and grieve, or to hazarde thine honor and reputation in daunger or peryll of damage, which thou hast euer knowne, and shouldest haue still perceyued by effect, or more properly to speak, touched with thy finger if that incomparable and rare curtesy and Lyberality of Salimbene had not prouoked me to requyre that, which honestly thou canst not gyue, nor I demaunde without wronge to thee, and preuidice to mine owne estimation and honoure. But what? the feare I haue to be deemed ingrate, hath made me forget thee, and the great honesty of Anselmo maketh me hope, yea and stedfastly beleue, that thou shalt receiue none other displeasure, but to be presented vnto him whome at other times we haue thought to be our mortal enimy. And I thinke it impossible that he wil vse any villany to hir whome he so feruently loueth, for whose sake he feareth not the hatred of his friends, and disdained not to save him whome he hated, and on whome he myght haue bene reuenged. And forsof mutch fister, as the face commonly sheweth the signe and token of the hearte's affection, I pray thee by any meanes declare no sad countenaunce in the presence of Salimbene, but rather cheere vp thy face, dry vp the abundance of thy teares, that he by seeing thee Ioyfull and mery, may be moued to continue his curtesy and use thee honestly, being satified with thy liberality, and the offer that I shall make of our seruice." Here may be feene the extremitie of two dyners thinges, duety combatting with shame, reason being in contention with himself. Angelica knew and confessed that hir brother did but his duetye, and that she was bound by the same very bond. On the other fide, hir estate and virginnall chastity, brake the endeouours of hir duety, and denied to doe that which she esteemed ryght. Neuerthelesse shee prepared hir self to follow both the one and the other: and by acquitting the duety to hir brother, she ordayned the meane, to discharge him of that which he was bound to his benefactor, determinyng never-

theleffe rather to dye, than shamefully to suffer hir selfe to be abused, or to make hir lose the floure, which made hir glyster amongs the maidens of the city, and to deface hir good fame by an acte so vyllanous. But that speciall rare vertue was more singular in hir, than was that contynency of Cyrus the Persian King, who fearing to be forced by the allurements of the excellent beauty of chaste Panthea, would not suffer hir to be brought into his prefence, for feare that hee being surmounted with folysh lustes, shoulde force hir, that by other meanes could not be per- suaded to breake the holy lawes of Mariage, and promised faith to hir husband. For Salimbene hauing in his prefence, and at his commaundement hir whome aboue al thyngs he loued would by no meanes abuse his power, but declared his gentle nature to bee of other force and effect, than that of the aforesaid king as by reading the successe of this historie you shal perceiue. After that Montanine and his sister had vttered many other words vpon their determination, and that the fayre maiden was appeased of hir sorrow, attending the issue of that which they went about to begin: Anselmo was come home out of the Countrey, whereof Charles hauing intelligence, about the second houre of the night, he caused his sister to make hir ready, and in company of one of their seruants that caried light before them, they came to the lodginde of Salimbene, whose seruaunt seeing Montanine so accompanied to knocke at the Gate, if hee did maruel I leaue for you to think, by reason of the displeasure and hatred which he knew to bee betweene the two families, not knowing that which had already passed for the beginning of a final peace of so many controuerries: for which cause so astonned as he was, he went to tel his maister that Montanine was at the gate, desirous secretly to talk vnto him. Salimbene knowing what company Charles had with him, was not vnwilling to goe downe, and causynge two Torches to be lighted, came to his gate to entertaine them, and to welcome the brother and the sister, wyth so great curtefie and friendship as he was surpryzed with loue, seeing before his eyes the fift of hir that burned hys heart incessantly, not discouer- yng as yet the secrets of his thought by making hir to vnderstand the good wyl he bare hir, and how mucht he was hir seruant.

He could not tel wel whether he was incharmed or his eyes dafelled, or not wel wakened from sleepe when he saw Angelica, so amazed was he with the straungenesse of the fact, and arriuall of the maiden to his house. Charles seeing hym so confused, and knowing that the great affection he bare vnto his sister, made him so perplexed and besides himself, said vnto him: "Sir, we would gladly speake with you in one of your Chambers, that there myght be none other witnesse of our dyscourse, but we three together." Salimbene which was wrapt wyth ioy, was able to make none other aunswere, but: "Goe we whether you please." So taking his Angelica by the hand, they went into the Hall, and from thence into his chamber, whych was furnyshed accordinge to the state and riches of a Lord, he being one of the welthiest and chiefe of the City of Siena. When they were set downe, and al the seruants gone forth, Charles began to say to Salimbene, these words: "You may not thinke it straunge (sir Salimbene) if against the Lawes and customes of our Common Wealthe, I at thys tyme of the Nyght doe call you vp, for knowyng the Bande wherewyth I am bound vnto you, I must for euer confesse and count my selfe to be your flau and bondman, you hauing don a thing in my behalfe that deserueth the name of Lord and maister. But what vngrateful man is he that wil forget so greate a benefit, as that which I haue receyued of you, holding of you, life, goods, honor, and this mine own sister that enioyeth by your meanes the presence of hir brother and hir rest of mind, not losing our noble reputation by the losse prepared for me through vnrighteous iudgement, you hauing staied the ruine both of hir and me, and the rest of our house and kin. I am ryghte glad fir, that this my duety and seruice is bounden to so vertuous a Gentleman as you be, but exceeding sorry, that fortune is so froward and contrary vnto me, that I am not able to accomplishe my good will, and if ingratitudo may lodge in mind of a neady Gentleman, who hath no helpe but of himselfe, and in the wyll of hys chaff sister, and minde vnted in two persons onely saued by you, duety doeth requyre to prefent the rest, and to submit al that is left to be disposed at your good pleasure. And bicause that I am well assured, that it is Angelica alone which hath kindled the flame of desire, and hath caused you

to loue that which your predeceſſours haue deadly hated, that fame ſparke of knowledge, whych our miſery could not quench with all his force, hath made the way and ſhewed the path whereby we ſhall auoide the name of ingrate and forgetfull perſons, and that fame which hath made you lyberall towards me, ſhalbe bountifully beſtowed vpon you. It is Angelica ſir, which you ſee preſent heere, who to diſcharge my band, hath willingly rendred to be your owne, ſubmittinge hir ſelue to your good wyll, for euer to be youres. And I which am hir brother, and haue receiued that great good wyll of hir, as in my power to haue hir wyl, do preſent the ſame, and leaue hir in your hands, to vſe as you would your owne, praying you to accept the ſame, and to conſider whoſe is the gift, and from whence it commeth, and how it ought to be regarded.” When he had ſayd ſo, Montanine roſe vp, and without further talke, went home vnto his houſe. If Anſelmo were abafhed at the Montanines arriuall, and aſtonned at the Oration of Charles, his ſodain departure was more to be maruelled at, and therwithal to ſee the effect of a thing which he neuer hoped, nor thought vpon. He was exceding glad and ioyfull to ſee himſelf in the company of hir, whome he diſired aboue al things of the world, but ſory to ſee hir heauy and ſorrowful for ſutche chaunce. He ſuppoſed hir being ther, to procede rather of the yong man’s good and gentle Nature, than of the Maiden’s will and lykynge. For whych cauſe taking hir by the hand, and holding hir betwene hys armes, he vſed theſe or ſutche lyke words: “ Gentlewoman, if euer I had felt and knowne with what Wing the variety and lyghtneſſe of worldly thynges do flye, and the gaynes of incoſtant fortune, at this preſent I haue ſeen one of the moſt mañiſt profes which ſeemeth to me ſo ſtrouge, as almoſt I dare not beeleeue that I ſee before myne Eyes. I know well that it is for you, and for the ſeruice that I beare you, that I haue broken the effect of that hatred, whych by inheritaunce I haue receiued againſt your Houſe, and for that deuotion haue deliuereſ your Brother. But I ſee that Fortune wyll not let mee to haue the vpper hand, to bee the Conquerer of hir ſodaine pangs. But you your ſelf ſhall ſee, and euery man ſhall know that my heart is none other than noble, and my deuifes tend, but to the exploit of

all vertue and Gentlenesse : wherefore I pray you (sayd he, kissing
hir louingly) be not sad, and doubt not that your seruaunt is any
other now, hauing you in his power, than he was when he durst
not dyscouer the ardent Loue that vexed him, and held him in
feeble state, ful of desire and thought : you also may bee sure, that
he hath not had the better hande ouer me, ne yet for his curtesy
hath obteined vi^ctory, nor you for obeying him. For sith that
you be myne, and for sutch yelded and giuen to me, I wyl keepe
you, as hir whome I loue and esteme aboue al things of the World,
makyng you my Companion and the onely mistresse of my goodes
heart, and wyll. Thinke not that I am the Fryend of Fortune, and
practise pleasure alone without vertue. It is modesty which com-
maundeth me, and honesty is the guide of my conceipts. Assure
you then, and repose your comfort on mee : for none other than
Angelica Montanine shall be the wye of Anselmo Salimbene :
and during my life, I wyll bee the Fryend, the defender and sup-
porter of your house." At these good Newes, the drousie and
wandryng Spirite of the fayre Siena mayd awaked, who endyng
hir teares and appeasing hir sorrow, rose vp, and made a very lowe
reuerence vnto hir curteous fryend, thanking hym for hys greate
and incomparable liberalitye, promising all seruice, duetie, and
Amitye, that a Gentlewoman ought to beare vnto him, whom God
hath reserued for hir Spouse and husband. After an infinite num-
ber of honest imbracments and pleasaunte kisses giuen and re-
ceiued on both partes, Anselmo called vnto him one of his Auntes
that dwelled within him, to whome he deliuered his new Conquest
to keepe, and spedily without delay he sent for the next of his
Kinne and dearest friends : and being come, he intreated them to
kepe him company, in a very vrgent and weighty businesse he had
to do, wherein if they shewed themselues diligent in his request,
doubtful it is not, but he addressed speede for accomplishment
of his Enterpryse. Then causyng hys Aunte and welbeloued Ange-
lica to come forth, he carryed them (not without their great ad-
miration) to the pallace of Montanine, whither being arryued : he
and hys Companie were well intertayned of the sayd Montanine,
the Brother of fayre Angelica. When they were in the Hall,
Salimbene sayd to hys Brother in law that should be: "Senio

Montanine, it is not long fithens, that you in company of my faire Gentlewoman heere, came home to speake wyth mee, desirous to have no man priuy to the effect of your conference. But I am come to you with this troupe to disclose my minde before you al, and to manifeсте what I purpose to doe, to the intente the whole World may know your good and honest Nature, and vnderstand how I can be requited on them, which indeuor to gratifie me in any thing." Hauing said so, and euery man being set down he turned his talk to the rest of the company in thys wise: "I doubt not my friends and Noble Dames, but that ye mutch muſe and maruell to fee me in this house fo late, and in your company, and am ſure, that a great defire moueth your minds to know for what purpose, the cauſe, and why I haue gathered this asſemblie in a time vnlooked for, and in place where none of our race and kinne of long time did enter, and leſſe did meane to make hither their repaire. But when you doe confider what vertue and goodneſſe reſteth in the heartes of thoſe men, that ſhunne and auoide the brutyfneſſe of Minde, to followe the reaſonable part, and which proprely is caſtled Spirituall, you ſhall thereby perceiue, that when Gentle kynde and Noble Heart, by the great miſtrefſe dame Nature be gryfted in the myndes of Men, they ceaſe not to make appeare the effect of their doings, ſometyme producing one vertue, ſometimes another, which ceaſe not to cauſe the fruiſte of ſutche induſtry both to blome and beare: In ſutche wyſe, as the more thoſe vertuous aſtes and commendable workes, do appeare abroade, the greater dyligence is imploied to ſearche the matter wherein ſhe can cauſe to appeare the force of vertue and excellency, conceiuing ſingular delyghte in that hir good and holy delyuery, which bryngeth forth a fruiſt worthy of ſutche a ſtocke. And that force of mind and Generofity of Noble Heart is fo firme and ſure in operation, as although humane thinges be vnſtable and ſubiect to chaung, yet they cannot be ſeuered or diſparced. And although it be the Butte and white, whereat fortune diſchargeþ al hir darteres and shaftes, threatning ſhooting and assayling the ſame round, yet it continueth ſtable and firme like a Rocke and Clyffe beaten wyth the vyoſt fury of waues riſing by wind or tempeſt. Whereby it chaunceth, that riches and dignity can no more ad-

uaunce the heart of a flau and villaine, than pouerty make vile and abase the greatnesse of courage in them that be procreated of other stiffe than of common forte, whych daily keepe the maiesty of their oryginall, and lyve after the instincte of good and Noble Bloude, wherewith their auncestors were made Noble, and fucked the same vertue oute of the Teates of Noursses Breasses, who in the myddes of troublesome trauayles of Fortune that doe assayle them, and depresse theyr modesty, their face and Countenaunce, and theyr factes full well declare theyr condition, and to doe to vnderstante, that vnder futch a Misery, a Mynde is hydde which deserueth greater Guerdon than the eigre taste of Calamitye. In that dyd glowe and shyne the Youthe of the Persian and Median Monarch, beyng nourssed amonges the stalles and Stables of hys Grandfather, and the gentle kind of the founder of stately Rome sockeled in the Shepecoates of Prynces sheepehierds. Thus mutch haue I sayd, my good lords and dames, in consideration of the noble corage and gentle minde of Charles Montanine, and of his sister, who without preiudice to any other I dare to say, is the paragon and mirrour of all chaste and curteous maidens, well trayned vp, amonges the whole Troupe of those that lyue thys day in Siena, who beeyng brought to the ende and last poynt of their ruine, as euery of you doth knowe, and theyr race so fore decayed as there remayneth but the onely Name of Montanine: notwithstanding they neuer lost the heart, desire, ne yet the effect of the curtesy, and naturall bounte, whych euer doth accompany the mynd of those that be Noble in deede. Whych is the cause that I am constrainyd to accuse our Auncestors, of to mutch cruelty, and of the lyttle respecte whych for a controuersye occured by chaunce, haue pursued them with futch mortall reuenge, as without ceasing, with all their force, they haue assayed to ruinate, abolyshe, and for euer adnichilate that a ryghte Noble and illustre race of the Montanines, amongs whome if neuer any goodnesse appeared to the Worlde, but the Honesty, Gentlenesse, Curtesy and vertuous maners of these twayne here presente, the Brother and sister, yet they ought to be accompted amonges the ranke of the Noblest and chiefest of our City, to the intent in time to come it may not be reported, that wee haue esteemed and chearyshed

Riches and drossie mucke, more than vertue and modesty. But imitating those excellent gouerners of Italy, whych held the Romane Empire, let vs rather reuerence the Vertuous Poore, than prayse or prysen the Rich, gyuen to vice and wickednesse. And for so much as I do see you all to be desirous to knowe the cause and argument, whych maketh me to vse this talke, and forceth mee to prayse the curtesy and goodnesse of the Montanines, pleaseth you to stay a lyttle with pacience, and not think the tyme tedyous, I meane to declare the same. Playnely to confesse vnto you (for that it is no cryme of Death, or heinous offence) the gyfts of nature, the Beauty and comelynesse of fayre Angelica heere present, haue so captiuate my Mind, and deprived my heart of Lyberty, as Night and Day trauailing how I might discouer vnto hir my martirdom, I did consume in futch wyfe, as losing lust of slepe and meate, I feared ere long to be either dead of sorrow or estranged of my right wits, seing no meanes how I might auoide the same, bicause our two houes and Families were at contynuall debate: and albeit conflicts were ceased, and quarelles forgotten, yet there rested (as I thought) a certainte desire both in the one and the other of offence, when time and occasion did serue. And yet mine affection for all that was not decreased, but rather more tormented, and my gryefe increased, hopeleſſe of help, which now is chaunced to me as you shall heare. You do know, and so do all men, howe wythin these fewe dayes past, the Lord Montanine here present, was accused before the Seniorie, for trespasses against the statutes and Edicts of the same, and being Prysoner, hauing not wherewith to satifſie the condemnation, the Law affirmed that his life should recompence and supply default of Money. I not able to suffer the want of hym, which is the brother of the deareſt thing I esteeme in the Worlde, and hauing not hir in poſſeſſion, nor lyke without him to attayne hir, payed that Summe, and delyuered hym. He, by what meanes I know not, or how he conieuctured the beneuolence of my deede, thynging that it proceeded of the honest Loue and affection which I bare to gracious and amiable Angelica, wel confideryng of my curtesy, hath ouercome me in prodigalitye, he this Nyght came vnto mee, with his ſiſter my miſtrefſe, yelding hir my ſlaue and Bondwoman, leauyng

hir with me, to doe with hir as I would with any thing I had. Behold my good Lordes, and yce Noble Ladies and cosins, and consider how I may recompence this Benefit, and be able to satissie a present so precious, and of futch Value and regard as both of them be, futch as a right puissant prince and Lord may be contented wyth, a duety so Liberall and Iewell inestymable of two offered thynges.” The affistants that were there, could not tell what to say, the discourse had so mutch drawne their myndes into dyuers fantasies and contrary opinions, feing that the same requyred by deliberation to be considered, before lightly they vttred their inindes. But they knew not the intent of him, which had called them thither, more to testify his fact, than to iudge of the thing he went about, or able to hinder and let the same. True it is, that the ladies viewing and marking the amiable countenance of the Montanine Damfell, woulde haue iudged for hir, if they feared not to bee refused of hym, whome the thing did touche most neere. Who without longer staye, opened to them al, what he was purposed to do, saying: “Sith ye do spende time so long vpon a matter already meant and determinyd, I wyll ye to knowe, that hauing regard of mine honour, and desirous to satissie the honesty of the Brother and sister, I mynde to take Angelica to my wyfe and lawfull spouse, vnitng that whych so long tyme hath bene deuyded, and making into two bodyes, whilom not well accorded and agreed, one like and vnliforme wyll, praying you ech one, ioyfully to ioy with me, and your felues to reioyse in that alliaunce, whych seemeth rather a worke from Heauen, than a deede concluded by the Counfell and industrie of Men. So lykewyfe all wedded feeres in holy Wedlocke (by reason of the effect and the Author of the same, euen God himselfe, whych dyd ordayne it firste) bee wrytten in the infallible booke of hys owne prescience, to the intent that nothing may decay, whych is sustayned wyth the mighty hand of that Almyghty God, the God of wonders, which verily hee hath displayed ouer thee (deare Brother) by makynge thee to fall into distresse and daunger of death, that myne Angelica, beeing the meane of thy delyueraunce, myght also bee cause of the attonement which I doe hope henceforth shall bee, betwene so Noble houfes as ours be.” Thys finall de-

cree reueled in open audience, as it was, against their expectation, and the ende that the kindred of Anselmo looked for, so was the same no lesse straunge and bashfull, as ioyful and pleasaunt, feeling a sodain ioy, not accustomed in theyr mynde, for that vniion and allyaunce. And albeit that their ryches was vnequall, and the dowry of Angelica nothyng neare the great wealth of Salimbene, yet all Men dyd deeme him happy, that hee had chaunced vpon so vertuous a maiden, the onely Modeftie and Integritie of whome, deserued to bee coupled wyth the most honourable. For when a man hath respekte onely to the beauty or Riches of hir, whome he meaneth to take to Wyfe, hee moft commonly doth incurre the Mifchife, that the Spyrite of dyffention intermeddleth amyd theyr houſehold, whereby Pleaſuere vaniſhing wyth Age, maketh the riuēd Face (befet wyth a Thousand wrynkeled furrowes) to growe pale and drye. The Wyfe lykewyſe when ſhe ſeeth her goodes to ſurmount the ſubſtance of hir wedded Hufband, ſhe aduaunceth hir hearte, ſhe fwelleth wyth pryme, indeuor- yng the vpper hand and ſouerainty in all thyngs, whereupon it rifeth, that of two frayle and tranſitorie things, the building which hath ſo fyckle foundation, can not indure, man being borne to commaund, and can not abyde a mayſter ouer hym, beyng the chyefe and Lord of hys Wyfe. Now Salimbene, to perfourme the effect of hys curteſie, gaue his fayre Wife the moytie of his Lands and goods, in fauoure of the Mariage, adopting by that meanes, Montanine to bee his Brother, appointing hym to be heyre of all hys goodes in caſe he deceaſed wythout heyres of his Body. And if GOD did ſend hym Children, he iuſtituted him to bee the heyre of the other halfe, which reſted by hys donation to Angelica his new eſpouſe: Whom he maried ſolempnely the ſunday folowing, to the great contentation and maruell of the whole City, which long time was afflieted by the ciuile diſſentions of thoſe two houſes. But what? ſutche be the varieties of worldly ſucceſſe, and ſutche is the miſchife amoung men, that the ſame which honeſty hath no power to winne, is ſurmounted by the diſgrace and miſfortune of wretched time. I neede not to alleage here thoſe amoung the Romanes, which from great hatred and malice were reconciled with the indiſſoluble knot of Amity; forſomutche as the dignities

and Honoures of theyr Citty prouoked one to flatter and fawne vpon an other for particular profit, and not one of them attained to futch excellencie and renoume, as the foresayd did, one of whome was vanquyshed with the fire of an amorous passion, whych forcyng nature hir selfe, brought that to passe, which could neuer haue bene thoughte or imagyned. And yet Men wyll accuse loue, and painte hir in the Colours of foolysh Furye and raging Madneffe. No, no, Loue in a gentle heart is the true subiect and substance of Vertue, Curtesy, and Modest Manners, expellynge all Cruelty and Vengeance, and nourishyng peace amongs men. But if any do violate and prophane the holy Lawes of Loue, and peruerit that which is Vertuous, the faulte is not in that holye Saincte but in hym whych foloweth it wythout skyll, and knoweth not the perfection. As hapneth in euery operation, that of it selfe is honest, although defamed by those, who thinking to vse it, doe filthily abuse the same, and cause the grosse and ignoraunte to condempne that is good, for the folye of futch inconstant fooles: In the other is painted a heart so voyde of the blody and abhominable finne of Ingratitude, as if death had ben the true remedy and meane to satiffe his band and duety, he would haue made no conscience to offer himselfe frankly and freely to the dreadful passage of the same. You see what is the force of a gentle heart wel trained vp, that would not be vanquished in curtesye and Lyberality. I make you to be iudges, (I meane you) that be conuersant in loue's causes, and that with a Iudgement passionlesse, voide of parciality doe dyscourse vpon the factes and occurrentes that chaunce to men. I make you (I faye) iudges to gyue sentence, whether of three caried away the pryse, and most bound his companion by lyberall acce, and curtesie not forced. You see a mortall enimy sorrow for the misery of his aduersary, but solycited therunto by the ineuitable force of Loue. The other marcheth with the glory of a present so rare and exquifite, as a great Monarch would haue accompted it for singuler fauor and prodigality. The maiden steppeth forth to make the third in ranke, wyth a loue so stayed and charity wonderfull towards hir brother, as being nothyng assured whether he to whome she offered hir selfe were so Moderate, as Curteous, she yeldeth hir selfe to the

loffe of hir chastyty. The first assayeth to make himselfe a conquerour by mariage, but she diminishyng no iote of hir Noble mind, he must seeke else where hys prys of victory. To hir a desyre to kyll hir selfe (if thinges succeeded contrary to hir minde) myght haue stopped the way to hir great glory, had she not regarded hir virginity, more than hir own Lyfe. The second seemeth to go half constrained, and by maner of acquitall, and had hys affectyon bene to render hymselfe Slauie to hys Foe, hys Patron and preseruer, it would haue diminished his prayse. But fithens inough wee haue hereof dyscourfed, and bene large in treatie of Tragicomicall matters, intermyxed and suaged (in some parte) wyth the Enteruiewes of dolor, modesty, and indifferente good hap, and in some wholly imparted the dreadfull endes like to terrible beginnings, I meane for a reliefe, and after sutch sowre sweete bankets, to interlarde a licorous refection for sweeting the mouthes of the delicate: And do purpose in this Nouell insuing, to manifest a pleasaunt disport betweene a Wydow and a Scholler, a passing Practise of a crafty Dame, not well schooled in the discipline of Academicall rules, a surmountinge science to trade the nouices of that forme, by ware foresight, to incouentre those that by laborsome trauayle and nightly watch, haue studied the rare knowledge of Mathematicalles, and other hidden and secrete Artes. Wishing them so well to beware, as I am desirous to let them know by this rument, the succeſſe of sutch attemptes.

THE THIRTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Wydow called Mistresse Helena, wyth whom a Scholler was in loue, (hee louing an other) made the same Scholler to stande a whole Wynter's night in the Snow to wayte for hir, who afterwardes by a sleyght and pollicie, caused hir in Iuly, to stand vpon a Tower starke naked amongs Flies and Gnats, and in the Sunne.

DIUERT we now a little from these sundry haps, to solace our selues wyth a merry deuice, and pleasaunt circumstaunce of a Scholler's loue, and of the wily guily Subtilties of an amorous Wydow of Florence. A Scholler returned from Paris to practise hys knowledge at home in his owne Countrey, learneth a more cunning Lecture of Mistresse Helena, than he did of the subtillest Sorbone Doctor, or other Mathematicall from whence he came. The Scholler as playnely hee had applied his booke, and earnestly harkned his readings, so he simply meant to be a faythfull Louer and deuout requirant to this Iolly dame, that had vowed his Deuotion and promised Pilgrimage to an other Saynt. The Scholler vpon the first view of the Wydowe's wandring Looke, forgetting Ouide's Lessons of Loue's guiles, pursued his concept to the vttermost. The Scholler neuer remembred how many valiaunt, wise and learned men, wanton Women had seduced and deceyued. Hee had forgot how Catullus was beguiled by Lesbia, Tibullus by Delia, Propertius by Cynthia, Naso by Corinna, Demetrius by Lamia, Timotheus by Phryne, Philip by a Greeke mayden, Alexander by Thays, Hanniball by Campania, Cæsar by Cleopatra, Pompeius by Flora, Pericles by Aspaga, Psammiticus the king of Ægypt by Rhodope, and diuers other very famous by Women of that stampe. Hee had not ben wel trayned in holy writ, or heard of Samson's Dalida, or of Salomon's Concubins, but like a playne dealinge man, beleued what she promised, followed what she bad him, waited whiles she mocked him, attended till shee laughed him to scorne. And yet for all these Iolly pastimes inuented by this Widdow, to deceyue the poore Scholler, shee scaped not free from his Logike rules, not saife from his Philosophie. He was forced

to turne ouer Aristotle, to reuolve his Porphyrie, and to gather his Wits about hym to requite this louing Peate, that had so charitably delt with him. He willingly ferched ouer Ptolome, perufed Albumazar, made haste to Haly, yea and for a shifft besturred him in Erra Pater, for matching two contrary Elements. For colde in Christmaffe holy dayes, and Frost at Twelftide, shewed no more force on this poore learned Scholler, than the Sunne's heate in the Feries of Iuly, Gnats, Flyes, and Waspes, at Noone dayes in Sommer vpon the naked tender Corpse of this fayre Wyddow. The Scholler stooode belowe in a Court, benoommed for colde, the Wyddowe preached a lofte in the top of a Tower, and fayne would haue had water to coole hir extreme heate. The Scholler in his Shyrt bedecked wyth his demissaries. The Wyddow so Naked as hir Graundmother Eue, wythout vesture to shroud hir. The Wyddow by magike arte what so euer it cost, would fayne haue recouered hir lost Louer. The Scholler well espyng his aduantage when hee was asked councell, so Incharmed hir with his Sillogismes, as he made hir to mount a Tower, to curse the time that euer she knew him or hir Louer. So the Wydow not well beaten in causes of Schoole, was whipt with the Rod, wherewith shée scourged other. Alas good Woman, had shē known that olde malice had not bene forgotten, shē woulde not haue trusted, and leſſe committed hir selfe to the Circle of his Enchauntments. If women wist what dealings are wyth men of great reading, they would amongs one hundred other, not deale wyth one of thee meanest of those that be Bookish. One Girolamo Ruscelli, a learned Italiany making prety notes for the better elucidation of the Italiany Decamerone of Boccaccio, iudgeth Boccaccio himselfe to be this scholler, whom by an other name he termeth to be Rinieri. But whatsoeuer that Scholler was, he was truely to extreme in reueng, and therein could vſe no meane. For hee neuer left the poore feeble soule, for all hir curteous Words and gentle Supplication, vntill the Skin of hir flesh was Parched with the scalding Sunne beames. And not contented with that, delt his Almofe also to hir Mayde, by fending hir to help hir Mistresse, where also shē brake hir Legge. Yet Phileno was more pityfull ouer the 3 nymphes and fayre Goddesſes of Bologna, whose Hyſtory you may reade in the

49 Nouell of my former Tome. He fared not so roughly with those, as Rinieri did with thys, that fought but to gayne what she had lost. Well, how so euer it was, and what differency betweene eyther of theym, this Hystory ensuinge, more aptly shall gieue to vnderstande. Not long sithens, there was in Florence, a young Gentlewoman of worshipfull parentage, fayre and comely of personage, of courage stout, and abounding in goods of Fortune (called Helena,) who being a widow, determined not to mary agayne, bicause she was in loue with a yong man that was not voyde of Nature's good gifts, whom for hir owne Tooth, aboue other shee had specially chosen. In whom (setting aside all other care) many tymes (by meanes of one of hir maydes which she trusted best) she had great pleasure and delight. It chaunced about the same time that a yong Gentleman of that Citty called Rinieri, hauinge a great time studiēd at Paris, returned to Florence, not to sell his Science by retayle, as many doe, but to knowe the reasons of things, and the causes thereof, which is a speciall good exercise for a Gentleman. And being there honoured and greatly esteemed of all men, aswell for his curteous behauour, as also for his knowledge, he liued like a good Cittizen. But it is commonly feene, they which haue best vnderstandinge and knowledge, are soonest tangled in Loue: euen so it hapned with this Rinieri, who repayringe one day for his paffetime to a Feaste, this Madame Helena clothed al in blacke, (after the manner of Widowes) was there also, and seemed in his eyes so beautifull and well fauored, as any woman euer he saw, and thought that hee might bee accoumpted happy, to whom God did shewe so mutch fauoure, as to suffer him to be cleped betweene hir Armes: and beholdinge her diuers tymes and knowing that the greatest and dearest things cannot be gotten with out labour, he determined to use all his endeouour and care in pleasing of hir, that thereby he might ob-tayne hir loue, and so enjoy hir. The yong Gentlewoman not very bashfull, conceyuing greater opinion of hir selfe, than was needefull, not castinge hir Eyes towards the Ground, but rolling them artificially on euery fide, and by and by perceyuing mutch gazing to be vpon hir, espied Rinieri earnestly beholding hir, and sayd, smiling to hir selfe: "I thinke that I haue not this day lost my

time in comming hither, for if I bee not deceyued, I shall catch a Pigeon by the Nose.” And beginning certayne times stedfastly to looke vpon him, she forced hir selfe so mutch as she could, to feeme very ernestly to beholde him. And on the other part thinking, that the more pleasaunt and amorous she shewed hirselfe to be, the more hir beauty shoulde be esteemed, chiefly of him whom specially shee was disposed to loue. The wife Scholler giuing ouer his Philosophie, bent all his endeouour here vnto, and thinking to be hir seruaunt, learned where she dwelt, and began to passe before hir house under pretence of some other occasion: whereat the Gentlewoman reioyfed for the causes beforesayde, fayning an earnest desire to looke vpon him. Wherefore the Scholler hauing found a certayne meane to be acquaynted wyth hir Mayde discouered his loue: Praying her to deale so with hir mistresse, as he might haue hir fauor. The maide promised him very louingly incontinently reporting the same to hir mistresse, who with the greatest Scoffes in the Worlde, gaue ear thereunto and sayd: “Seest thou not from whence this Goodfellowe is come to lose al his knowledge and doctrine that he hath brought vs from Paris. Now let vs deuise therefore how he may bee handled for going about to feeke that, which he is not like to obtaine. Thou shalt say vnto him, when he speaketh to thee agayne, that I loue him better than he loueth me, but it behoueth me to faue mine honoure, and to keepe my good name and estimation amongs other Women.” Whych thinge, if he be so wise (as hee seemeth) hee ought to Esteeme and Regarde. “Ah, poore Wench, she knoweth not wel, what it is to mingle Hufwiery with learning, or to intermeddle distaues with booke. Now the mayde when she had founde the Scholler, tolde him as hir mistresse had commaunded: whereof the Scholler was so glad, as he with greater endeuer proceded in his enterprise, and began to write Letters to the Gentlewoman, which were not refused, although he could receyue no aunsweres that pleased him, but sutch as were done openly. And in this forte the Gentlewoman long time fed him with delayes. In the ende she discouered all this new loue vnto hir frend, who was attached with sutch an Aking Difeafe in his heade, as the same was Fraught with the Reume of Iealoufie:

wherefore she to shewe hir selfe to be suspe&t without cause (very carefull for the Scholler) sent hir mayde to tell him, that she had no conuenient time to doe the thinge that shoulde please him, fithens he was first assured of hir loue, but hoped the next Christ-masse holly dayes to be at his commaundement: wherefore if he would vouchsafe to come the night following the first holly day, into the Court of hir house, she would wayte there for his comminge. The Scholler the best contented man in the Worlde fayled not at the time appoynted, to go to the Gentlewoman's house: where being placed by the Mayde in a bafe Court, and shut fast within the same, he attended for hir, who Suppinge with hir friende that night, very pleasauntly recited vnto him all that she had determined then to doe, saying: "Thou mayst see now what loue I do beare vnto him, of whom thou haft foolishly conceyued thys Iealousie. To which woordes hir Freende gaue eare with great delectation, desiringe to see the effect of that, whereof she gaue him to vnderstand by wordes." Now as it chaunced the day before the Snowe fell downe so thicke from aboue, as it couered the Earth, by which meanes the Scholler within a very little space after his arriuall, began to be very colde: howbeit hopinge to receyue recompence, he suffred it paciently. The Gentlewoman a little whyle after, sayd vnto hir Freende: "I pray thee let vs goe into my chuamber, where at a little Window we may looke out, and see what he doth that maketh thee so Iealous, and herken what aunswere he will make to my Mayde, whom of purpofe I wyll fend forth to speake vnto him." When she had so sayde, they went to the Window, where they seeing the Scholler (they not feene of hym,) heard the Mayde speake these wordes: "Rinieri, my Mystreffe is the angriest Woman in the World, for that as yet she cannot come vnto thee. But the cause is, that one of hir Brethren is come to visite hir this Euening, and hath made a long discourse of talke vnto hir, and afterwardes bad himfelfe to Supper, and as yet is not departed, but I thinke hee will not tary longe, and then immediately she will come. In the meane tyme she prayeth thee to take a little payne." The Scholler beleeuing this to be true, sayde vnto hir: "Require your Mistreffe to take no care for mee till hir leasure may serue: But yet entreat hir to make

so mucht haft as she can.” The Mayde returned and went to Bed, and the Dame of the houfe sayd then vnto hir frend: “Now sir, what say you to this? Doe you thincke that if I loued him, as you mystrust, that I would suffer him to tarry beneath in this greate colde to coole himselfe?” And hauing sayd so, she went to Bed with hir frende, who then was partly satisfied, and all the night they continued in greate pleasure and solace, laughing, and mocking the miserable Scholler that walked vp and downe the Court to chafe himselfe, not knowing where to fit, or which way to auoyde the colde, and cursed the long taryinge, of his mistresse Brother, hoping at evrey noyse he heard, that she had come to open the dore to let him in, but his hope was in vayne. Now she hauinge sported hir selfe almost till midnight, sayd vnto hir frend: “How think you (sir) by our Scholler, whether iudge you is greater, his Wysedome, or the loue that I beare vnto him? The colde that I make him to suffer, will extinguish the heate of suspition whynch yee conceyued of my wordes the other day.” “Yee say true,” (sayd hir frend,) “and I do assure you, that like as you are my delight, my rest, my comfort, and all my hope, euen so I am yours, and shalbe during life.” For the confirmation of which renewed amity, they spared no delights which the louing Goddesse doeth vse to serue and employ vpon her seruaunts and suters. And after they had talked a certayne time, she sayd vnto him: “For God’s sake (sir) let vs rise a little, to see if the glowing fire which this my new louer hath dayly written vnto me, to burn in him, bee quenched or not.” And rysing out of their Beds, they went to a little Window and looking downe into the Courte, they saw the Scholler dauncing vpon the Snow, whereunto his shiuering teeth were so good Instruments, as he seemed the trimmest Dauncer that euer trode a Cinquepace after futch Musick, being forced thereunto through the great colde which he suffered. And then she sayde vnto him: “What say you to this my frende, do you not see how cunninge I am to make men daunce without Taber, or Pipe?” “Yes in deede,” (sayd hir Louer) “yee be an excellent Musitian.” “Then” (quod shee) “let vs go downe to the dore, and I will speake vnto him, but in any Wife say you nothing, and we shal heare what reasons and arguments he will frame to mooue me to compassion, and

perchaunce shall haue no little pastime to behold him." Whereupon they went downe softly to the dore, and there without opening the same, shee with a softe voyce out at a little whole, called the Scholler vnto hir. Which hee hearinge, began to prayse God and thancke hym a thoufande times, beleeuing veryly that he should then be let in, and approching the dore, said: "I am heere mine (owne sweete heart) open the dore for God's sake, for I am like to die for Colde." Whom in mocking wife she answered: "Can you make me beleue (M. Scholler) that you are so tender, or that the colde is so great as you affirme, for a little Snow newly falne downe? There be at Paris farre greater Snowes than these be, but to tell you the troth, you cannot come in yet, for my Brother (the deuell take him) came yesternight to supper, and is not yet departed, but by and by hee wyll be gon, and then you shall obtayne the effect of your desire, assuring you, that with mutch a doe I haue stolne away from hym, to come hither for your comfort, praying you not to thincke it longe." "Madame" sayd the Scholler, "I beseech you for God's sake to open the dore, that I may stand in couert from the Snow, which within this houre hath fallen in great aboundaunce, and doth yet continue: and there I will attend your pleasure." "Alas sweet Friend" (sayd she) "the dore maketh sutch a noyse when it is opened, that it will easilly be heard of my brother, but I will pray him to depart, that I may quickly retурne agayne to open the same." "Goe your way then" (sayd the Scholler) "and I pray you cause a great fire to be made, that I may warme mee when I come in, for I can scarce feele my selfe for colde." "Why, it is not possible" (quod the Woman) "if it be true that you wholly burne in loue for me, as by your sundry Letters written, it appeareth, but now I perceyue that you mocke me, and therefore tary there still on God's name." Hir frende which heard all this, and tooke pleasure in those wordes, went agayne to Bed with hir, into whose eyes no slepe that night coulde enter for the pleasure and sport they had with the poore Scholler. The vnhappy wretched Scholler whose teeth chattered for colde, faring like a Storke in colde nights, perceyuing himselfe to be mocked, assayed to open the dore, or if he might goe out by some other way: and seeing it impossible, stalking vp and downe like a Lyon, cursed

the nature of the time, the wickednesse of the woman, the length of the Night, and the Folly and simplitie of himselfe: and con-
ceyuing great rage, and despight agaynst hir, turned fodaynely the long and feruent loue that he bare hir, into despight and
cruell hatred, deuising many and diuers meanes to bee reuenged, whych he then farre more desired, than hee did in the beginninge to lye with his Widow. After that longe and tedious night, day approached, and the dawning thereof began to appeare: wherefore the mayde instructed by hir mistresse, went downe into the court, and seemyng to haue pity upon the Scholler, sayd vnto hym: "The Diuell take hym that euer he came hyther this nyghte, for hee hath bothe let vs of sleepe, and hath made you to be frozen for colde, but take it paciently for this tyme, some other Nyght must be appointed. For I know well that neuer thyng coulde chaunce more displeasantly to my Mistresse than this." But the Scholler full of dysdayne, lyke a wyse man which knew well that threats and menacyng words, were weapons without hands to the threatned, retayned in hys Stomacke that whych intemporate wyll would haue broken forth, and wyth so quiet Woordes as hee coulde, not shewyng hymselfe to bee angry, sayd: "In deede I haue suffred the worste Nyghte that euer I dyd, but I knowe the same was not throughe your mistresse fault, bicause shee hauing pitye vpon me, and as you say, that which cannot be to Night, may be done another time, commend me then vnto hir, and farewell." And thus the poore Scholler stiffe for colde, so well as hec coulde, retourned home to his house, where for the extremitye of the tyme and lacke of sleepe beyng almost deade, he threwe hymselfe vpon his bed, and when he awaked, his Armes and Legges had no feeling. Wherefore he sent for Phyfitions and tolde them of the colde he had taken, who incontinently prouided for his health: and yet for al their best and spedie remedies, they could scarce recouer his Iointes and Sinewes, wherein they did what they could: and had it not bene that he was yong, and the Sommer approaching, it had ben to mutch for him to haue endured. But after he was come to Healthe, and grewe to be lusty, secrete Malyce still resting in his breaste, hee thought vpon reuenge. And it chaunced in a lytle tyme after, that Fortune prepared a new accident to the

scholer to satifly his desire, bycause the young man which was beloved of the Gentlewoman, not caring any longer for hir, fel in loue with an other, and gaue ouer the solace and pleasure he was wont to doe to mistresse Helena, for which despite she consumed herself in wepings and lamentations. But hir maid hauing pity vpon hir mistresse sorrowes, knowing no meanes to remoue the melancoly which she conceiued for the losse of hir friend, and seing the scholler daily passe by accordaninge to his common Cus-tome, conceiued a foolishe beleife that hir mistresse friend might be brought to loue hir agayne, and wholly recovered, by some charme or other sleight of Necromancy, to bee wrought and brought to passe by the Scholler. Which deuise she tolde vnto hir mistresse, and she vndiscretely (and without due consideration that if the scholler had any knowledge in that science, he would helpe himselfe) gaue credite to the words of hir mayde, and by and by sayd vnto hir, that shee was able to bring it to passe, if he would take it in hande, and therewithall promised assuredly, that for recompense he shoulde vse hir at his pleasure. The mayde diligently tolde the Scholler hereof, who very ioyfull for those newes, sayd vnto himselfe: "O God, prayed he thy name, for now the time is come, that by thy helpe I shall requite the iniuries done vnto me by this wicked Woman, and be recompensed of the great loue that I bare vnto hir :" And aunswere the mayd: "Go tell thy mistresse that for this matter shee neede to take no care, for if hir frend were in India, I can presently force him to come hither, and aske hir forgiuenesse of the fault he hath committed agaynst hir. And the maner, and way how to vse hir selfe in this behalfe, I will gieue hir to vnderstand when it shal please hir to appoinct me: and fayle not to tell hir what I say, comforting hir in my behalfe." The mayde caried the aunswere, and it was concluded, that they should talke more hereof at the Church of S. Lucie, whither being come, and reasoning together alone, not remembryng that she had brought the Scholler almost to the poynct of death, she reueyled vnto him all the whole matter, and the thing which he desired, praying him instantly to helpe hir, to whome the scholler sayd: "True it is lady, that amongs other things which I learned at Paris, the arte of Necromancie, (whereof

I haue very great skill,) is one: But bycause it is mutch displea-
faunt to God, I haue made an othe neuer to vse it, eyther for my
selfe, or for any other: howbeit the loue which I beare you, is
of futch force, as I cannot deny you any request, yea and if I
should be damned amongs all the deuils in hell, I am ready to
performe your pleasure. But I tell you before, that it is a harder
matter to be done, than parauenture you belieue, and specially
where a Woman shall prouoke a Man to loue, or a Man the Woman,
bycause it can not be done by the propre Person, whome it doth
touche, and therefore it is meete, whatsoeuer is done, in any wyfe
not to be affrayde, for that the coniuration must bee made in the
Nyght, and in a folytarie place wythout Companye: which thing
I know not how you shal bee disposed to doe." To whom the
Woman more amorous than wife, aunswered: "Loue pryketh
mee in futch wife, as there is nothyng but I dare attempt, to haue
him againe, that causelesse hath forsaken me. But tel me I be-
seech you wherein it behoueth that I be so bold and hardy." The
Scholer (subtil inough) said: "I muste of necessity make an image
of brasse, in the name of him that you desire to haue, which being
sent vnto you you must, when the Mone is at hir ful, bath your self
stark naked in a running riuier at the first houre of sleepe **vii.**
times with the same image: and afterwards beyng stil naked, you
must go vp into some tree or house vnhabited, and turning your
selfe towardes the North side thereof wyth the image in your hand
you shal say **vii.** times certain words, that I wil give you in writ-
ing, which when you haue done, two damsels shal come vnto you,
the fairest that euer you saw, and they shall salute you, humbly
demaundyng what your pleasure is to commaund them: to whome
you shal willingly declare in good order what you desire: and take
hede aboue al things, that you name not one for an other: and
when they begonne, you may descend downe to the place where
you left your Apparel, and array your selfe agayne, and afterwardes
retourne home vnto your house, and assure your self, that before
the mid of the nexte Nyghte folowing, your Fryend shall come vnto
you weepyng, and crying Mercye and forgyuenesse at youre
Handes. And know yee, that from that tyme forth, he wil neuer
forsake you for any other." The gentlewoman hearing those

words, gaue great credytle therunto: and thought that already she helde her fryend betweene her Armes, and very ioyfull sayd: "Doubt not sir, but I wyll accomlysh al that you haue inioyned me: and I haue the meetest place in the World to doe it: for vpon the valley of Arno, very neare the Ryuer syde I haue a Manor house, secretly to woorke any attempt that I list: and now it is the moneth of Iuly, in which tyme bathing is most pleasaunt. And also I remembre that not far from the Ryuer, there is a lyttle Toure vnhabited, into which one can scarce get vp, but by a cer-
tain Ladder made of chesnut tree, which is already there, where-
uppon the shephierds do sometyme ascende to the turrasse of the
same Toure, to looke for their cattell when they be gone astray:
and the place is very solitarie out of the way. Into that Toure
wyll I goe vp, and trust to execute what you haue requyred me." The Scholler which knew very well both the village whereof she spake, and also the Toure, right glad for that he was assured of his purpose, sayde: "Madame, I was neuer there, ne yet do knowe the village, nor the Toure, but if it bee as you saye, it is not possi-
ble to finde anye better place in the Worlde: wherefore when the tyme is come, I wyll send you the Image, and the prayer. But I heartily beseech you, when you haue obtained your desire, and do perceyue that I haue well serued your turne, to haue me in remembraunce, and to keepe your promyse." Which the Gentle-
woman assured hym to doe withoute fayle, and taking her leaue of him, she retired home to her house. The Scholer ioyfull for that his deuise should in deede come to passe, caused an image to be made with certaine Characters, and wrote a tale of a Tubbe in stede of the prayer. And when hee sawe tyme he sent them to the Gentlewoman, aduertising her that the Nyght folowyng, she must doe the thing he had appoynted her. Then to procede in his enterprise, he and his man went secretly to one of his fryends houses that dwelte harde by the towne. The Woman on the other fide, and her Mayde repaired to her place: where when it was nyght, makynge as though she would go slepe, she sent her Mayde to Bed: afterwards about ten of the Clocke she conueyed hirself very softly out of her lodgyng, and repayred neare to the Towne vpon the riuere of Arno, and lookyng aboue her, not seeing or perceiu-

ing any man, she vnclothed hir selfe, and hidde hir apparell vnder a bush of Thornes, and then bathed hir selfe *vii.* tymes with the Image, and afterwardes starke naked, holding the same in her hand, she went towardes the Toure. The Scholler at the beginning of the Nyghte beyng hydden wyth hys seruaunt amongs the willowes and other trees neere the Toure, saw all the aforesayde thinges, and hir also passing naked by him, (the whitenesse of whose body surpasseed as he thought, the darknesse of the night, so farre as blacke exceedeth white) who afterwardes behelde hir Stomack, and the other partes of hir body, which seemed unto him to be very delectable. And remembringe what would shortly come to passe, he had some pitty vpon hir, on the other fide, the temptation of the Flesh sodaynly assayled hym, prouoking him to issue forth of the secret corner, to Surprise hir, and to take his pleasure vpon hir. But calling to hys remembraunce what shee was, and what great wrong hee had sustayned, his mallice began to kindle agayne, and did remoue his pitty, and lust, continuing still stedfast in his determination, suffring her to passe hir Iorney. The Wydow being vpon the Toure, and turning hir face towards the North, began to say the wordes which the Scholler had giuen hir. Within a while after the Scholler entred in very softly, and tooke away the ladder whereupon she got vp, and stoode still to heare what she did say and doe. Who hauing *vii.* times recited hir prayer, attended the comming of the two damsels: for whom she wayted so long in vayne, and therewithall began to be extremely colde, and perceyued the dawning of the day appeare. Wherefore taking great displeasure that it came not to passe as the Scholler had tolde hir, she spake theese wordes to hir selfe: "I doubt mutch least this Scholler will rewarde mee with sutch another night, as wherein once I made him to wayte: but if he haue done it for that respect, he is not well reuenged, for the nights now want the third part of the length of those, then, besides the colde that he indured, which was of greater extremity." And that the day might not discouer hir, she woulde haue gone downe from the Toure, but she found the Ladder to be taken away. Then as thou the Worlde had molten vnder hir Feete, hir heart began to fayle, and Fayntinge, fell downe vpon the tarrasse of the toure,

and when hir force reuined agayne, she began pitifully to weepe and complayne. And knowing well that the Scholler had done that deede for reuenge, she grew to be angry wyth hir selfe, for that shee hadde Offended another, and to mutch trusted hym whom shee ought (by good reason) to haue accoumpted hir enimy. And after shee had remayned a great while in this plight, then looking if there were any way for hir to goe downe, and perceyuinge none, shee renued hir weeping, whose minde great care and sorrow did pierce saying thus to hir selfe : “ O vnhappy wretch, what will thy brethen say, thy Parents, thy Neygbors, and generally all they of Florence, when they shall vnderstante that thou haft bene found heere naked ? Thy honesty which hitherto hath bene never stayned, shall now bee blotted with the stayne of shame, yea, and if thou were able to finde (for reamedy hereof) any matter of excuse (futch as might be founde) the wicked Scholler (who knoweth all thy doings) will not suffer thee to ly : ah miserable wretch, that in one houre’s space, thou haft lost both thy freende and thyne honour. What shall become of thee ? Who is able to couer thy shame ? ” When shee had thus complayned hirselfe, hir sorrowe was not so great as shee was like to cast hirselfe headlong downe from the Toure : but the Sunne being already risen, shee approched neare one of the corners of the Walle, espying if shee coulde see any Boy keeping of cattell, that shee might send him for hir Mayde. And it chaunced that the Scholler which lay and slept in couert, awaked, one espying the other, the Scholler saluted hir thus : “ Good morow, Lady, be the Damfels yet come ? ” The Woman seeing, and hearing him, began agayne bitterly to weepe, and prayed him to come vp to the Toure, that shee might speake with him. The Scholler was thereunto very agreeable, and shee lying on hir belly vpon the terrasse of the Touer, discouering nothing but hir head ouer the fide of the same, sayd vnto him weeping : “ Rinieri, truly, if euer I caused thee to endure an ill Night, thou art now well reuenged on me ; for although it be the moneth of Iuly, I thought (because I was naked) that I should haue frozen to death this night for cold, besides my great, and continuall Teares for the offence which I haue done thee, and of my Folly for beleeuing thee,

that maruell it is mine eyes do remayne within my head: And therefore I pray thee, not for the loue of me, whom thou oughtest not to loue, but for thine owne sake which art a gentleman, that the shame and payne which I haue sustayned, may satify the offence and wrong I haue committed agaynst thee: and cause mine apparell I befeech thee to be brought vnto me, that I may goe downe from hence, and doe not robbe mee of that, which afterwardes thou art not able to restore, which is, myne honor: for if I haue deceyued thee of one night, I can at all times when it shall please thee, render vnto thee for that one, many. Let it suffice thee then with this, and like an honest man content thy selfe by being a little reuenged on me, by making me to know now what it is to hurt another. Do not, I pray thee, practise thy power against a woman: for the Egle hath no fame for conquering of the Doue. Then for the loue of God, and for thine honor sake, haue pitty and remorse vpon me.” The Scholler with a cruel heart remembryng the iniury that he hath receyued, and seeing hir so to weepe and pray, conceyued at one instant both pleasure and grieve in his minde: pleasure of the reuenge which he aboue all things desired, and grieve mooued his manhoode to haue compassion vpon the myserable woman. Notwithstanding, pitty not able to ouercome the fury of his reuenge, he aunswere: “ Mistresse Helena, if my praiers (which in dede I could not moysten with teares, ne yet sweeten them with sugred woordes, as you doe yours nowe) might haue obtained that night wherein I thought I should haue died for colde in the Court full of snowe, to haue bene conueyed by you into some couert place, an easie matter it had beene for mee at this instant to heare your suite. But if now more than in times past your honor do waxe warme, and that it greeueth you to stand stanke naked, make your prayers to him, betweene whose Armes you ware not offended to be naked that night, wherein you hearde me trot vp and downe your Courte, my Teeth chattering for cold and marching vpon the Snow: And at his handes seeke releefe, and pray him to bring your Clothes, and fetch a Ladder that you may come downe: Force your selfe to set your honor’s care on him for whom both then, and now besides many other times, you haue not feared to put the fame in perill,

Why doe you not cal for him to come and help you? And to whom doth your help better appertayne than vnto him? You are his owne, and what things will he not prouyde in this distresse of yours? Or else what person will hee seeke to succour, if not to helpe and succour you? Call him (O foolish woman) and proue if the lone which thou bearest him, and thy wit together with his, be able to deliuer thee from my Folly, where (when both you were togethers) you tooke your Pleasure. And now thou haste Experience wheather my Folly or the Loue which thou diddest beare vnto him, is greatest. And be not now so Lyberall, and Curteous of that which I go not about to seeke: referue thy good Nights to thy beloued freende, if thou chaunce to escape from hence aliuine: for from my selfe I cleerely discharge you both. And truly I haue had to mutch of one: and fuffmanit it is for mee to bee mocked once. Moreouer by thy crafty talke vttered by subtil speache, and by thyne vntimely prayse, thou thinkest to force the getting of my good will, and thou callest me Gentleman, valiaunt man, thinkinge thereby to withdrawe my valyaunte minde from punishing of thy wretched body: but thy flatteries shall not yet bleare mine vnderstanding eyes, as once wyth thy vnfathyfull promises thou diddest beguile my ouerweeninge wit. I now to well do know, and thereof thee well assuare, that all the time I was a Scholler in Paris, I neuer learned so mutch as thou in one night diddest teach mee. But put the Case that I were a valiaunt man, yet thou art none of them vpon whom valiaunce ought to shewe his effects: and for the end of sutch tormenting and passing cruell beasts, as thou art, only death is fitteſt rewarde: for if a Woman made but halfe these playnts, there is no man, but woulde affwage his reuenge. But yet as I am no Eagle, and thou no Doue, but a most venomous Serpent, I intend so well as I can to persecute thee mine auncient enimy, wyth the greatest mallice I can deuise, which I cannot ſo properly cal reuenge, as I may terme it Correction: for that the reuenge of a matter ought to furmount the Offence, and I will beſtow no reuenge on thee: for if I were diſpoſed to apply my mynde therenvnto, for respect of thy diſpleaſure done to me, thy Lyfe ſhould not ſuffiſe, nor one hundred more like vnto thine: which if I tooke away, I ſhould but rid the Worlde of a moſt vile,

and wicked woman. And to say the truth, what other art thou then a Deuill accept a little beauty in thy Face, which within few yeares will vanishe and consume: for thou tookest no care to kill, and destroy an honest man (as thou euen now diddest terme me) whose Life, may in tyme to come bee more profitable to the Worlde, than an hundred thousand futch as thyne, so long as the World indureth. I wil teach thee then by the paine thou suffrest, what is it to mock futch Men as bee of skyll, and what maner of thyng it is to delude and Scorne poore schollers, gyuing thee warning hereby, that thou never fall into futch folly, if thou escapest this. But if thou haue so great a will to come downe as thou sayest thou haft, why doest thou not throwe downe thy felfe headlonge, that by breaking of thy Necke (if it please God) at one instante thou rid thy felfe of the payne, wherein thou sayest thou art, and make mee the best contented man of the Worlde. For this tyme I wyll say no more to thee, but that I haue done inough to make thee clime so high. Learne then now so wel how thou maist get down, as thou didst know how to mock and deceyue me." Whyle the Scholler had preached vnto hir these words, the wretched woman wepte continually, and the time stil did passe away, the Sunne increasing more and more: but when the Scholler held his peace, she replied: "O cruell man, if that cursed nyght was grieuous vnto thee, and my fault appeared great, cannot my youth and Beauty, my Teares and humble Prayers bee able to mitigate thy wrath and to moue thee to pitty: do at least that thou mayst be moued and thy cruell minde appeased for that only act, let me once again be trusted of thee, and fith I haue manifested al my desyre, pardon me for this tyme, fith thou haft sufficiently made me feele the penance of my finne. For, if I had not reposed my trust in thee, thou hadst not now reuenged thy self on me, which with desyre most spytfull thou doest full well declare. Gyue ouer then thine anger, and pardon me henceforth: for I am determined if thou wilt forgeue mee, and cause me to come downe out of this place, to forfake for ever that vnfaythfull Louer, and to receive thee for my only friend and Lord. Moreouer where thou greatly blamest my beauty, esteeming it to be short, and of smal accompt, futch as it is, and the like of other women I know, not

be regarded for other cause but for pastime and plesure of yonthly Men, and therefore not to be contemned: and thou thy self truly art not very old; and albeit that cruelly I am intreated of thee, yet can I not beleue that thou wouldest haue me so miserably to die, as to cast my selfe down headlong, like one desperate, before thine eyes, whome (except thou were a lier as thou feemest to be now) in time past I did wel please and like. Haue pitye then upon me, for God's sake, for the Sunne begins to grow exceeding hot, and as the extreame and bitter cold did hurt me the last Night euen so the heat beginneth to molest me." Whereunto the Scholler which kept hir there for the nonce, and for his pleasure, answere: " Mistresse you did not now commit your faith to me for any loue you bare, but to get that again which you had lost, wherfore that deserueth no good turne, but greater pain: and fondlye thou thinkest this to be the onely meanes, whereby I am able to take desired reuenge. For I haue a thousand other wayes and a thousand Trappes haue I layed to tangle thy feete, in makynge thee beleue that I dyd loue thee: in futch wyfe as thou shouldest haue gone no where at any tyme, if thys had not chanced but thou shouldest haue fallen into one of them: and surely thou couldest haue falne into none of them, but would haue bred thee more anoyaunce and shaine than this (which I chose not for thyne ease, but for my greater pleasure.) And besides if all these meanes had fayled me, the pen should not, wherewyth I would haue displayed thee in futch Colours, as when the simple brute thereof hadde come to thyne eares, thou wouldest haue desired a thousand times a Day, that thou hadst never bene born. For the forces of the pen be farre more vehement, than they can esteeme that haue not proued them by experiance. I swear vnto thee by God, that I doe reioyse, and so wil to the ende, for this reuenge I take of thee, and so haue I done from the beginning: but if I had with pen painted thy maners to the Worlde, thou shouldest not haue ben so mucht ashamed of other, as of thy selfe, that rather than thou wouldest haue loked mee in the Face agayne, thou wouldest haue plucked thyne Eyes oute of thy head: and therefore reprove no more the Sea, for beeing increased wyth a lyttle Brooke. For thy loue, or for that thou wilt be mine own, I

care not, as I haue already told thee, and loue him again if thou canst, so mutch as thou wilt, to whome for the hatred that I haue borne, I presently bear so mutch good wyll agayne, and for the pleasure that he hath don thee now. You be amorous and couet the loue of young men, bicause you see theyr Colour somewhat fresh, their beard more black, their bodies well shaped to daunce and runne at Tylt and Ryng, but al these qualities haue they had, that be growne to elder yeares, and they by good experiance know what other are yet to learn. Moreouer you deeme them the better horffemen, bicause they can iourney more myles a day than those that be of farther yeares. Truely I confesse, that with great paynes they please futch Venerial Gentlewomen as you be, who doe not perceyue (like sauage Beastes) what heapes of euill doe lurke vnder the forme of fayre appearance. Younge men be not content with one Louer, but so many as they behold, they do desire, and of so many they think themfelues worthy: wherefore their loue cannot be stable. And that this is true, thou mayest now be thine owne wytnesse. And yong men thynkyng themfelues worthy to be honoured and cherished of theyr Ladies, haue none other glory but to vaunt themfelues of those whome they have enioyed: whych fault maketh many to yeld themfelues to those that be discrete and wife, and to futch as be no blabbes or Teltales. And where thou sayest that thy loue is knowne to none, but to thy mayde and me, thou art deceiued, if thou beleue the same, for al the inhabitants of the streeete wherein thy Louer dwelleth, and the streeete also wherein thy house doth stand, talke of nothyng more than of your Loue. But many times in futch cafes, the party whome futch Brute doth touch, is the last that knoweth it. Moreouer, young men do robbe thee, where they of elder yeares do gyue thee. Thou then (which hast made futch choyse), remayne to him whome thou hast chosen, and me (whom thou flouteſt) gyue leauue to apply to an other: for I haue found a Woman to bee my fryend, which is of an other discretion than thou art, and knoweth me better than thou doſt. And that thou mayſt in an other world be more certayne of myne Eyes desire, than thou hitthero art, throwe thyelfe downe so ſoonne as thou canſt, that thy foule already (as I ſuppoſe) received betwene the armes of the diuel hymelfe may

se if mine eyes be troubled or not, to view thee breake thy Necke. But bicausse I think thou wilt not do me that good turne, I say if the Sunne begin to warme thee, remember the cold thou madest me suffer, which if thou canst mingle with that heat, no doubt thou shalt feele the same more temperate." The comfortleffe Woman seeing that the Scholler's words tended but to cruell end, began to weepe and said: "Now then sith nothing can moue thee to take pity for my sake, at leſt wife for the loue of hir, whom thou faiest to be of better discretion than I, take ſome compassion: for hir ſake (I ſay) whom thou calleſt thy friend, pardon mee and bryng hither my clothes that I may put them on, and cauſe me if it pleaſe thee to come downe from hence." Then the Scholler began to laugh, and ſeing that it was a good while paſt III. of the cloſe, he anſwered: "Well go to, for that woman's ſake I cannot wel ſay nay, or refuſe thy requeſt, tel me where thy gaſtments be, and I wyll go ſeke them, and cauſe thee to come downe." She beleuing hym, was ſome what comforted, and told hym the place where ſhe had beſtowed them. And the Scholler going out of the Toure, commaunded his feruaunt to tarry there, and to take heede that none went in vntil he came againe. Then he departed to one of hys friends houſes, where he wel refreſhed himſelfe, and afterwards when he thought time, he layd him downe to ſlepe. Al that ſpace miſtrefſe Helena whiſh was ſtyll vpon the Toure, and recomforted with a lyttle fooliſh hope, ſorrowful beyonde meaſure, began to ſit downe, ſeeking ſome ſhadowed place to beſtow hir ſelfe, and with bitter thoughts and heauy cheare in good deuotion, wayted for his comming, now muſing, now wepyng, then hopyng, and ſodaynely diſplayring the Scholler's retourne wyth hir Clothes: and chaunging from one thought to another, like one that was weary of trauel, and had taken no reſt al the Nyght, ſhe fel into a litle ſlumbre. But the Sun whiſh was paſſing hote, being aboue noone, glaunced his burning beames vpon hir tender body and bare head, with ſutche force, as not only it ſinged the fleſh in ſight, but alſo did chip and parch the ſame with ſutche roſting heat, as ſhe which ſoundly ſlepte, was conſtrayned to wake: and ſeling that raging warmth, deſirous ſomewhaſt to remoue hir ſelf, ſhe thought in turning that all hir toſted fleſh had

opened and broken, like vnto a skyn of parchment holden against the fire: besides with Payne extreame, hir head began to ake, with futch vehemence, as it seemed to be knocked in pieces: and no maruel, for the pament of the Toure was so passing hotte, as neither vpon hir feete, or by other remedy, shee could find place of rest. Wherefore without power to abide in one place, she fil remoued to and fro wepyng bitterly. And moreouer, for that no Wynd did blow, the Toure was haunted wyth futch a swarme of Flies, and Gnats, as they lighting vpon hir parched flesh, did so cruelly byte and stinge hir, that euery of them seemed worsfe than the prycke of a Nedle, which made hir to bestirre hir hands, incessantly to beate them off cursing still hir selfe, hir Lyfe, hir friend and Scholler. And being thus and with futch pain bitten and afflicted with the vehement heat of the Sun, with the Flies and gnats, hungry, and mutch more thyrsty, affailed with a thousand grieuous thoughts, she arose vp, and began to loke about hir if she could heare or see any person, purposyng whatsoeuer came of it to call for helpe. But hir ill fortune had taken way al this hoped meanes of hir relieve: for the Husbandmen and other Laborers were al gone out of the fields to shrowd themselfues from the heate of the day, sparing their traueil abrode, to thresh their corn and doe other things at home, by reasoun whereof she neither saw nor hearde any thing, except Butterflies, humble bees, crickets, and the riuier of Arno, which making hir lust to drink of the water quenched hir thirst nothing at al, but rather did augment the same. She sawe besides in many places, woodes, shadous and houfes, which lykewyse did breed hir double grief, for desyre she had vnto the same. But what shal we speake any more of this vnhappy woman? The Sunne aboue, and the hot Toure pament below, wyth the bitings of the flies and gnats, had on euery part so dressed hir tender corps, that where before the whitenesse of hir body did passe the darkenesse of the Night, the same was become red, al arayed and spotted wyth gore bloud, that to the beholder and viewer of hir stafe, she seemed the most yll fauored thyng of the Worlde: and remayning in thys plyght without hope or councel, she loked rather for death than other comfort. The Scholler after the Clocke had sounded three in the afternoon, awaked, and remem-

bring his lady, went to the Toure to see what was become of hir, and sent his man to dinner, that had eaten nothing all that day. The Gentlewoman hearing the Scholler, repayred so feeble and tormented as shee was, vnto the trap doore, and fitting vpon the same, pityfully weeping began to say: “Rinieri, thou art beyonde measure reuenged on me, for if I made thee freefe all night in mine open Court, thou haste tostede me to day vpon this Toure, nay rather burnt with heate, consumed me: and besides that, to dye and sterue for hunger, and thirst. Wherefore I pray thee for God’s sake to come vp, and sith my heart is faynt to kill my selfe, I pray thee heartely speedily to do it. For aboue all things I desire to dy, so great and bitter is the torment which I endure. And if thou wilt not shewe me that fauor, yet cause a glasse of Water to be brought vnto me, that I may moysten my mouth, sith my teares bee not able to coole the same, so great is the drouth and heate I haue within.” Wel knew the Scholler by hir voyce, hir weake estate, and sawe besides the most part of hir body all tostede with the Sunne: by the viewe whereof, and humble sute of hir, he conceiued a little pitty. Notwythstanding he aunsweread hir in this wise: “Wicked woman thou shalt not dye with my hands, but of thine owne, if thou desire the same, and so much water shalt thou haue of me for coolinge of thine heate, as dampned Diues had in hell at Lazarus handes, when he lifted up his cry to Abraham, holdinge that faued wighte within his blessed bosome, or as I had fire of thee for easing of my colde. The greater is my grieve that the vehemence of my colde must be cured with the heate of sutch a stincking carion beast, and thy heate healed with the coldnesse of most Soote and sauorous Water distilled from the orient Rose. And where I was in daunger to loose my Limmes, and life, thou wilt renew thy Beauty like the Serpent that casteth his Skin once a yeare.” “Oh myserable wretch” (sayd the woman) “God gieue him sutch Beauty gotten in this forte, that wisheth me sutch euill. But (thou more cruell than any other beast) what heart hast thou, thus like a Tyraunte to deale with me? What more grieuous payne coulde I endure of thee, or of any other, than I do, if I had killed, and done to death thy parents or whole race of thy stocke and kin with most cruel torments?

Truely I know not what greater tyranny coulde be vsed agaynst a Trayter that had facced or put a whole City to the sword, than that thou haste done to me, to make my flesh to bee the foode and rost meate of the Sunne, and the baite for licorous flies, not vouchsafing to reach hither a simble glasse of Water whych would haue bene graunted to the condempned Theefe, and Manqueller, when they be haled forth to hanging, yea wine most commonly, if they aske the same. Now for that I see thee still remayne in obſtinate mind, and that my paſſion can nothiſe moone thee, I wyll prepare paciently to receiue my death, that God may haue mercy on my ſoule, whom I humbly beſeech with his righteous eyes to beholde that cruell act of thyne.” And with thoſe woordſ, ſhe approched with paine to the middle of the terraffe, deſpayring to eſcape that burning heate, and not onely once, but a thonſande times, (besides hir other forowes) ſhe thought to ſowne for thirſt, and bitterly wept without ceaſing, complaingnir hir miſhap. But being almoſt night, the Scholler thought hee had done inough, wherefore he tooke hir clothes, and wrapping the ſame within his ſeruaunt’s cloke, he went home to the Gentlewoman’s houſe where he founde before the gate, hir mayde ſitting al ſad and heauy, of whom he asked where hir miſtrefſe was. “Syr,” (ſayd ſhe) “I cannot tell, I thought this morning to finde hir a Bed, where I left hir yester night, but I cannot finde hir there, nor in any other place, ne yet can tell wheather to goe ſeeke hir, which maketh my hearte to throb ſome miſfortune chaunced vnto hir. But (ſir quod ſhe) cannot you tell where ſhe is?” The Scholler aunſwered: “I would thou haddeſt bene with hir in the place where I left hir, that I might haue bene reuenged on thee ſo well, as I am of hir. But beleue assuredly, that thou ſhalt not eſcape my handes vntill I pay thee thy deſert, to the intent hereaſter in mocking other, thou mayſt haue cauſe to remember me.” When hee had ſayde ſo, hee willed his man to gieue the mayde hir Miſtrefſe Clothes, and then did bidde hir ſeeke hir out if ſhee would. The Seruaunte did his Mayſter’s commaundment, and the Mayde hauiſe receyued them, knewe them by and by, and markinge well the ſcholler’s wordes, ſhe doubted leaſt hee had ſlayne hir Miſtrefſe, and mutch adoe ſhe had to refrayne from crying out. And the Scholler being gone,

she tooke hir Mistresse Garments, and ran vnto the Toure. That day by hap, one of the Gentlewoman's labouring Men had two of his hogges runne a stray, and as he went to seeke them (a little while after the Scholler's departure) he approched neare the Toure looking round about if he might see them. In the busie searche of whom hee heard the miserable playnt that the vnhappy Woman made, wherefore so loude as he coulde, he cried out: "Who weepeth there aboue?" The Woman knew the voice of hir man, and calling him by his name, shee fayde vnto him: "Goe home I pray thee to call my mayde and cause her to come vp hither vnto me." The fellow knowing his mistresse voice sayd vnto hir: "What Dame, who hath borne you vp so hygh? Your mayde hath fought you al this day, and who would haue thought to finde you there?" He then taking the staues of the Ladder, did set it vp against the Toure as it ought to be, and bounde the steppes that were wanting, with fastenings of Wyllowe twigges, and futch like pliant stiffe as he could finde. And at that instant the mayde came thither, who so foone as she was entred the Toure, not able to forbeare hir voyce, beating hir hands, shee began to crye: "Alas sweete Mistresse where be you?" She hearing the voyce of hir Mayde aunswered so well as shee could: "Ah (sweete Wench) I am heere aboue, cry no more, but bring me hither my clothes." When the mayde heard hir speake, by and by for ioy, in haste she mounted vp the Ladder, which the Labourer had made ready, and with his helpe gat vp to the Terrasse of the Toure, and seeing hir Mystresse resembling not a humayne body but rather a wodden Faggot halfe consumed with fire, all weary and whithered, lying a long starke naked vpon the Grounde, she began with hir Nayles to wreke the grieve vpon hir Face, and wept ouer hir with futch vehemency as if she had beene deade. But hir Dame prayed hir for God's sake to holde hir peace, and to help hir to make hir ready: and vnderstanding by hir, that no man knewe where she was become, except they which caried home hir clothes, and the Labourer that was present there, shee was somewhat recomforted, and prayed them for God's sake to say nothing of that chaunce to any person. The Laborer after mutch talke, and request to his Mistresse, to be of good cheere, when shee was rySEN vp, caried

hir downe vpon his Necke, for that she was not able to goe so farre, as out of the Toure. The poore Mayde which came behinde, in goinge downe the Ladder without takinge heede, hir foote fayled, and fallinge downe to the Grounde, shée brake hir Thigh, for grieve whereof she roared, and cryed out lyke a Lyon. Wherefore the Labourer hauing placed his Dame vpon a greene banke, went to see what hurt the Mayde had taken, and perceyued that she had broken hir Thigh, he caried hir likewise vnto that banke, and placed hir besides hir mistresse, who seeing one mischiefe vpon another to chaunce, and that she of whom she hoped for greater help, than of any other, had broken hir Thigh, sorrowfull beyonde measure, renewed hir cry so miserably, as not onely the Labourer was not able to comforte hir, but he himself began to weepe for company. The Sunne hauinge trauayled into hys Westerne course, and taking his farewell by settling himselfe to rest, was at the poynet of goinge downe. And the poore desolate woman vnwilling to be benighted, went home to the Labourer's house, where taking two of his Brothers, and his Wyfe, returned to fetch the Mayde, and caried hir home in a Chayre. Then cheering vp hys Dame with a little fresh water, and many fayre Wordes, he caried hir vpon his Necke into a Chaumber, afterwardes his Wyfe made hir warm Drinks and Meates, and putting of hir clothes, layd hir in hir Bed, and tooke order that the mistresse and maide that night were caried to Florence, where the Mistresse ful of lies, deuised a Tale all out of order of that which chaunced to hir, and hir Mayde, making hir Brethren, hir Sisters, and other hir neighbours beleue, that by flush of lightning, and euill Sprites, hir face and body were Blistered, and the Mayde stroken vnder the Arse bone with a Thunderbolt. Then Phyfitians were sent for, who not without greate grieve, and Payne to the Woman (which many tymes left hir Skin sticking to the Sheets) cured hir cruell Feuer, and other hir diseases, and lykewise the mayde of hir Thigh: which caused the Gentlewoman to forget hir Louer, and from that time forth wisely did beware and take heede whom she did mocke, and where she did bestow hir loue. And the Scholler knowing that the Mayde had broken hir Thigh, thought himselfe sufficiently reuenged, ioyfully passing by them both many times in silence.

Beholde the reward of a foolish wanton widow for hir Mockes and Flouts, thinking that no great care or more prouident heede ought to be taken in iesting with a Scholler, than with any other common person, nor well remembryng how they doe know (not all, I say, but the greatest parte) where the Diuell holdeth his Tayle: and therefore take heede good Wyues, and Wydowes, how you giue your felues to mockes and daliaunce, specially of Schollers. But nowe turne we to another Wyddow that was no amorous Dame but a sober Matrone, a motherly Gentlewoman, that by pitty, and Money Redeemed, and Raunsomed a King's Sonne out of myserable Captiuitie, that was vtterly abandoned of all his Friendes. The manner and meanes how the Nouell ensuing shall fhewe.

THE THIRTY-SECOND NOUELL.

A Gentlewoman and Wydow called Camiola of hir owne minde Raunsomed Roland the Kyng's Sonne of Sicilia, of purpose to haue him to hir Husband, who when he was redeemed vnkindly denied hir, agaynst whom very Eloquently she Inueyed, and although the Law proued him to be hir Husband, yet for his vnkindnes, shee vtterly refused him.

BUSA a Gentlewoman of Apulia, maynetayned ten Thoufande Romayne fouldiers within the walles of Cannas, that were the remnaunte of the army after the ouerthrow there: and yet hir State of Rychesse was faulfe and nothyng dimynished, and left therby a worthy Testimony of Lyberality as Valerius Maximus affirmeth. If this worthy woman Busa for Liberality is commended by auncient Authors: if she deserue a Monument amongs famous Wryters for that splendent vertue which so brightly blasoneth the Heroicall natures of Noble dames, then may I bee so bolde amonges these Nouels to bring in (as it were by the hand) a Wyddow of Meffina, that was a Gentlewoman borne, adorned with passing beauty and vertues. Amongs the rancke of which hir comely Qualities, the vertue of Liberality glistered lyke the morninge Starre after the Night hath cast of his darke and Cloudy Mantell. This Gentlewoman remayning in Wyddowes state, and hearing tell that one of the Sonnes of Federicke, and Brother to Peter that was then King of the sayd Ilande called Rolande, was caried Prysoner to Naples, and there kept in miserable Captiuity, and not like to bee redeemed by his Brother for a displeasure conceyued, nor by any other, pittyng the state of the young Gentleman, and moued by hir gentle, and couragious disposition, and specially with the vertue of liberality, raunsomed the sayd Rolande, and craued no other interest or vsury for the same, but him to husband, that ought upon his knees to haue made sute to be hir flau and feruaunte for respect of his miserable state of Imprisonment. An affiaunce betweene them was concluded, and he redeemed, and when hee was returned, hee falsed his former fayth, and cared not for hir:

for which vnkinde part, she before his Frends inneyeth agaynst that ingratitudo, and vtterly forsaketh him, when (fore ashamed) he would very fayne haue recouered hir good wil. But she like a wife gentlewoman well wayng his inconstaunt mynde before mariage, lusted not to taste or put in prooфе the fruicts and suc-cessa thereof. The intire Discourse of whom you shall briefly and presently vnderstand. Camiola a widow of the City of Siena, the Daughter of a gentle Knight called Signor Lorenzo Toringo, was a Woman of great renoume and fame for hir beauty liberality and shamefastnesse, and led a life in Maffina, (an auncient Citty of Sicile) no lesse commendable than famous, in the company of hir parentes, contenting hirself wyth one only Husbande, while she liued, which was in the tyme when Federick the thirde was Kyng of that Isle: And after their death she was an heyre of very great wealth and ritchesse, which were alwayes by hir conserued and kept in maruellous honest fort. Nowe it chaunced that after the death of Federick, Peter succeedinge by his Commaundement, a great Army by Sea was equipped from Messina, vnder the conduct of Iohn Countee of Chiaramonte, (the most Renoumed in those dayes in Feats of Warre,) for to ayde the people of Lippary, which were so strongly and earnestly besieged, as they were almost all dead and consumed for hunger. In this Army, ouer and besides those that were in pay, many Barons and Gentlemen willingly went vpon their own proper costes, and charges, as well by Sea as Lande, onely for fame, and to be renoumed in armes. This Castell of Lippari was assaulted by Godefrey of Squilatio a valiaunt Man, and at that time Admiral to Robert Kyng of Ierusalem and Sicile: Which Godefrey by long siege and assault, had so famished the people within, as dayly he hoped they would surrendere. But hauing aduertisement (by certayne Brigandens which he had sent abroade to scour the Seas) that the Enimies Army (which was farre greater than his) was at hand, after that he had assembed all his Nauy togeather in one sure place, he expected the euent of Fortune. The Enimies so foone as they were feased and possessed of the place, without any resistaunce of the places abandoned by Godefrey, caried into the Citty at their pleasure all their victualles, which they brought wyth them, for which good happe and

chaunce the sayde Countee Iohn being very mutch encouraged and puffed vp wyth prude, offred Battell to Godefrey. Wherefore he not refusing the same, being a man of great corage, in the Night time fortified his Army with Boordes, Timber, and other Ram-piers, and hauing put his Nauy in good order, he encouraged his Men to fight, and to doe valiauntly the next day, which done, hee caused the Ankers to bee wayed, and gieuing the signe, tourned the prowees of hys Shyppes agaynst the Sicilians Army, but Countee Iohn who thought that Godefrey would not fight, and durst not once looke vpon the great army of the Sicilians, did not put his Fleete in order to fight, but rather in readinesse to pursue the euimies. But seeing the Courage, and the approch of theym that came agaynst him, began to feare, his heart almost fayling him, and repented him that he had required his Enimy to that which he thought neuer to haue obtayned. In sutch wife as mistrusting the Battayle with troubled minde, changing the order giuen, and notwithstanding not to seeme altogether fearefull, incontinently caused his Ships to be put into order after the best maner he could for so little tyme, himselfe gieuing the signe of battell. In the meane while their enimies being approached neere vnto them, and making a very great noyse with Cryes and Shoutes, furiously entred the Sicilians, which came slowly forth, and hauing first throwne their Hookes and Grapples to stay them, they began the fight with Dartes, Croffe-bowes, and other Shot, in sutch sort as the Sicilians being amazed for the sodayne mutation of Councell, and all enuironned with feare, and the Souldiers of Godefrey per-ceyuing the same, entred their enimies Ships, and comming to blowes, even in a moment all was filled with bloud, by reason whereof the Sicilians, then desparyng of themselues, and they that feared turning the prowes fled away: But neuerthelesse the Victorye reclininge towardes Godefrey, many of their Ships were drowned, many taken, and diuers Pinnasses by force of their Oares escaped. In that fight died fewe people, but many were hurt, and Ihon the Captayne Generall taken Pryfoner, and with him almost all the Barons, which of their own accordes repayred to thosse Warres, and besides a great number of Souldiers, many Ensignes as well of the field, as of the Galleyes, and specially the

mayne Standerd was taken. And in the ende, the Castell being rendred after long Voyages, and great Fortunes by Sea, they were al chayned, caried to Naples and there imprisoned. Amongs those Prisoners, there was a certayne Gentleman named Rowlande, the Naturall Sonne of King Federick deceased, a yong prince very comely and valyaunt. Who not being redeemed, taried alone in prison very sorrowfull to see all others discharged after they had payd their Raunsome and himselfe not to have wherewith to furnish the same. For king Pietro (to whom the care of him appertayned by reason he was his Brother), for that his warres had no better successe, and done contrary to his commaundement, concyued displeasure so wel agaynst him, as all others which were at that battell. Nowe hee then being prisoner without hope of any liberty, by meanes of the dampishe pryon, and his feete clogged with yrons, grewe to bee fiske and feeble. It chaunced by fortune, that Camiola remembred him, and seeing him forsaiken of his brethren, had compaffyon vpon his missehappe in sutch wise, as she purposed (if honestly she might doe the same) to set hym at liberty. For the accomplishment whereof without preiudice of hir honour, she sawe none other wayes but take him to husband. Wherfore shee sent diuers vnto him secretely, to conferre if he would come forth vpon that condition, whereunto he willingly agreed. And performing ech due ceremonie, vnder promised faith, vpon the gift of a ring willingly by a deputy espoused Camiola, who with so mutch diligence as she could, payed two thousand Crownes for his ransome, and by that meanes he was deliuerd. When he was retourned to Messina, he repayred not to his Wyfe, but fared as though there had neuer bene any sutch talke beetwene theym: whereof at the begynninge Camiola very mutch maruelled, and afterwardes knowinge his vnkindeneffe was greatly offended in hir heart against him. Notwithstanding to the intent she might not seeme to be grieued without reason, before she proceded any further, caused him louingly to be talked withal, and to be exhorted by folowing his promyse to consummate the mariage: and seeing that he denied euer any sutch Contract to be made, she caused him to be summoned before the Ecclesiasticall Iudge, by whome sentence was giuen that hee was

hir husband euidence of his owne letters, and by witneſſe of certayne other personages of good reputation, which afterwards he himselfe confeſſed, his face blufhyng for shame, for that he had forgotten ſutche a manifeſt benefit and good turne. When the kynde part of Camiola done vnto him was througheſt knowne, he was by hys Brethren reprooued and checked for hys villany, whereupou by their iſtigation, and the perſuasion of his frends, he was contented by humble reuereſt to deſire Camiola to perfrom the Nuptials. But that gentlewoman which was of great corage in the preſence of diuers that were wyth him, when he required hir thereunto, anſwered him in this maner: "Rowland I haue great cauſe to reſerueth thankeſ to almyghty God, for that it pleased him to declare vnto me the prooſe of thine vnfaythfulneſſe, beſtore thou diſt by any meaneſ contaminate (vnder colour of mariage) the purity of my body, and that through his fauour, by whose moſt holy name thou wentest about to abuse me by falſe and periured Oth, I haue foreſene thy Trumpery and deceypt, wherein I beleeue that I haue gayned more than I ſhoulde haue done by thee in mariage. I ſuppoſe that when thou were in pryon, thou diſt meane no leſſe, than now, by effect thou ſhewest, and diſdeſt thinke that I, forgetting of what houſe I was, preſumptuously deſired a Husband of the Royal bloud, and therefore wholly inflamed with thy love, diſpoſe to beguile mee by denying the Trouth, when thou haſteſt recouered lyberty thorough my Money, and thereby to reſerue thy ſelfe for ſome other of moſe famous Aliaunce, being reſtored to thy former de-grec. And thereby thou haſt gieuen prooſe of thy will, and what minde thou haſteſt ſo to do if thyne abilitie had bene co-reſpondent. But God, who from the lofty Skyes doth beholde the humble and low, and who forſaketh none that hopeth in him, knowing the ſincerity of my Conſcience, hath gieuen mee the grace by little trauayle, to breake the bands of thy deceipts, to diſcouer thine ingratitude, and make manifeſt thine infidelity, which I haue not done only to diſplay the wrong towardes me, but that thy Brethren and other thy frends might from henceforth know what thou art, what affiaunce they ought to reſoſte in thy fayth, and thereby what thy frends ought to looke for, and

what thine enimies ought to feare. I have lost my Money, thou thy good name: I haue lost the hope which I had of thee, thou the fauour of the Kinge, and of thy brethren: I the expectation of my mariage, thou a true and constant Wife: I the fruits of charity, thou the gayne of amity: I an vnfaythful husband, thou a most pure and loyall Wyfe. Now the Gentlewomen of Sicilia doe maruayle at my Magnificence, and Beauty, and by prayses aduaunce the fame vp into the heauens: and contrary-wife euery of theym doe mock thee, and deeme thee to be Infamous. The Renoumed Wryters of ech Countrey will place me amongs the ranke of the nobleſt Dames, where thou ſhalt be depreſſed, and throwne downe amongs the Heapes of moſte vnykynde. True it is, that I am ſomewhat deceyued by deliuering out of Pryfon, a yong man of Royal, and noble race, in ſteede of whom I have redeemeſd a Raſcall, a Lier, a Falfiſier of hiſ faith, and a cruell Beaſt: and take heede hardily how thou do greatly eſteeme thyſelfe, and I wiſh thee not to think that I was moued to draw thee out of Pryfon, and take thee to Hufbande for the good quaſtities that were in thee, but for the memory of auncient benefits which my father receyued of thine (if Federick, a king of moſt ſacred remembraunce were thy father, for I can ſcarſly beleue, that a ſonne ſo diſhonest ſhould proceede from ſo noble a Gentleman as was that famous Prince.) I know well thou thiſkeſt that it was an vnworthy thing, that a Widow not being of the Royal bloud ſhould have to husband, the ſonne of a Kinge, ſo ſtrong and of ſo goodly perſonage, which I willingly confeſſe: but I would haue thee a little to make me aūfwere (at the leaſt wife if thou cauſt by reaſon) when I payd ſo great a ſum of money to deliuere thee from bondaſe and captiuity, where was then the nobility of thy Royall race? Where was thy force of Youth? And where thy Beauty? If not that they were cloſed up in a terrible Pryfon, where thou waſt detayned in bitter grieſe, and ſorroe, and there with thoſe naturall quaſtities, conered alſo in obſcure darkneſſe, that compaſſed thee round about. The ill fauoured noyſe and iangling of thy chaines, the deformity of thy Face forced for lack of light, and the ſtench of the infected Prison that prouoked fickneſſe, and the forſaking of thy Frends, had quite de-

based al these perfections wherewith now thou seemest to be so lusty. Thou thoughtest me then to be worthy, not onely of a yong man of a royll bloud, but of a God, if it were possible to haue him, and so soon as thou (contrary to all hope) didst once visite thy natural Countrey, like a most pestilent person without any difficulty, haste chaunged thy mynde, and neuer since thou waſt deliuered, once did call into thy remembraunce how I was that Camiola, that I was ſhee (alone) that did remembre thee: that I was ſhee (alone) that had compassion on thy mishap, and that I was onely ſhee, who for thy health did imploie all the goods I had. I am, I am (I ſay) that Camiola, who by hir Money raunſomed thee out of the hands of the Capitall enimies of thine Auncesters, from Fetterers, from Pryfon: and finally deliuered thee from Mifery extreme, before thou were altogether ſettled in dispayre. I reduced thee agayne to hope, I haue reuoked thee into thy Countrey, I haue brought thee into the Royal Pallace, and restored thee into thy former Estate, and of a Prifoner weake, and ill fauoured, haue made the a younge Prynce, ſtrong, and of fayre aspect. But wherfore haue I remembred theſe things, whereof thou oughtest to bee very mindefull thy ſelfe, and which thou art not able to deny? Sith that for ſo great benefits thou haſt rendred me ſutche thanks, as being my husband in deede, thou haddeſt the Face to deny me mariage, already contracted by the depoſition of honest Witneſſes, and approued by Lettres, Signed with thine owne hand. Wherfore diſdeſt thou diſpife me that hath delyuered thee? Yea and if thou couldeſt haue ſtayned the Name of hir with Infamy, that was thine onely Refuge, and Defender, thou wouldeſt gladly haue giuen cauſe to the common people, to thiſke leſſe than Honesty of hir. Art thou aſhamed (thou Man of little Iudgement) to haue to Wyfe a Wyddowe, the Daughter of a Knight? O how farre better had it ben for thee to haue bene aſhamed to breake thy promiſed fayth, to haue diſpifeſt the holy and dreadfull name of God, and to haue declared by thy curſed vnkindnes, how full fraught thou art with Vice. I doe confeſſe in deede that I am not of the Royall bloud: notwithstanding from the Cradle, being Trayned, and brought vp in the Company of kinges Wyues, and Daughters, no great maruayle it is, if I haue

indued and put on a Royall heart and manners, that is able to get, and purchase royall Nobility: but wherefore doe I multiply so many wordes? No, no, I will be very facile, and easie in that wherein thou haste ben to me so difficult and hard by resisting the same with all thy power. Thou haste refused heretofore to be mine, and hauing vanquished thee, to be futch, frankly of myne owne accorde, I doe graunt that thou art not. Abide (on God's name) with thy royall Nobility, neuertheleſſe defiled with the spot of Infidelity. Make mutch of thy yonthly lustiness, and of thy tranſitory beauty, and I ſhal be contented with my Wyddow apparell, and ſhall leaue the riches which God hath geuen me to Heyres more honest than thoſe that might haue come of thee. Auaunt thou wycked yong man, and fith thou art coumpted to be vnworthy of me, learne with thine own experience, by what subtilit and guiles thou maieſt betray other dames, ſuffiſeth it for me to be once deceyued. And I for my parte fully determine neuer to tary longer with thee, but rather chaſtly to lyue without husband, which lyfe I deeeme farre more excellent than with thy match continually to be coupled." After ſhee had ſpoken theſe words, ſhee departed from him, and from that time forth, it was imposſible eyther by prayers, or Admonitions to cauſe hir chaunge hir holy intent. But Rowland al confuſed, repenteing himſelf to late of hys Ingratitude, blamed of ech man, his eyes fixed vpon the grounde, auoyding not onely the preſence of his brethren, but of all ſorts of people, dayly led from that time forth, a moſt miſerable life, and neuer durſt by reaſon to demaunde hir againe to Wife, whom he had by diſloyalty refuſed. The King and the other Barons, marueyling of the noble heart of the Lady, ſingulaſrly commended hir, and exalted hir prayſes vp into the Skyes, vncertayne neuertheleſſe wherein ſhee was moſt worthy of prayſe, eyther for that (contrary to the couetous nature of Women) ſhe had raunſomed a yong man with ſo great a Summe of Money, or elſe after ſhe had deliuereſ him, and ſentence gieuen that he was hir Hufbande, ſhe ſo couraſgouly refuſed him, as an vnkinde man, vnworthy of hir company. But leaue we for a tyme, to talke of Wydowes, and let vs ſee what the Captayne, and Lieute-

naunt of Nocera can alledge vpon the discourse of his cruelties, which although an ouer cruell Hystory, yet depaynteth the successe of thos that apply their myndes to the Sportes of Loue, futch

Loue I meane, as is wantonly placed, and directed to no good purpose, but for glutting of the Bodye's delight, which both corrupteth nature, maketh feeble the body, lewdly spendeth the time, and specially offendeth him who maketh proclamation, that Whooremongers and adultrers shal neuer Inherite his Kyngdome.

THE THIRTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of Nocera, for adultery by one of them committed with the Captayne's wyfe of the forte of that City, with an enterprize moued by the Captaine to the Cityxens of the same for Rebellion, and the good and dutyfull aunswere of them: with other pityfull euent rysing of that notable and outragious vyce of whoredom.

THE furious rage of a Husband offended for the chasfity violated in his Wyfe, surpaffeth all other, and ingendreth mallice agaynst the doer whatsoeuer he be. For if a Gentleman, or one of good nature, cannot abyde an other to doe him any kinde of displeasure, and mutch leffe to hurt him in hys Body, how is he able to endure to haue his honour touched, specially in that part which is so neere vnto him as his owne Soule? Man, and Wyfe being as it were one body and one will, wherein Men of good Judgement cannot well like the Opinion of those which say that the honour of a lusty and couragious person dependeth not vpon the fault of a foolish woman: for if that wer true which they so lightly vaunt, I would demaund why they be so animated and angry against them which adorne their head with braunched Hornes, the Ensignes of a Cuckolde: and truely nature hath so well prouided in that behalfe, as the very sauage Beastes doe fight, and suffer death for futch honest Jealousie. Yet will I not prayse, but rather accuse aboue al faulty men, thoſe that be so fondly Jealous, as eche thinge troubling their mindes, be afraide of the Flyes very shadowe that buzzeth about their Faces. For by payning and molestinge theymſelues with a thinge that ſo little doth pleafe and content them, vntill manifest, and euident prooſe appeare, they display the folly of their minde's imperfection, and the weakeſſe of their Fantasy. But where the fault is knowne, and the Vyce diſcouered, where the hufbande feeth himſelfe to receyue Damage in the foundeſt part of his moueable goods, reaſon it is that he therein be aduised by timely deliberation and ſage foreſight, rather than with headlong fury, and raging rafhneſſe

to hazard the losse of his honour, and the ruine of his life and goods. And lyke as the fayth and fidelity of the vndefiled Bed bath in all times worthely ben commended and rewarded: euen so he that polluteth it by Infamy, beareth the penaunce of the same. Portia the Daughter of Cato, and wife of Brutus shall be prayfed for euer, for the honest and inuiolable loue which she bare vnto hir beloued husband, almost like to lose hir life when she heard tell of his certayne death. The pudicity of Paulina the wife of Seneca appeared also, when she assayed to dy by the same kinde of death wherewith hir Husband violently was tormented by the vniust commaundement of the most cruel and horrible Emperoure Nero. But Whores and Harlottes, having honest Husbands, and well allied in Kin, and Ligneage by abandoning their bodyes, doe prodigally consume their good Renoume: yea but if they escape the Magistrates, or auoyde the wrath of offended husbandedes for the wrong done vnto them, yet they leaue an immortall flaunder of their wicked life, and youth thereby may take example aswell to shun sutch shamelesse Women, as to followe those Dames that be Chaste, and Vertuous. Now of this contempt whych the Wyfe beareth to hir Husband, do rise very many times notorious flaunders, and sutch as are accompanied with passinge cruelties: wherein the Husbande ought to moderate his heate, and calme his choler, and soberly to chastise the fault, for so mucht as excessiue wrath, and anger, doe Eclipse in man the light of reason, and sutch rages doe make them to be semblable vnto Brute, and reaonlesse Beastes: meete it is to be angry for thinges done contrary to Right, and Equity, but Temperaunce, and Modesty is necessary in al occurrentes, bee they wyth vs, or against vs. But if to resist anger in those matters, it be hard and difficulte, yet the greater impossibility there is in the operation, and effect of any good thinge, the greater is the glory that vanquisheth the affection and mastereth the firs^t motion of the minde which is not so impossible to gouerne, and subdue to reason, as many do esteeme. A wife man then cannot so farre forget his duety, as to excede the Boundes, and Limits of reason, and to suffer his mynde to wander from the siege of Temperaunce, which if he doe after hee hath well mingled Water in his Wyne, hee may chaunce to

finde cause of Repentaunce, and by desire to repayre his Offense augment his fault, finne being so prompt and ready in man, as the crime which might bee couered with certayne Iustice, and coloured by some lawe or righteous cause, maketh him many tymes to fall into detestable Vice and Synne, so contrary to mildenesse and modesty, as the very Tyraunts themselues woulde abhorre futch wickednesse. And to the ende that I do not trouble you with Allegation of infinite numbres of examples, seruинг to this purpose, ne render occasion of tediousnes for you to reuolve so many bookees, I am contented for this present, to bring in place an Hystory so ouer cruell, as the cause was not mutch vnreafonable, if duty in the one had bene considered, and rage in the other bridled and foreseeene, who madly murthered and offended those that were nothing guilty of the Facte, that touched him so neare. And although that these be matters of loue, yet the Reader ought not to bee grieved nor take in evill parte, that we bee still in that Argument. For we doe not hereby goe about to erect a Schoolehouse of Loue, or to teache Youth the wanton Toyes of the same. But rather bryng forth these Examples to withdraw the plyant, and tender Age of this our time, from the pursuite of like Follies, which may (were they not in this sort warned) ingender lyke effects that these our Hystoryes do recoumpt, and whereof you shall bee Partakers by reading the discourse that followeth. Yee must than vnderstand, that in the time that Braccio Montone, and Sforza Attendulo florished in Italy, and were the chiefeſt of the Italian men of warre, there were three Lords and brethren which held vnder their authority and Puiffaunce Foligno, Nocera, and Treuio, parcell of the Dukedom of Spoleto, who gouerned ſo louingly their Landes together, as without diuision, they mayneſtayned themſelues in great Estate, and lyued in Brotherly concorde. The name of the Eldeſt of theſe three Lordes was Nicholas, the ſecond Cæſar, the yongeſt Conrade, gentle Personages, wife and wel beloved ſo well of the Noble men their Neyghbours, as alſo of the Cittyzens that were vnder their Obeyfaunce, who in the ende, ſhewed greater loyalty towards them, than thoſe that had ſworne their fayth, and had giuen Pleadges for confirmation, as yee ſhal perceyue by reading what inſueth. It chaunced that the eldeſt

oftentimes repaying from Foligno to Nocera, and lodging still in the Castell, behelde with a little to mutch wanton Eye, the Wyfe of his Lieutenaunt whych was placed there with a good number of dead payes, to Guard the Fort, and keepe vnder the Cittizens, if by chaunce (as it happeneth vpon the new erection of Estates) they attemped some new enterprife agaynst their Soueraygne Lordes. Nowe this Gentlewoman was very fayre, singularely delighting to be looked vpon: which occasioned the Lord Nicholas, by perceyuing the wantoneffe and good wyll of the Mystrefesse of the Castell, not to refuse so good occasion, determining to prosecute the inioyng of hir, that was the Bird after which he hunted, whose Beauty and good grace had deepeley wounded his Mind, wherin if he forgot his duety, I leaue for al men of good iudgement to consider. For me thinke that this young Lorde ought rather singularely to loue and cherysh his liuetenaunt that faithfullye and trustily had kept his Castell and Forte, than to prepare agaynst him so Trayterous an Attempt, and Ambushe. And if so bee hys sayd Lieutenaunt had bene accused of felony, misprison, or Treason (yet to speake the trouth) hee might haue deliuered the charge of his Castell vnto an other, rather then to suborne his Wyfe to folly. And ought likewise to haue considered that the Lieuetenaunt by puttinge his trust in him, had iust cause to complayne for Rauishing hys Honoure from hym in the Person of hys Wyfe, whom hee ought to haue loued wythout any affection to Infrindge the Holy Lawe of Amitye, the breakinge whereof dissolueth the duety of ech Seruaunt towardes his Soueraygne Lord and mayster. To be short, this blinded Louer yelding no' resistaunce to loue, and the foolish conceipt which altereth the iudgements of the wifest, suffred his fansie to roue so farre vnto hys Appetites, as on a daye when the Lieuetenaunte was walked abroade into the Castel to view the Souldiours and deade payes (to pleasure him that fought the meanes of his displeasure) hee spake to the Gentlewoman his Wyfe in this manner: "Gentlewoman, you being wife and courteous as ech man knoweth, needfull it is not to vse long or Rethoricall Orations, for so mutch as you without further supply of talk do clearely perceyue by my Looks, Sighes, and earnest Viewes, the loue that I beare you, which without comparison nippeth my

Hearte so neare as none can feele the parching paynes, that the same poore portion of me doth suffer. Wherefore hauing no great leysure to let you further vnderstand my mynde, it may please you to shewe me so mutch Fauour as I may be receyued for him, who hauing the better right of your good grace, may therewithall enioy that secret Acquayntance, which futch a one as I am deserueth: of whom yee shall haue better experience if you please to accept him for your owne." This mistresse Lieu-
naunt which compted hir selfe happy to be beloued of hir Lorde, and who tooke great pleasure in that aduenture, albeit that shee defyred to lette hym knowe the good will that she bare vnto him, yet dissembled the matter a little, by aunswering him in this wise: "Your disease Sir is sodayne, if in so little time you haue felt futch excesse of malady: but perchance it is your heart that being ouer tender, hath lightly receyued the pricke, which no doubt will so soone vanish, as it hath made so ready entry. I am very glade (Sir) that your heart is so merily disposed to daliaunce, and can finde some matter to contrive the superfluitie of tyme, the same altering the diuersity of man's complexion, accordingly as the condition of the hourly Planet guideth the nature of euery wight." "It is altogither otherwise (aunswered hee) for being come hither as a master and Lord, I am become a seruaunt and slauie: and briefly to speake my minde, if you haue not pitty vpon me, the disease which you call sodayne, not only will take increase, but procure the death and finall ruine of my heart." "Ah sir," (fayd the Gentlewoman) "your grieve is not so deeplye rooted, and death so present to succeede as you affirme, ne yet so ready to gieue ouer the place, as you protest, but I see what is the matter, you desire to laugh mee to scorne, and your heart craueth somthing to solace it selfe which cannot be idle, but must imploy the vacant tyme vpon some pleasaunt Toyes." "You haue touched the pricke (aunswered the Louer) for it is you in deede wherevpon my hearte doth ioy, and you are the cause of my Laughter and paffetime, for otherwise all my delights were displeasures, and you also by denying me to be your ser-
uaunt, shall abbreviate, and shorten my living dayes, who only reioyfeth for choyse of futch a mystresse." "And how (replied she)

can I be assured of that you say? The disloyalty, and infidelity of man being in these dayes so faste vntited, so hastely following one another, as the Shadow doth the Body, wherefoeuer it goeth.” “Onely experience” (sayed he) “shall make you know what I am, and shall teach you wheather my heart is any thing different from my wordes, and I dare bee bolde to say, that if you vouchsafe to do mee the pleasure to receyue mee for your owne, you may make your vaunt to haue a Gentleman so faythfull for your frend, as I esteeme you to be discrete, and as I desire to let you taste the effect of mine affection, by futch some honest order as may be deuised.” “Sir” (sayd she) “it is well and aduisedly spoken of you, but yet I thincke it straunge for futch a Gentleman as you be, to debase your honor to so poore a Gentlewoman, and to goe about both to dishonor me, and to put my life in pearill.” “God forbid” (aunswered the Lord Nicholas) “that I be cause of any flaunder, and rather had I dye my selfe than minister one simple occasion whereby your fame should be brought in question. Only I doe pray you to have pitty vpon me, and by vsing your curtefie, to satifie that which my seruice and faythfull friendship doth constraine, and binde you for the comfort of him that loueth you better than himselfe.” “We will talke more thereof hereafter” (aunswered the lieuetenaunt’s Wyfe) “and than will I tell you mine aduise, and what resolution shall follow the summe of your deauenude.” “How now Gentlewoman” (sayed he) “haue you the heart to leaue me voyde of hope, to make me languish for the prorogation of a thing so doubtful, as the delayes bee which loue deferreth? I humbly pray you to tell me whereunto I shall trust: to the intent that by punishing my heart for prooife of this enterprize, I may chastise all mine Eyes by reueng from them the meanes for euer more to fee that which contenteth me best, and wherein resteth my solace, leauing my minde full of desires, and my heart without final stay, vpon the greatest Pleasure that euer man coulde choose.” The Gentlewoman would not loose a Noble man so good and perfect: whose prefence already pleased hir aboue all other thinges, and, who voluntarily had agreed to hys request, by the onely signe of hir Gefts, and Looke, fayde vnto him smilinge with a very good grace: “Doe not accuse my heart of lightnesse, nor

my minde of infidelity and treason, if to please and obey you, I forget my duty, and abuse the promise made unto my Husband, for I sweare vnto you (sir) by God, that I haue more forced my thought, and of long time haue constrainyd mine appetites in dissembling the loue that I beare you, than I haue receiued pleasure, by knowing my selfe to be beloved by one agreeable to mine affection. For which cause you shall finde me (being but a poore Gentlewoman) more ready to do your pleasure, and to be at your commaundement, than any other that liueth be shee of greater Port, and regarde than I am. And who to satisfie your request, shal one day sacrifice that fidelity to the iealous fury of hir husband." "God defend" (sayd the young Lord) "for we shal be so discrete in our doings, and so seldome communicate, and talke togeather, as impossible for any man to discry the same. But if mishap will haue it so, and that some ill lucke doe discouer our dealinges, I haue shifft of wayes to coloure it, and power to stop the mouthes of them that dare presume to clatter and haue to do with our priuate conference." "All that I know wel inough sir" (sayd she) "but it is great simplicite in futch thinges for a man to trust to his authority, the forced inhibition whereof shall proouke more babble, than rumor is able to spreade for all his tattling talk of our secret follies. Moreouer I would be very glad to do what pleasest you, so the same may be without slander. For I had rather dy, than any should take vs in our priuities and familiere pastimes: let vs be contented with the pleasure that the easse of our ioy may graunt, and not with futch contentation as shal offend vs, by blotting the clerenesse of our good name." Concluding then the time of their new acquayntaunce, which was the next day at noone, when the Lieutenaunt did walke into the Citty, they ceased their talke for feare of his enteruiew. Who (upon his retourne) doing reuerence ynto his Lord, tolde him that hee knewe where a wilde Boare did haunte, if it pleased him to see the passtime. Whereunto the Lord Nicholas fayned louingly to gieue eare (although agaynst his will) for so mucht as hee thought the same Huntinge should be a delay for certayne dayes to the enioying, (pretended and assured) of his beloved. But she that was so mucht or more espryfled with the raging and intollerable fire of loue,

speedily found meanes to satififie hir louer's fute, but not in futch manner as was desired of eyther partes, wherefore they were constrayned to defer the rest vntill an other time. This pleasaunt beginning so allured the Lord of Nocera, as vnder the pretence of huntinge, there was no weeke that passed, but hee came to visite the Warrener of hys Lieutenaunt. And this order continuing without any one little suspition of their loue, they gouerned theym-selues wisely in pursute thereof. And the Lord Nicholas vsed the game and spore of Hunting, and an infinite number of other exercisef, as the running of the Ring, and Tennis, not so mutch thereby to finde meanes to enjoy his Lady, as to auoyde occasion of Iealousie in hir Husband, being a very familiar vice in all Italians, the Cloake whereof is very heauy to beare, and the diseafe troublesome to fustayne. But what? Like as it is hard to beguile an Vsurer in the accoumpt of his money, for his continuall watch ouer the same, and slumbring sleepes vpon the Bookes of his recknings and accoumpts, so difficult it is to deceyue the heart of a iealous man, and specially when he is assured of the griefe which his head conceyueth. Argus was neuer so cleere eyed for all his hundred Eyes ouer Iupiter's Lemman, as those Louers be, whose opinions be ill affeCted ouer the chastity of their Wyues. Moreouer what Foole, or Asfe is hee, who seeing futch vndiscrete familiarity of two Louers, the priuy gestures and demeanors without witnesse, theyr stolne walkes at vntymely houres, and sometimes theyr embracements to, strayght and common before seruants, that would not doubt of that whych most secretly did passe? True it is that in England (where liberty is so honestly obserued as being alone or secrete conuerstation gyueth no cause of suspition) the same mighte haue bene borne withall. But in Italy, where the Parents themselues be for the most part suspected, (if there had bene no facte in deede committed) that familiarity of the Lord Nicholas, with hys Lieutenaunte's Wyfe was not suffrable, but exceded the Bounds of reason, for so mutch as the Commoditie which they had chosen for possesfing of theyr loue, (albeit the same not suspitions) animated them afterwards to frequent their familiarity and dysporte to frankly, and wythout discretion: which was the caufe that fortune (who neuer leaueth the ioyes of men wythout

giuing thereunto some great alarme,) being enuious of the mutuall delights of those two louers, made the husband to doubt of that which hee would haue dissembled, if honor could so easilly be loste wythoute reproch, as bloud is shed without peryll of Lyfe, but the matter being so cleare, as the fault was euident, specyally in the party which touched him so neare as hymselfe, the Lieuetenaunt before he would enterpryse any thing, and declare what he thought desired throughly to bee resolued of that whych hee sawe as it were but in a Cloude, and by reason of hys conceyued Opynion hee dealt so warely and wisely in thiose affaires, and was so subtil an espiall, as one day when the louers were at theyr game, and in their most straite and secrete embracements, he viewed them coupled with other leash, than he would haue wished, and colled with straighter bands then reason or honesty did permit. He saw with out beeing seene, wherein he felt a certaine ease and contentment, for being assured of that he doubted, and purposed to ordeyne a sowre refec^{tion} after their delightsome banquet, the sim^{ple} louers ignoraunt by signe or coniecture, that their enterpryses were dyscouered. And truely it had ben more tollerable and lesse hurtful for the Lieuetenaunte, if euen then hee had perpetrated his vengeance, and punyshed them for theyr wyckednesse, than to vse the Cruelty wherewith afterwardes he blotted his renoume, and soyled his hands by Bedlem rage in the innocent bloud of thiose that were not priuye to the folly, and lesse guilty of the wronge don vnto him. Now the Captain of the Castel for al his diffimulation in couering of his grieve, and his felony and Treason intended against his soueraigne Lord, which he desired not yet manifestly to appeare, was not able any more from that time forth to speake so louingly vnto him, nor with futch respect and reuerence as he did before, which caused his Wife thus to say vnto hir Louer: "My Lord I doubt very mutch least my husband doth perceiue these our common practizes, and secrete familiar dealings, and that he hath some Hammer working in his heade, by reason of the Countenaunce, and vncheareful entertainement which he sheweth to your Lordship, wherfore myne aduyse is, that you retire for a certaine tyme to Foligno. In the meane space I wil marke and espye if that his alteration be conceiued for any matter

against vs, and wherefore his wonted lookes haue put on this new alteration and chaunge. All which when I haue (by my espial and secret practize founded) I will spedily aduertise you, to the end that you may provide for the sauegard of your faithfull and louing seruaunt." The young Lord, who loued the Gentlewoman wyth al his heart, was attached with so great gryefe, and dryuen into futch rage by hearyng those wycked Newes, as euen presently he woulde haue knowne of hys Lieuetenaunt, the cause of his dyswonted cheare. But weyghing the good aduyse whych his woman had giuen him, paused vpon the same, and promyfed hir to doe what she thought best. By reason whereof, gyuynge warnyng to his Seruantes for hys departure, he caused the Lyeuete-naunte to be called before him, vnto whome hee sayd: "Cap-tayne, I had thoughte for certayne Dayes to spore and passe my tyme, but hearing tell that the Duke of Camarino commeth to Foligno, to debate with vs of matters of importaunce, I am constrained to departe, and do pray you in the meane time to haue good regard vnto our affaires, and if any newes doe chaunce to aduertise the same wyth all Expedyton." "Sir" (sayd the Cap-tayne) "I am sorrye that now when our paffetime of hunting myght yelde some good recreation vnto your honour, that you doe thus forsake vs, notwithstandingyng fith it is your good pleasure, we will cease the chase of the wylde Bore till your retourne. In the meane time, I will make ready the Coardes and Tramelles, that vpon your comming, nothing want for the Furniture of our sport." The Lord Nicholas, seeing his Lieuetenaunt so pleasauntly disposed, and so litle bent to Choller, or ialous fantasie, was perswaued, that some other toy had rather occupied his Minde, than any suspition betweene his Wife and hym. But the subtyll Husband searched other meanes to be reuenged, than by kylling him alone, of whom he receyued that dishonour, and was more craftie to enterpryse, and more hardie to execute, than the Louers were wyse or well aduised to preuent and wythstante his sleigtes and pollicies. And albeit that the Wyfe (after the departure of hir Fryend) affayed to drawe from him the cause of his altered cheare yet coulde shee neuer learne, that hir husband had any ill opinion of theyr Loue. For so many tymes as talke was moued of the

Lord Nicholas, hee exalted his prayse vp into the Heauens, and commended hym aboue all his Brethren. All whych hee dyd to beguyle the pollicies of hir, whome hee saw to blush, and many times chaunge Colour, when shee heard him spoken of, to whom shee bare better affection than to hir Husband, vnto whom (in very dede) shee did owe the faith and integritie of hir body. This was the very toile which hee had laid to intrap those amorous persons and purposed to rid the world of them by that meanes, to remoue from before his eyes, the shame of a Cuckolde's title, and to reuenge the iniurie don to his reputation. The mistresse of the Castel feeyng that hir husband (as shee thought) by no meanes did vnderstante hir follies, desired to continue the pleasure, which either of them desired, and which made the third to die of phrenesie, wrote to the Lord Nicholas, the letter that followeth.

“ My Lord, the feare I had, that my husband should perceyue our loue, caused me to intreat you certaine dayes past, to discontinue for a time, the frequentation of your owne house, whereby I am not little aggrieved, that contrary to my wil, I am defrauded of your presence, which is far more pleasaunt vnto me, than my husband's flatteries, who ceaseth not contynually to talke of the honest behauour, and commendable qualtyes that be in you, and is sorry for your departure, bicause he feareth that you mislyke youre entertainement, whych should be (sayth he) so gryeuous and noysome vnto him, as death it selfe. Wherefore, I pray you sir, if it be possible, and that your affayres doe suffer you, to come hither to the ende I may enjoy your amayable presence, and vse the Liberty that our good hap hath prepared, through the little iealousie of my husband your Lieutenaunt: who I suppose before it be long wil intreat you, so great is his desire to make you paſſetime of hunting within your owne Land and territory. Fayle not then to come I beseech you, and we wyll so well consider the gouernment of our affaires, as the best fighted shall not once discry the least suspicion thereof, recommending my selfe most humbly (after the best maner I can) to your good Lordship.”

This Letter was deliuered to a Lackey to beare to the Lord Nicholas, and not so priuily done, but the Lieutenaunt immediately espied the deceipt which the sooner was disciphred, for so mucht as he

dayely lay in wayte to find the meanes to reuenge the wrong done vnto him, of purpose to beate the iron so long as it was hott, and to execute hys purpose before his Wife tooke heede, and felte the en-deour of his Enterpryse. And bicause that shee had assayed by diuers wayes to sound his heart, and fele whether he had conceiued displeasure against the Lord hir louer, the Day after wherein shee had wrytten to hir friend, hee sent one of his Men in poste to the three Lordes, to requyre them to come the nexte Day to see the pastime of the fayrest and greatest wild Bore, that long tyme was bred in the Forrests adioyning vnto Nocera, Albeit that the Countrey was fayre for courfinge, and that dyuers tymes many fayre Bores haue ben encountred there. But it was not for this, that he had framed his errand, but to trap in one toyle and fnare the thre brethren, whom he determined to sacrifice to the auter of his vengeance, for the expiation of theyr elder brother's trespassse, and for soyl-ing the Nuptial bed of his seruaunt. He was the wylde Bore whome he meant to strike, hee was the pray of his vnsaciable and cruell Appetite. If the fault had ben generall of all three togethers, he had had some reason to make them passe the bracke of one equall fortune, and to tangle them within one net, both to preuent thereby (as he thought) his further hurt, and to chasfise their leude behauour. For many tymes (as lamentable experience teacheth) Noble men for the onely respekte of their Nobility, make no Conscience to doe wrong to the honor of them, whose reputation and honesty, they ought so wel to regard as their owne. Herein offended the good Prynce of the Iewes David, when to vse his Bersabe without suspition, he caused innocent Vrias to bee slayne, in lieu of recompence for his good seruice, and diligent execution of his behests. The children of the proud Romane king Tarquinius, did herein greatly abuse them selues, when they violated that noble Gentlewoman Lucrece, whom al histories do so mutch remembre, and whose chastity, al famous writers do commend. Vppon futch as they be, vengeance ought to be don, and not to defile the hands in the bloud of innocents, as the Parents and Kinsmen of deade Lucrece did at Rome, and this Lieutenaunt at Nocera, vppon the brethren of him that had sent him into Cornwall, without passing ouer the Seas. But what? Anger proceeding

of futch wronge, surmounteth al phrenesie, and exceedeth al the bounds of reason, and man is so denoyd of Wyts, by seeing the blot of defamation, to lyght vpon him, as he seeketh al meanes to hurt and displease him that polluteth his renoume. Al the race of the Tarquines for like fact were banyshed Rome, for the onely brute whereof, the husband of the faire rauished wife, was constrainyd to auoid the Place of his nativity. Paris alone violated the body of Menelaus, the Lacedemonian kyng, but for reuenge of the rauished Greeke, not onely the glory and Rychesse of stately Troy, but also the most parte of Afia and Europa, was ouertourned and defaced, if credyte may be gyuen to the recordes of the Auncyent. So in this fact of the Lieutenaunt, the Lord Nicholas alone, had polluted his bed, but the reuenge of the cruel man extended further, and his fury raged so farre, as the guiltlesse were in greate Daunger to beare the penaunce, which shall be well perceiued by the discourse that foloweth. The Captaine then hauing sent his message, and beyng sure of his intent (no leſſe than if he already had the brethren within his hold, vpon the point to couple them together with his wife, to send them all in pilgrimage to visite the faithfull forte, that blason their loues in an other worlde, with Dydo, Phyllis, and futch like, that more for dispayre than loue, bee paſſed the straictes of death) cauſed to be called before him in a ſecrete place, al the ſouldiers of the Fort, and futch as with whome he was ſure to preuayle, to whom not without ſheading forth ſome teares, in heauie Countenaunce, he ſpake in this maner: "My Companions and Fryends, I doubt not but yee bee abashed to fee me wrapt in ſo heauy plignt, and appeare in this forme before you (that is to ſay) bewept, heauy, panting with ſighes, and all contrary to my custome, in other ſtate and maner, than my courage and degree requyre. But when ye ſhall vnderſtand the caufe I am auuffed that the cafe whych ſeemeth ſtroung to you, ſhall be thought iuft and ryght and ſo will perfourme the thing wherein I ſhall emploie you. Ye knowe that the firſt point that a Gentleman ought to regarde, confiſteth not onely in repelling the iniury done vnto the body, but rather it behoueth that the fight begin for the defense of his honor, which is a thinge that proceedeth from the Minde, and reforteth to the

Body, as the Instrument to worke that which the spyryte appointeth. Now it is honour, for conseruation whereof, an honest man and one of good Courage feareth not to put hymselfe in all perill and daunger of death and losse of goodes, referring himselfe also to the guarde of that whych toucheth as it were oure owne reputation. In futch wyse as if a good Captaine do suffer hys souldier to be a wycked man, a Robber, a Murderer, and an exacter, he beareth the note of dyshonor albeit in all his doings he gouerneth his estate after the rule of honesty, and doth nothing that is vnworthy his vocation. But what? he being a head vnited to futch members, if the partes of that vnited thing be corrupt and naught, the head must needes bear the blot of the fault before referred to the whole Body. Alas (sayd he fighing) what parte is more neare, and dearer to Man, than that which is giuen vnto him for a Pledge and Comfort duryng his Life, and which is conioyned to be bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh, to breath forth one Mynde, and to think with one heart and equall wil. It is of the Wyfe that I speake, who being the moytie of hir husband, ye ought not to muse if I say, that the honoure of the one is the rest of the other, and the one infamous and wycked, the other feeleth the troubles of futch mischiefe, and the Wife being careleffe of hir honour, the husband's reputation is defiled, and is not worthy of prayse, if he suffer futch shame vnuenged: I must (Companions and good friends) here dyscouer that whych my heart would faine kepe secrete, if it were possible, and must rehearse a thing vnto you, which so sone as my Mouth would faine kepe close, the Minde assayeth to force the ouverture. And loth I am to do it, were it not that I make so good accompt of you, as ye being tied to me with an vnfeparable Amity, will yeld me your comfort and Ayde against him that hath done mee this Villany, futch as if I be not reuenged vpon, needes must I be the Executioner of that vengeance vpon my selfe, that I am loth to lyue in this dishonor, whych all the dayes of my life (without due vltion) like a Worme wyll torment and gnaw my conscyence. Wherefore before I goe any further, I woulde knowe whether I myght so well trust your aide and succour in this my businesse, as in all others I am assured you would not leaue mee so long as

any breath of life remained in you. For without futch assurance, I do not purpose to let you know the pricking naile that pierceth my heart, nor the gryefe that grieueth me so neare, as by vttering it without hope of help I shall open the Gate to death, and dye without reliefe of my desire, by punishing him, of whome I haue receyued an iniury more bloudy than any man can doe.” The Souldiers whych loued the Captaine as theyr owne Lyfe, were sorry to see him in futch estate, and greater was theyr dolour to heare wordes that tended to nothing else but to fury, vengeance, and murder of hymselfe. Wherefore all wyth one accorde promyfed theyr helpe and mayne force towardes and against all men for the bryngyng to passe of that whych hee dyd meane to requyre. The Lieutenaunt assured of his Men conceyued heart and Courage, and continuing his Oration and purpose, determyned the slaughter and ouerthrowe of thre Trinicien Brethren, (for that was the furnaine of the Lordes of Foligno,) who pursued his Oration in this maner: “Know ye then (my Companions and good Friends) that it is my Wife, by whome I haue indured the hurt and losse of myne honour, and she is the party touched, and I am he that am most offended. And to the ende that I do not hold you longer in suspence, and the party be concealed from you, whych hath don me thys Outrage: ye shall vnderstand that Nicholas Trinicio, the elder of the three Lordes of Foligno and Nocera, is he, that against all ryght and equity hath suborned the Wife of his Lieuetenaunt, and foyled the Bed of him, whereof he ought to haue ben the defender and the very bulwarke of his reputation. It is of hym my good Fryends, and of his that I meane to take futch Vengeance, as eternall memory shall display the same to all posterity: and neuer Lord shal dare to doe a like wrong to mine, without remembraunce what his duety is, which shall teach hym how to abuse the honest seruice of a Gentleman that is one of his owne trayne. It resteth in you both to holde vp your hand, and keepe your promise, to the end that the Lord Nicholas, deceiuyng and mocking me, may not trust and put affiance in your force, vnto whych I heartily do recommend my selfe.” The Souldiers moued and incited with the wickednesse of theyr Lord and with the wrong

done to him, of whom they receyued wages, swore agayne to serue his turne in any exploit he went about, and requyred him to be assyred, that the, Trinicien Brethren shoulde be ouerthrowne, and suffer deserved penaunce, if they myght lay hands vpon them, and therefore willed him to feke meanes to allure them thither, that they myght be dispatched. The Lieutenaunt at these words renuing a chearefull Countenaunce, and shewing himself very ioyfull for sutch succeſſe after he had thanked his Souldyers, and very louingly imbraced the chiefeſt of them, reuealed hys deuised pollicy, and hoped ſhortly to haue them at his commaundement within the Fort, alleaging that he had diſpatched two Meſſengers vnto them, and that his wife alſo priuily had ſent hir page: vnto whome he purpoſed to gyue ſo good a recompence, as neuer more ſhe ſhould plant his hornes ſo hygh, vnder a colour of gentle entartaynement of hir ribauld and Friend. They were ſcarce reſolued vpon this intent, but newes were brought him, that the next day morning, the three lords accompanied with other nobility would come to Nocera, to hunt that huge wylde Bore, whereof the Lieutenaunt had made ſo greate auant. These newes did not greatly please the Captaine, for ſo mutch as he feared, that his purpoſe could not (conueniently) be brought to paſſe, if the company were ſo great. But when he conſidered that the Lords alone, ſhould lodge within the Fort, he was of good cheare again, and ſtaied vpon his firſt intent. The Triniciens the next day after came very late, bicaufe the Lord Berardo of Verano duke of Camerino, deſired to be one, and alſo the two brethren taried for Conrade, who was at a mariage, and could not affiſt the Tragedie that was played at Nocera, to his great hap and profit. So this troupe came to Nocera late, and hauing ſupped in the City, the Lord Nicholas, and the Duke of Camerino went to Bed in the Fort, Cæſar the brother of Trinicio taryng behind with the Trayne, to lodge in the city. Stay here a while (ye Gentlemen) ye I ſay, that purſue the ſecrete ſtelths of loue, neuer put any great truſt in fortune, which ſeldome keþeth hir promife with you. Ye had neede therfore to take goode heede, leaſt ye be ſurpryſed in the place, wher priuily you giue the aſſault, and in the aſte

wherein ye desire the affistance of none. See the barbarous cruelty of a Lieutenant, which loued rather to kill his corriual in his cold bloud, than otherwife to be reuenged, when he saw him a bed with his Wife, purposely that the example of his fury myght be the better knowne, and the secret sclander more euident, from the roote whereof did spryng an infinite number of Murders and mischies. About midnight then, when all thinges were at rest vnder the darke silence of the nyght, the Lieutenant came to the Chamber of the Lord Nicholas, accompanied with the most part of the Watch, and hauyng stopt vp the yeoman of hys Chaumber, hee so dressed the Companion of hys Bedde, as for the first prooef of his courtefie, he caused hys Membres and priuy partes to be cut of, saying vnto him with cruell disdayne: "Thou shalt not henceforth (wycked wretch) weld this launce into the rest, thereby to batter the honour of an honeste man than thy selfe." Then lanching his stomacke with a piercing blade, he tare the heart out of his belly, saying: "Is this the trayterous Heart that hath framed the plot and deuyfed the enterprize of my shame, to make this infamous villaine without Life, and his renoume without prayse?" And not content with this Cruelty, he wreakt the like vpon the remnaunt of his body, that sometimes the runnagate Medea did vpon hir innocent brother, to fane the Lyfe of hir selfe, and of hir friend Iason. For he cut him into an hundred thousand pieces, gyuing to euery Membre of the poore murdred soule hir word of mockery and contempt. Was it not sufficient for a tirannous husband to be reuenged of hys shame, and to kill the party which had defamed him, without vsing so furious Anotamie vpon a dead body, and wherein there was no longer feeling? But what? Ire beyng wythout measure, and anger wythout Brydle or reason, it is not to be wondred, if in al his actes the Captayne ouerpassest the iust measure of vengeance. Many would thinke the committed murder vpon Nicholas, to be good and iust: but the Iustice of an offense, ought not so longe time to be conceyled, but rather to make him feele the smart at the very tyme the deed is done, to the ende that the nypping gryefe of pestilent treason wrought against the betrayed party, be not obscured and hydden by fodayne rage and lacke of

reafon rising in the mindes first motions, and thereby also the faulfe of the guilty, by hys indiscretion couered: otherwyse there is nothyng that can colour futch vice. For the law indifferently doth punish euery man, that without the Magistrates order taketh authority to venge his own wrong. But come we againe vnto our purpose. The Captayne all imbruied in bloude, entred the Chaumber of the Duke of Camerino, whom with al the rest of the strangers that were wythin the Castle, hee lodged (without speakyng any worde) in a deepe and obscure pryon. Beholde, what reste they tooke that nyghte, whych were come to hunt the Wylde Boare. For wythout trauaylyng farre, they were intrapped in the subtil engines and Nettes of the furious Lieuetenaunte, who when the morning bedecked with hir vermillion cleare began to shewe hir selfe, when all the Hunters dyd put them felues in readynesse, and coupled vp theyr Dogges to marche into the Fielde, beholde, one of the Captayne's cruell Ministers wente into the City, to cause the Lord Cæsar to come and speake with hys brother Nicholas, and intreated him not to tarry, for that he and the Duke were dysposedy to shewe hym some disport. Cæsar whych neuer suspected the leaft of these chaunced murders, desired not to be prayed agayne, but made haste to the Butcherie like a lamb, and in the company of the Wolues themselues that were in readynesse to kyll hym. He was no sooner in the Court of the Castle, but seuen or eyght Varlets apprehended hym and hys Men, and carryed hym into the Chaumber (bound lyke a thefe) wherin the Membres of hys Myserable Brother were cut of and dispersed, whose corps was pitifully gored and arrayed in Bloud. If Cæsar were abashed to see himselfe bound and taken prysoner he was more astonned when he perceyued a body so dysmembred, and which as yet he knewe not. "Alas," (sayd he) "what fighte is this? Is thys the bore whych thou haft caused vs to come hyther to hunt within our very Fort?" The Captayne rising vp, al imbruied wyth bloud, whose face and voyce promised nothing but Murder to the miserable young Gentleman sayd: "See Cæsar, the Body of thine adulterous brother Nicholas, that infamous whoremonger, and marke if this be not his head: I woulde to God that Conrade were here also that ye might all three

be placed at this sumptuous Banquet, which I haue prepared for you. I sweare vnto thee then, that this shoulde the last day of all the Trinicien race, and the end of your Tirannies and wicked Life. But sith I cannot get the effect of that whych my heart desireth, my minde shal take repast in the triumph which Fortune hath ordeined. Cursed be the mariage and Wedding at Trevio, that hath hyndred me of an occasion so apte, and of the meanes to dispatch a matter of sutch importance as is the ouerthrow of so many tirants." Cæsar at this sentence stode so stil, as whilom dyd the wyfe of Loth, by seing the City on fire, and consume into ashecs: by the fight whereof she was conuerted into a stone of Salt. For when he sawe that bloudy Pageant, and knew that it was his brother Nicholas, pity and feare so stopt the pipes of his speach, as without complayning himself or framing one word, he suffred his throte to be cut by the barbarous captaine, who threw him halfe dead vpon the corps of his brother, that the bloud of either of them might cry vp to the heauens for so loud vengeance as that of Abel dyd, being slain by the treason of his nearest brother. Beholde the dreadful begynnings of a heart rapt in fury, and of the mind of him that not resifting his fond affections, executed the terrible practizes of his owne braine, and preferring his fantasie aboue reason, deuised sutch ruine and decay, as by these Examples the Posteritye shall haue good cause to wonder. The lyke Cruelty vsed Tiphon towards his brother Osyris by chopping his body in xxvi. gobbets, whereby ensued the decay of him and his, by Orus whome some doe surname Appollo. And troweth the Captayne to loke for lesse mercy of the Brother of the other twayne that were murdered and of the Dukes kindred whome he kept Prysoner? But he was so blynded with Fury, and it may be, led by ambition and defyre to be made Lord of Nocera, that he was not contented to venge his shame on hym whych had offended, but assayed to murder and extinguysh all the Trinicien bloud: the enheritaunce only remaining in them. And to come to the end of his Enterprize, this Italian Nero, not content wyth these so many slaughters, but thereunto adioyned a new Treason assaying to win the Citizens of Nocera to moue rebellion agaynst their Lord, causing them to assemble before the Forte, vnto whome

vpon the Walles, he vsed this or like Oration : "I haue hitherto (my Maisters) dissembled the lyttle pleasure that my heart hath felt to see so many true and faithful Citizens, subiecte vnder the wyll and unbrydeled lustes of two or three Tyraunts : who hauing gotten Power and authority ouer vs, more through our owne folly and cowardyse, than by valiance, vertue and iustice, either in them or those which hane dispoyled this countrey of their auncient liberty. I will not deny but pryncipalities of longe entraunce and Foundation deryued by succeffion of inherytaunce, haue had some spyce and kynde of Equity, and that Lordes of good lyfe and conuerſation ought to be obeyed, defended and honored. But where inuasion and feasurē is against ryght, where the people is spoyled and Lawes violated, it is no conscience to disobey and abolish futch monsters of nature. The Romanes in the prime age of their Common Wealth ful wel declared the same, when they banished out of their City that proud race of the Tirant Tarquine, and when they went about to exterminate al the rootes of cruelty and tyrannical power. Our Neighbors the Sicilians once dyd the like vnder the conduct of Dion, against the disruleſed fury and wilful cruelty of Denis the tyrant of Syracusa, and the Atheniens against the Chyldren of Pifistratus. And ye that be forted from the stocke of those Samnites, which in times past so long heald vp their Heades against the Romane force, will ye be so very cowardes and weake hearted for respect of the title of your feigniorie as ye dare not with me to attempt a valiant enterprise for reducing your felues into libertye, and to expell that vermyne broode of Tyraunts which fwarme through out the whole regyon of Italy. Wyll yee bee so mated and dumped, as the shadow alone of a fond and inconstant young man, shall holde your Nose to the Grindstone, and drawe you at his lust lyke an Oxe into the stall? I feare that if ye saw your Wiues and Daughters haled to the paffetyme and pleasure of these Tirauntes, to glutte the whoredome of those styncking Goate Bucks, more Lecherous and filthy than the fenseles sparrows: I feare (I say) that ye durft not make one Sygne for demonstratyōn of your Wrath and dyspleasure. No, no (my maysters of Nocera,) it is hyghe tyme to cutte of the Hydra hys heads, and to strangle hym wythin hys Cauē. The tyme is come

(I say) wherein it behoueth you to shewe your felues lyke Men, and no longer to dissemble the case that toucheth you so neare. Confyder whether it bee good to follow myne aduyse, to repossede agayne the thyng whych is your owne, (that is) the Freedome wherein your Auncesters gloryfied so mutch, and for which they feared not to hazarde theyr Goodes and Lyues. It wyll come good cheape, if you be ruled by me, it wyll redound to your treble Fame, if lyke Men ye follow my aduyse, whych I hope to let you shortly see wythout any great peryll or losse of your Citizens Bloud. I haue felt the effect of the Trinicien Tiranny, and the rigor of their vnrighteous gouernment, which hauing begonne in me, they will not faile, if they be not chastised in time, to extend on you also, whome they deeme to be their slaves. In lyke manner I haue first begon to reppresse their boldnesse, and to wythstande their leud behauior: yea and if you Mynde to vnderstande ryght from wrong, an easy matter it will be to perfourme the rest, the time beinge so commodious, and the discouery of the thinge whereof I haue made you so priuy, so conuenient. And know ye, that for the exploit of mine intent, and to bryng you agayne altogether in Liberty, I haue taken the two Lords Nicholas and Cæsar pryoners, attending till fortune do bryng to me the third, to pay him with like money and equall guerdon, that not onely you may bee free and setled in your auncient priuiledge, but my heart also satissified of the wrong which I haue receiued by their iniustice. Beleue (Maisters) that the thing whych I haue done: was not wythoute open iniury receiued, as by keepyng it close I burst, and by telling the same I am ashamed. I wil kepe it secrete, notwithstanding, and shal pray you to take heede vnto your felues, that by vniuerfal consent, the mischefe may be preuented. Deuise what answer you wyll make me, to the intent that I by following your aduise, may also be resolued vpon that I haue to do, without Preiudice but to them to whome the case doth chyefly appertayne." Duryng al this discourse, the wycked Captayne kept close the Murder which hee had committed, to drawe the Worme out of the Noce-rines Nose, and to see of what Mynde they were, that vpon the intellygence thereof, he myght woorke and follow the tyme accordanly. Hee that had seene the Cytizens of Nocera after that sedyti-

ous Oration, would haue thought that he had heard a murmure of Bees, when issuing forth their Hyues, they light amidst a pleasaunt Herber, adorned and beautified with diuers coloured floures. For the people flocked and assembled togythers, and began to grudge at the imprysonment of ther Lord, and the treason committed by the Lieuetenaunte, thynking it very straunge that he which was a housshold seruaunt durst be so bold to sease on those to whome he dyd owe all honour and Reuerence. And do assure you that if he had ben below, as he was vpon the rampire of the Walles, they had torne him into so many pieces, as he had made Gobbets^{of} the Lord Nicholas body. But feing that they could not take him, they went about to seeke the deliueraunce of them, whome they thought to be yet alive: and one of the chyef of the City in the Name of them all shortly and bryefly, aunswered him thus: "If malice did not well discouer it selfe in the fugred and Traiterous composition of thy woordes (O Captayne) it were easie inough for an inconstaunce People (bent to chaunge, and desirous of innouations,) to heare and do that, which futch a traitor and flatterer as thou art doft propose: but we hauing til now indured nothing of the Triniciens that sauoreth of Tiranny, cruelty, or exceſſe, we were no leſſe to be accused of felony, than thou art guilty of Rebels cryme, by seafyng vpon the Persons of thy Lords, if we shoulde yelde credyt to thy Serpents hissing, or lend aide to thy traiterous practise, thou goest about against them who innoblyng thee are trayterously berieuē of that which concerned their reputation and greatnesse. We be an honest People and faithfull Subiects. We wyll not be both Wicked and vnhappy at once, and without cause expell our heads out of our common Wealth. No though they shoulde perpetrate the mischieſes whych thou haſt alleadged. Vpon futch Nouelties and straunge facts we ſhall take newe aduife and Councell. To be ſhort, thou ſhalt pleaſure vs to ſet our Lordes at Lyberty, and thou like a wyfe man ſhalt doe thy duety, and ſatisfy a People which eaſily can not endure that a ſubiecte do wrong to thoſe to whome he oweth obedience. And feare not to receiue anye euill of them, nor yet to feele anoyaunce, for wee wyll take vpon vs by honest meaneſ to craue pardon for thy fault how haynous ſo euer it be. But if thou continue thine

offence, be sure that the Lord Conrade shall be aduertised, and with all our power we shall succour him by force, to let thee feele the Nature of Treason, and what reward is incydent to the practizers of the same." The Captaine albeit he was abashed with that aunswere, and saw that it would not be wel wyth him if he did not prouid speedy remedy and order for his affayres, aswell for the comming of the Lord Conrade, as of the brother of the Duke Camerino, told the Citizens that within three or foure dayes he would giue them a resolute aunswer, and so it might be, yelde vnto theyr wylles, and delyuer them whom he had in holde. Thys gentle aunswere dyd nothyng stay the Citizens for the accomlyshment of that which they thought best to do, knowing also that the gallant had not commenced that Tragedy, but for other toyes whych his vngracious head had framed for a further intended Myschiefe, for which cause they assembed their Councell, and concluded that one should ryde in poste to the Lord Conrade, (the third and remnaunt of the Brethren,) that hee myghte come to take order for the delyueraunce of Nicholas and Cæsar whome they thought he had referued still alyue in Captiuity. The Nocerines shewed this curteſie (not but that they woulde gladly haue bene at lyberty, if the way had bene better troden,) aswell for the lyttle trutſ they reposid in the Captayne, who they thoughte would be no more gentle and faithfull, than he shewed himſelfe to be loyall to his Maifters, and for that Conrade was well beloued of the Lordes his Neighbors, and ſpecially of the impryfoned Duke and his Brother Braccio Montone, who had the Italian men of Warre at his pleaſure, and that the Noble men woulde affiſte him wyth all their power. Wherefore they confidered that theyr faireſt and beſt way, for auoидing of factiōns, was to kepe themſelues trutſy and true, and by not hearkening to a Traitor, to bynd their ſoueraigne Lord with ſutſh duety and obedience, as the vnkindeft man of the world would confeſſe and acknowledg for the conſequēce of a matter of ſutſh importance. The feditious captaine on the other ſide, void of hope, and in greater rage than hee was before, perfifteſt in hys folly, not without foreſeeyng howe hee myghte ſauē himſelfe, which hee had pollitikely brought to paſſe, if God had not ſhortened his waye, by payment of Vfury

for hys Wyckednesse, and by very dilygence of them in whome hee reposed his trusfe, the manner and howe, immedyately doeth follow. So soone as he had gyuen ouer the Councell of the Citizens and a lyttle bethought him what he had to do, he called before him two yong Men, whom aboue al others he trusted best. To these yong men he deliuered all his Gold, Syluer and Jewels, that they myght conuey the same out of the iurisdiction of his Lords, to the intente that when he saw hymself in daunger, he myght retire to the place where those gallants had before carryed his furniture, and mountinge them vpon two good steedes, he let them forth at the Posterne gate, praying them so soone as they could to retourne aduertysement of their abode, and that spedily he would fend after them hys Chyldren and the rest of his moueables, tellyng them that he specially committed his Lyfe and goodes into their hands, and that in time and place he would acknowledg the Benefite don vnto him in that distreffe. The two that were thus put in trust for sauegard of hys thyngs, promised vnto him Golden Hilles and Miracles: but so soone as they had lost the sight of theyr maister, they deuised another complotte and determined to breake faith to him, which was forsworne, and who made no conscience not onely to reuolt, but also cruelly to kill his soueraigne Lordes. They thought it better to ryde to Treuio, to tell the Lord Conrade the pitifull end of his brethren, and the imprysonment of the Duke of Camerino, than to seeke rest for him, whome God permitted not to be sauad, for his heinous sinne already committed, and for that which he mente to do vpon hys Wyfe. For all the dyligence that the Nocerines had made, yet were the Lienetenaunte's Men at Treuio before them, and hauyng filled the Eares of Conrade with those heauy Newes, and hys Eyes with Teares, his Mynde with sorrow, and Spyrite with desyre to be reuenged, and as Conrade was about to mount on horse backe wyth the Trayne hee had, the Citizens were arryued to disclose the Imprysonment of his brethren. To whome Conrade made aunswere: "I would to GOD (my friends) that the tirant had ben contented with the litle cruelty wherof you speake, for then I would find the meanes to agree the parties vpon the knowledge of their variance. But (alas) his malice hath passed further, and hath beastly slain my brethren: but I swear

by the almighty God, that if he give me life, I wil take futch, and so cruell vengeaunce on him, as he shall be a Glasse to all his lyke, for punishment of a fault so horrible. Depart my frends, depart and get you home, dispose your watch and gard about the Castell, that the traiter do not escape: and assyre your felues that this your loue shall neuer be forgotten, and you shall haue of me not a Tirant as he maliciously hath protested, but rather futch a Lord, and better also, than hytherto ye haue me proued." If Conrade had not ben pressed with heauinesse, he had chaunted goodly Songes against the Treason of the Lieuetenaunt, and would haue accused his Brother of indiscretion, for trusting him, whose wyfe hee had abused, and wel did know that he espyed the same. But what? The businesse requyred other things than Words: and extreame folly it is to nippe the Dead with taunts, or with vayne words to abuse the absent, speciall where vtion and reuenge is easy, and the meanes manifest to chastise the temerity of futch, and to be acquitted of the wrong done vnto him that cannot do it hymselfe. Conrade then toke his way to Tuderto, where then remained the Lord Braccio, and thereof was Lord and Gouernour, and had also vnder his gouernement Perugia, and many other Cityes of the Romane Church, and who wyth the dignity of the great Constable of Naples, was also Prynce of Capua, to him the Trinicien Brother, all be sprent wyth Teares and transported wyth choller and grieve, came to demaunde succor for reuenge of the Lieuetenaunt's trespassse, saying: "For what assurance (my Lord) can Prynces and great Lordes hope henceforth, when their very seruaunts shall ryse, and by constraining their Maisters, make assay to vsurp their feigniories wherein they haue no title or interest? Is this a reuenge of wrong, in steede of one to kill twaine, and yet to wishe for the third to dispatch the World of our race? Is this to pursue his enimy, to seeke to catch hym in trappe, whych knoweth nothing of the quarell, and to make hym to suffer the payne? My two Brethren be dead, our Cofin Germaine the Duke is in pryon, I am heere comfortlesse, all sad and pensife before you, whome lykewyse this matter toucheth, although not so near as it doeth me, but yet with lyke dishonor. Let vs go (my Lorde) let vs goe I beseech you to visite our good hoste that so rudely in-

treateth his Ghests which come to vistite him, and let vs beare him a reward, that he may taste of our comming, let vs goe before hee faue himselfe, that with little trauayle and lesse harme to an other the ribauld may be punished, who by his example if he longer liue, may increase courage both in Seruaunts to disobey, and in Subiects to rebell, without conscience, agaynst their heads, and gouerners? It is a cafe of very great importaunce, and which ought to be followed with all rigor and cruelty. And he ought neuer to bee supported, comforted or fauored, which shall by any meanes attempt to reuolt or arme himselfe agaynst his Prince, or shall constraine him or hir that is his Soueraygne Lord, or Mistresse. Is not a Prynce constituted of GOD to be obeyed, loued, and cherished of his Subiects? Is it not in him to make and ordaine lawes, sutch as shalbe thought needfull and necessary for Common wealth? Ought not he then to be obeyed of his subiectes and vassals? Ought they then to teach the head, and commaund the chiefest Member of their body? I do remember a tale (my Lord) recited by Menenius Agrippa that wyse, and Notable Romayne, who going about to reconcile the commons with the Senate, alleaged a fit and conuenable example. In time past (quod he) when the partes of Mankinde were at variaunce, and euery member would be a Lord generally conspiring, grudging and alleaging how by their great trauayle, paynes, and carefull ministery, they prouided all furniture, and mayntenaunce for the belly, and that he like a sluggish Beast stode still, and enjoyed sutch pleasures as were geuen him, in this murmure and mutine, al they agreed that the hands shoulde not minister, the Mouth shoulde not feede, the Teeth shoulde not make it seruiceable, the Feete shoulde not trauayle, nor Heade deuise to get the same: and whylest euery of them did forsake their seruice and obedience, the belly grew so thin, and the Members so weake and feeble, as the whole body was brought to extreme decay, and ruine, whereby (sayd Agrippa) it appeareth that the seruice due vnto the Belly (as the chiefe portion of man) by the other Members is most necessary, the obeying and nurssing of whom doth infil force and vigor into the other parts through which we doe liue, and bee refreshed, and the same digested and dispearsed into the vaynes,

and vitall powers ingendreth mature and fine bloud, and mayntaineth the whole state of the body, in comely forme and order. By which trim comparison, applyed to ciuile warre was deflected and mollified the stout corage and attempts of the multitude. Euen so agreeing with Agrippa, if the Members grudge, and disobey against their chiefe, the state must grow to ruine. To be short, in certaine haps a Trayter may be chearished, and that hath falsified his first fayth: but treason and periury euermore be detested as vices execrable. In this deede neyther the thing, nor yet the doer hath any colour of excuse, the trespass and cause for which it is don being considered. Suffiseth it Sir, for so mutch as there is neyther time nor cause of further discourse, what neede we to decide the matter, whych of it selfe is euident? Beholde mee heere a poore Trinician Brother without brethren, ioylesse without a Fort at Nocera. On the other part consider the Duke of Camerino in great distresse and daunger, to passe that strait of death my Brethren did. Let vs goe (I pray you) to deliuer the Captiue, and by reuenging these offenses and murders, to settle my Citty in former State, and freedome, which the villayne goeth about to take from me, by encouraginge my Subiects to reuolt and enter armes, thereby to expel our house from the Title of the same." As Conrade spake these woords, and wyth great grauity, and constancy pronouncing fundry tokens of sorrow, the Conestable of Naples, wroth beyond measure for these vnpleasant newes, and full of grieve and choller against the trayterous Lieutenant, swore in the hearing of them all, that he would neuer rest one good sleepe vntill that quarell were auenged, and had quited the outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and the wrong which he felt in him for the imprisonment of the Duke of Camerino. So he concluded, and the Souldiours were assembled thorough out all the parts of the Conestable's Lands, vpon the ende of the weeke to march against the Fort of Nocera, the Cittizens whereof had layd diligent Scout, and watch for the escape of the Captayne, who without bashfulnesse determined with his men to defend the same and to proue fortune, making himselfe beleue that his quarell was good, and cause iust to withstand them that shoulde haue the heart to come to affayle him. The Constable in the mean time

sent a Trumpet to Nocera to summon the Captaine to surrender, and to tell the caufe of his reuolt, and at whose prouocation hee had committed so detestable a Treafon. The Captaine well assured and boldned in his Wyckedneffe, aunswere that he was not so well fortified to make a surrender so good cheape, and for so small a prycce to forgo his honor and reputation: and furthermore, that his wit was not so slender, but hee durft deuise and attempt futch a matter without the councel of any other, and that all the deedes and deuifes passed till that time, were of his owne inuention. And to be enen with the wrong done to his honor by the Lord Nicholas Trinicio, for the violation of his Wiue's Chasfity, he had committed the Murders (tolde to Braccio) beyng angry, that all the Tirannous race was not in his hand to spyll, to the end he mighte deliuier his Countrey, and put the Citizens in Liberty, albeit that fondly they had refused the same as vnworthy of futch a Benefite, and well deserued that the Tyrants shold taxe them at theyr pleasure, and make them also theyr common slaues and Drudges. The Trumpet warned hym also to render to hym the Duke, bicause he was guiltleſſe of the faſte, whych the Captayne regarded ſo little as he did the firſt demaundes, whych was the caufe (the Company being arriued at Nocera, and the Conſtable vnderſtandynge the litle accompte the Caſtell Gentleman made of his ſummons) that the battry the very day of theyr arriuall was laid and ſhotte againſt the place with futch thunder and dreadfull thumpes of Canon ſhot, as the hardieſt of the Mortpayes within, began to faint. But the corage and litle feare of theyr chyefe, retired theyr hearts into theyr bellyes. The breach being made againe, the Conſtable who feared to loſe the Duke in the Captaine's Fury, cauſed the Trumpet to ſummon them wythin to fall to Composition, that Bloudſhed might not firre theyr Souldioures to further cruelty. But ſo mutch gayned this ſecond warnyng as the firſt, for which caufe the nexte day after the aſſault was gyuen, where if the aſſaulte was valiant, the refiſtaunce was no leſſe than bolde and venturous. But what can Thirtie or Fortie Men doe agaynſte the Force of a whole Countrey, and where the Generall was one of the moſt valiaunte, and wifel Captaynes of hys tyme and who was accompanied with the floure of the Neapolitane

Fotemen. The assault continued four or fие Houres, but in the end the Dead payes not able to sustayne the force of the assay-lants, forsooke the Breache, and assayng to saue themselues, the Lieuetenaunt retired to the Kipe of the Fort, where his Wife continued prisoner, from the time that the two brethren were flaine. Whiles they without, ruffled in together in heapes amonges the defendautes, the Duke of Camerino, with his Men, found meanes to escape out of Pryson, and therewithal began furiously to chaste the ministers of the disloyal Captaine, which in little tyme were cut al to pieces. Conrade being within found the Captayn's Father, vpon whom he was reuenged, and killed him with his owne hands. And not content with that, caried into further rage, and fury, he flashed him into gobbets, and threwe them to the dogs. Truly a straunge maner of reuenge, if the Captain's cruelty had not attempted like inhumanity. To bee shorte, horrible it is to repeate the murders done in that sturre, and hurly burly. For they that were of the Captayne's part, and taken, receyued all the straungest and cruellest punishment that man could devise. And were it not that I haue a desire in nothing to beely the Author, and lesse will to leaue that which he had wrytten vpon the miserable end of those that were the ministers and seruaunts to the barbarous tirrany of the Captayne, I would passe no further, but conceale that which doth not deserue remembraunce, except to auoide the example, which is not straunge, the Cruelty of reuenging heart in the nature of Man, in al times growinge to futch audacity, as the torments which seeme incredyble, be lyable to credite as wel for those we reade in auncient Histories, as those we heare tell of by heare say, and chauncyng in our tyme. Hee that had the vpper hand of his Enimy, not content to kyll, but to eate with his rauenous teeth the heart disentraylde from his aduersary, was hee lesse furious than Conrade, by makinge Anatomy of the Captayn's Father? And he that thrust Galleazze Fogafe in to the mouth of a Canon, tying his Head vnto his Knees and causing him to be caried by the violent force of Gunpouder into the City from whence he came, to bribe and corrupt certayne of hys enemies army, did he shew himselfe to be more curteous than one of these? Leaue we a part those that be past,

to touch the miserable ende wherewith Conrade caused the last tribute of the Captain's souldyers to bee payd. Now amongs these some were tied to the Tayles of wilde Horses, and trayned ouer Hedges, and Bushes, and downe the stiepnes of high Rocks, some were haled in pieces, and afterwards burnt with great Martyrdome, some were deuyded and parted alive in four quarters, other fowed naked wythin an Oxe Hyde, and so buried in Earth, vp to the Chin, by whych torments they finished their Liues with fearful gronings. Will ye say that the Bull of Perillus, or Diomedes Horfes, were afflictions more cruell than these? I know not what ye cal cruelty, if these acts may beare the title of modesty. But all thys, proceeded of wrath and disdayne of eyther partes. The one dyfdayned that the seruaunt should be his head, and the other was offended, that his foueraygne Lord should affay to take that from him, which his duty commaunded him to keepe. Conrade toke in ill part the treason of the Captayn, who beyond measure was angry, that the Lord Nicholas had made him a brother of Vulcan's order, and regefred him in the booke of husbands, which know that they dare not speake. In summe, the one had right, and the other was not without some reason, and notwithstanding both surmounted the boundes of man's milde nature. The one ought to content hymselfe (as I haue sayd) for being reuenged on him that had offended him, and the other of the murder done, duringe the assault without shewing so bloudy tokens of cruelty and so apparent evidence of tiranny, vpon the ministers of the brutall and bloudy Captayne, who seeing his father put to death with futch Martirdome, and his men so straungely tormented, was vanquished with choller, dispayre and impacyence. And albeit the Captayne had no greate desire to hurt his Wyfe, yet was he surmounted with futch rage, as apprehending hir, and binding hir hands and feete, she styl crying him mercy, and crauing pardon for hir faultes at the hands of God and him, he threw hir downe from the highest Toure of the Kipe vpon the pauement of the Castle courte, not without teares and abashment of al, which saw that monstrous and dreadful fight, which the Souldiers viewing, they fired the Toure, and with fire and smoke forced the Captaine to come forth, and by lyke meanes

made him, his Brother and Chyldren to tread the daunce that his Wyfe before had don. Conrade by and by caused those bodies to be throwne forth for Foode to the Wolues, and other raueninge Beasts, and Byrdes liuing vpon the pray of Carrion, causing also his Brethren honourably to bee buryed, and the Gentlewoman that had borne the penaunce worthy for hir fault. Sutch was the end of the most myserable, and worst gouerned loue, that I thinke man hath euer red in wryting, and which doth clearely witnesse, that there is no pleasure so great but Fortune by chaunging and turning hir Wheele maketh a hundred times more bitter than desire of sutch ioy doth yelde delyght. And farre better it were (besides the offence done to God) neuer to cast Eye on Woman, than to bord or proue them, to rayse sutch Sclaunders and Facts which cannot be recounted but with the horrour of the Hearers, nor wrytten but to the great grieve of those that muse and study vpon the same: Notwithstanding for instruction of our life, both good and bad Examples bee introduced and offred to the view of ech degree, and state. To the end that Whoredome may bee auoyded, and bodily Pleasure eschued, as most Mortal and pernicious Plagues that doe infect as well the Body and Reputation of man, as the integrity of the Minde. Besides that ech man ought to possesse his own Vessel, and not to couet that is none of hys, vnseemely also it is to solicite the Neyghbor's Wyfe, to procure thereby the disiunction and defaite of the whole bond of mariage, which is a Treasure so deare and precious, and carieth so greate grieve to him that feeth it defaced, as our Lord (to declare the grauity of the Fact) maketh a comparison of his Wrath agaynst them which run after straunge Gods, and applyeth the honour due vnto him to others that doe not deserue the same, with the iust disdayne, and ryghtfull Choller of a Iealous Husbande, Fraught wyth despyght to see himselfe dispoyled of the Seasure, and Possession onely giuen to him, and not subiect to any other, whatsoever he be. Learne here also (O yee husbands) not to fly with so nimble Wing, as by your owne authority yee seeke reueng without fearing the follies and sclaunders that may infue. Your sorrow is iust, but it behoueth that reason doe guide your fantasies, and bridle your ouer sodayne passions, to the intent that yee come

not after to sing the doleful Song of repentaunce, like vnto this foolish man, who hauing done more than he ought, and not able to retire without his ouerthrow, threw himselfe into the bottom-leffe gulfe of perdition. And let vs all fixe fast in memory, that neuer vnruled rage, and wilful choller bringeth other benefit than the ruine of him that suffereth himselfe to runne headlonge into the same, and who thinketh that all that is naturall in vs, is also reasonable, as though Nature were so perfect a worckwoman, as in man's corruption she could make vs Aungels, or halfe Gods. Nature following the instinct of that which is naturall in vs, doth not greatly stray from perfection, but that is giuen to few, and those whom God doth loue and choose. And Vertue is so feldome founde, as it is almost impossible to imitate that perfection. And briefly to say, I will conclude with the Author of this present Hystory.

Angre is a fury short,
To him that can the same excell:
But it is no laughing sport
In whom that senfeleffe rage doth dwell.
That pang confoundeth ech man's wits
And shameth him with open shame,
His honour fades in frantike fits,
And blemisheth his good name.

THE THIRTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The horrible and cruell murder of Soltan Solyman, late the Emperor of the Turkes and father of Selym that now raigneth, done vpon his eldest Sonne Mytapha, by the procurement, and meanes of Rosa his mother in lawe, and by the speciall instigation of one of his noble men called Rustanus: where also is remembred the wilful death of one of his Sons named Giangir, for the grieve he conceiued to see Mytapha so miserably strangled.

TWENTY two yeares past or thereabouts I translated this present Hystory out of the Latine tongue. And for the rarenes of the Fact, and the disnaturall part of that late Furiose Enemy of God, and his Sonne Christ: I dedicated the same to the right honorable, my speciall good Lord, with al vertues, and nobility, fully accomlyshed, the Lord Cobbam Lorde Warden of the cinque Portes, by the name of Sir VVilliam Cobham Knyght. And bycause I would haue it continue in man's remembraunce thereby to renue the auncient detestation, which we haue, and our Progenitors had against that horrible Termagant, and Perfecutor of Christyans, I haue insinuated the same amongs the rest of these Nouels. For of one thing I dare make warrantife, that auncient Writers haue not remembred, nor old Poets reported a more notorious or horyble Tragedy or fact executed against nature, then that vnnaturall murder done by the sayd enemy of Christianity, the late Soltan Solyman, otherwyse called the great Turke. I remember the description of Nero's Parricide vpon his louynge Mother, of purpose to behold the place of his byrth. I call to memory also the wycked Murther of Orestes, on hys Mother Clytemnestra. I also consider the vnfatherly part of Tantalus, who wyth the flesh of his owne sonne Pelops, feasted the Gods. All which are not farre dyfferen from this pestiferous Fury, and may wyth the same, and the lyke bee comparable by any Man heeretofore committed. This Hellysh Champyon hysowne Sonne, of hysowne Seede, Naturally conceaued wythin hys mother's Wombe, vnnaturally in his owne prefence moste Myferably did kill. O pityfull case, But alas, voyde of pitty

to a pyttyleffe man. O cruell fact, but not ouer cruell to him that liued a cruell Man. What Beast be he neuer so woode, or Sauage, can suffer his Yonglings to take harme, mutch leffe to doe them hurte himselfe? What fierce Lyoneffe can infeste hir owne Whelpe, which with Naturall paines brought it into light? But what doe I stand vpon Lamentation of the case and leaue the brutenesse of this Madman far bruter then Lyons vnconsidered? The brutenesse of this fury so farre ecceedeth Beasts, as Reasonable passeth Vnreasonable. The fury of the Deuill, whom he serueth, so raged in his tirannous life, as loe, he flue his owne Sonne. The care of God, and Christe was so farre out of his Sighte as hee subuerted Nature. The libidonus lustes of this Lecherous Infidell, so surmounted the bounds of reason, as the fire thereof consumed his owne flesh. This Enemy of Christe was so bewytched as the dotage of his infidelity consented to murder. And as tiranny like a Lord possessed his Brayne in huntinge after the bloud of Christians, so Tiranny like an Enchaunter with the Sorcery of Feminine adulatian shed the bloud of his owne begotteu. Thus as tiranny was the Regent of his life most wicked, so Tiranny was the Plague of his owne generation. For as the Wryter of this Hystory reporteth, it was thoughte that the same was done by Diuyne Prouydence. And lyke as this vnhappy Father was a deadly Enemy vnto Chryst and hys Church, so this yonge Whelpe was no leffe a sheder of Christian Bloud. No doubt a very froward Impe, and a towarde Champion for the diuel's Theatre: and as it is sayd hereafter, so goodly a yong man in Stature and other externe qualities of the body, as Nature could not frame a better. So excellent, and couragious in Feates of armes as Bellona hirselfe could not proreate a lustier. This History in the Latin tongue is written by Nicholas Moffan a Burgonian borne, a man so well in the warfare of good learning (as it appeareth) as in the seruice of the warres well expert. Who being a Souldiour in Hercules warres (the old Champyon of Christendome, and Pagan Enimy, Charles the fifte) was sore wounded and taken Prysoner in Bulgaria, in the yeare of our Lord 1552, and continued Captiue till September, 1555, almost three yeares. Whose Misery, Trouble, Famine, Colde, and other Torments by him sustayned, during the sayd time

if it should bee declared, perhaps woulde seeme incredible. But when the Turke had kept him in miserable bandes two yeares, and saw he could not obtayne the Raunsome, whych he immeſu- rably requyred, at length fent him to the Castell of Strigon, where- for a certayne time he remayned hampered with double chaynes vpon his Necke, Handes, and Feete. And within sometime after hys comming thither he was made to toile in the day, like a com- mon flauue, to hew and carry Woode, keepe Horse, sweepe Houses, and futch other busines. Which Drudgery, he was glad to doe aſwell for exercyle of his Members, which with colde yrons were benommed, as also to get Breade to relieue his hunger. For when hee had done his ſtinte, his Maiftre gaue him Bread, Onions, Gar- licke, Cheefe, and futch other fare: and at Night he was fent agayne to Pryſon, where he was matched with a Mate, that for Debte was condempned to perpetual Pryſon, of whom he learned many things, aſwel of their Lawes, Religion, warlike Affayres, and other maners of the Turkes, as also of the order of this horrible Fact don by Solyman. And by the report of his ſayd Companion in pryſon, he digefted the ſame into the forme of this history. And after this man had payed hys Raunsome, and was fet at lyberty, he arriued into the partes of Chryſtedome. The Verity of whych is futch, as it is not onely credyble bycause thys Man dyd wryte it, who was three Yeares there reſiaunt, and in manner aforesaid, heard the truth thereof, but also is warranted, by ſundry Mar- chant Men, Trauellers into farre Countreyes, faythfully veriſing the ſame to bee true. And before I drawe to the dyscourse of the Story, I will fet downe ſome of the manners of Solyman's greateſt ſtates and fauorites, and the pryncipal offices and honors of that helliſh Monarchy. As Muſtapha, Machomet, Baiaſith, Selim, Gianger, Chruftam, and Hibrahim. This Hibrahim was ſo dearely beloued with the Emperour Solyman as he exercyſed the Office of Vefiri, whych is nexte to the Emperour, the chyefest in degree of honor. Who by increaſe of that Office, became more wealthy in Treaſure then Solyman himſelfe, whych when he per- ceyued, without any reſpect of the honorable office, or the honor of the party, neglecting in reſpect of richeſſe (according to the natural deſire of Auarice, wherewith the greedy Appetites of the

stocke are endued) all religion, honour, Parents, countrey, friends or amity, he caused in his own prefence, his head to be striken of, adding the treasures of the said Hibrahim to his owne Coafers, and placed one Rustanus to succeede in his office. Besides which honorable places ther be diuers degrees of honor, as Mutchty, which is of that honor with them as the chief bishop or Pope in other Countreies, and of sutch authority with the Emperour, that aswel in time of Peace, as also in Warres, he determineth vpon nothing without the counsel of Muchti. Bascha (which we commonly call VVascha) is the Lieuetenant of a Prouince. But somutch as all other offices and dignities, depend only vpon the Emperor, and are bestowed as he listeth, none of them having any thing proper that he may call his owne: the sayd Baschas in all Prouinces, euery three yeare are chaunged after the disposition of the Emperour, and continue no longer Gouernors, than the sayd terme, without his special decree, and commaundement. And this chaunge and feueral mutation, is done for two causes. First that notwithstanding the sayd Offices are bestowed by turnes, yet they which are most excellente in prowes of Armes, and Valiaunce, are best in fauour, and are placed in the most fertile Countreyes. But the maner in the disposition of the same Office is now degenerated, for where in tyme paste the same were bestowed vpon the best Captaynes and Souldyers, in these Days, are through Fauoure and Money, throughly corrupted. So that now amonges them all thynges for Money are venalia, ready to be folde, and yet the same vndeclared to the Emperour him selfe. The other cause, of the alteration and chaunge of the sayd Baschæ, and the Chyefest cause, as I haue learned is, least through theyr longe abode in the sayd Prouinces so to them assignd, by some incydent occasion they myght entre familiarilie wyth the Christians, and in succeſſe of tyme be conuerted. The Turkes haue also amonges them certayne Noble Men which in theyr Language they call Spahy, and it is the first degree of honour, but it hath no diſcent or succeſſion to the Posterity, and they only deferue the ttle thereof, whych in Warrelyke Affayres behauē them felues moſte Manfullly, and who at length are preferred to another degree of honour, and are called Subasche, which worde ſo farre as I can vnderſtande, may be referred to the Title of Baron. Next

to the same Subaschæ here is another called Begg. But here is meete to be knowne howe that woerde is taken amonges them two wayes, for generally all they which excell other in any promotion are called Beggi. That is to say Lordes or Maysters: but if it be meant singularly or properly, then it signifieth not simply a Captaigne (for they call a Captaine Aga) but also an Earle. And if the sayd Begg chaunce to be endued by the Emperour with the order of Knyghthode, then hee is called Sanggakbegg. And they likewise are accustomed to bee transposed from County to county, as the Baschæ are, and the same do not descend to the heires, but when the Earle is deade. And then both the promotion and county, are by the Emperour giuen to another. And hereby it appeareth that no man hath any thyng proper or his own, and therfore they cal themselues, Padiscabumcullari. That is to say, the Emperour's bondmen. Here also I ought to entreat of the manners of the Turkes in theyr Warres, and the sundry offices therein. In what forte they leuy, and muster their Souldiers, the order of their marching, the order in putting the same in array, and by what diligence they vse their Skouts, and Wardes, all which had bene necessary to haue bene spoken of, but that I might not be tedious. And yet of one thing for a conclusion I entend to speake of, which is of the Ianischari. The sayd Ianischari are the whole strength of the Turkes battell, who neuer obtayne victory, but the same is ascribed to their valiaunce. They bee very expert, and skilfull in the vse of small shot, and great Ordinaunce, and in that kinde of defence and munition, they chiefly excell. And as I haue red, the Turke hath continually in wages thirty m. of the sayd Ianischari. They haue aboue other many singuler Pryuiledges, in somutch as the name of a Ianischarus is in futch reuerence amongst them, that notwithstanding any offence, or crime, done by them worthy capitall death, they in no wise shalbe punished, except before the committing of the offence, they be deprived of their estate by their Captaynes. Thys Priuiledge also they haue aboue others, that vnlesse they lye in Campe, they bee neuer compelled to watch nor warde, without great necessary do force them. And for this they be hatefull and odious to other Souldiours. It is sayd, that all they be Christian men's children. And in those countreyes which he vanquisheth, he chooseth out the Boyes of

the same, sutch as he thinketh meete, and carrieth them away, and bringeth them vp in his owne trade, and lawes, with exercise of feates in armes, and being growen to ripe yeaeres, and man's state, they be allotted amongs the number of Ianischari. And thus mutch touching the maners, dignities, and offices of that Turkish broode: Now to the Hystory. Bee it knowne therefore, that Solyman had of a certayne bonde Woman this Mustapha, to whom from his Youth hee gaue in charge the Countrey of Amasia. Who with his Mother continually resiaunt in the sayd countrey, became so forwards in Feates of armes, as it was supposed of all men, that hee was gieuen vnto their countrey by some heauenly prouidence. This Mustapha, with his Mother being placed in the sayd Countrey, it chaunced that the Kynge his Father was beyonde measure wrapt with the beauty of another of his Concubins called Rosa, of whom hee begat foure sonnes, and one daughter. The eldest of the Sonnes was called Machomet, to whom the Prouince of Caramania was assignd. The second, Baiafith, who enioyed the countrey of Magnevia. The third called Selymus, to whom after the death of Machomet the eldest, the sayd Countrey of Caramania was appoincted. The fourth Iangir, whose surname, by reason hee was croke backed, notwithstanding his pregnant wit, was Gibbus. And the daughter he bestowed in mariage vpon Rustanus Bascha, who when Hibrahim was put to death, exercised the office of Vefiri as is aforesayd (which office we vfe to call the President of the Counsayle) and according to his natural disposition to couetousnesse, abusing the sayd office, altered and chaunged all maner of things belonging to the same. He diminished the Souldiours wages, being by them called Ianischari. He abated the stipends of the Captayns, whom they nominate Saniachi. Hee also feassed vpon the Prouinces yearely Taxes and Tributs. And herewith being not satisfied, he ordayned a stint vpon the charges of the king's houshold, wherby he fought, but to accumulate vnto himselfe, infinite treasures, gotten by deceiptfull extortion, through occasion whereof, he was supposed to be a faythfull, and diligent Seruaunte, and thereby greatly insinuated himselfe into the king's fauour, little regardinge the hatred and displeasure of others. In the meane time, this Rosa of whom mencion is made

before, percyuing hir selfe before others to be beloued of the Kinge, vnder the Cloake of devotion declared vnto Muchty (which is the chiefe Bishop of Machomet's religion) that she was affected with a Godly zeale to builde a Temple, and Hospitall for straungers, to the chiefe God, and honor of Machomet: but she was not minded to attempt the same without his aduice. And therefore shee asked whether the same would bee acceptable to God, and profitable for the health of her soule. Whereunto Muchty aunswered: that the worke to God was acceptable, although to hir soule it was nothing auailable. Adding further, that not onely all hir Substance was at the Kinge's disposition, but hir Life also, being a Bondwoman. And therefore that worke woulde be more profitable to the Kinge. With which aunswere the woman in hir mind dayly being troubled, became very peniffe, like one that was voyde of all comfort. The King being aduertised of hir sorrow very gently began to comfort hir, affirming that shortly he would finde futch meanes, as she should enioy the effect of hir desire. And forthwith manumised hir and made hir free, a writing and instrument made in that behalfe, according to their custome, to the intent she might not be at commaundement any more to be yoked in bondage. Hauinge in this forte obtayned this fauoure, the sayd Rosa, with a great Masse of Money determined to proceede in hir entended purpose. In the meane season, the Kyng wythout measure being incensed with the desire of the sayd Rosa, as is aforesayd, sent for hir by a messenger, willing hir to repayre to the Court. But the crafty Woman, vnskilful of no pollicy, returned the Messenger with subtile aunswere, which was, that he should admonish the King hir Lord and Soueraygne, to call to his remembraunce aswell the lawe of honesty, as also the precepts of his owne lawes, and to remembre she was no more a Bondwoman and yet she could not deny but hir life remained at the disposition of his maiesty, but touching Carnall copulation to be had agayne with his person, that could in no wise be done, without committing of finne most heynous. And to the intent he should not thinke the same to be fayned or deuised of hir selfe, she referred it to the iudgement of Muchty. Which aunswere of repulse, so excited the inflamed affections of the Kyng, as setting all

other busynesse a part, he caused the Muchty to be sent for. And giuing him liberty to aunswere, he demanded whether his Bondwomen being once manumisfed, could not be knownen carnally without violation of the lawes? Whereunto Muchty aunswered: that in no wife it was lawfull, vnlesse before he shold with hir contract matrimony. The difficulty of which Lawe in sutch forte augmented the Kyng's desires, as being beyond measure blinded with Concupiscence, at length agreed to the marriage of the sayd manumyfed woman, and after the Nuptiall writinges according to the custome were ratified, and that he had giuen vnto hir for a Dowry 5000 Soltan Ducats, the marriage was concluded, not without great admiration of all men, especially for that it was done contrary to the vse of the Ottomane Ligneage. For to eschew Society in gouernment, they marry no free or lawfull Wyues, but in their steades to satisfy theirown pleasures, and libidinous Appetites (wherein most vily, and filthely aboue any other Nation they chiefly excell) they chose out of diuers Regions of the World the most Beautifull, and fayrest Wenches, whom after a Kyngly forte very honourably they bring vp in a place of their Courte, which they call Sarai: and instruct them in honest, and ciuile maners, with whom also they vse to accompany by turnes, as theirown pleasure most lyketh. But if any of them do conceyue, and bring forth childe, then the aboue all other is honoured, and had in reuerence, and is called the Soltanes most worthy. And sutch after they haue brought forth childe, are bestowed in mariage vpon the Pieres and Nobility, called Baschæ, and Sangacæ. But now to retorne to our purpose. This manumisfed Woman being aduaunced through Fortune's benefit, was esteemed for the chiefe Lady of Afia, not without great happiness succeeding in al hir assayres. And for the satisfying of hir ambitious entents, there wanted but only a meane and occasion, that after the death of Solyman, one of hir own children might obtayne the Empire. Where vnto the generofity and good behauour of Mustapha was a great hinderaunce, who in deede was a yong man of great magnanimity, and of Wit most excellent, whose Stomach was no lesse couragious, than he was manly in person, and force. For which qualities he was meruaylously beloued of the Souldiours

and Men of warre, and for his wisedome and iustice very acceptable to the people. All which things this subtile woman considering, she priuely vsed the counsayle of Rustanus for the better accomplishing of hir purpose, knowing that he would rather seeke th'aduauncement of his kinsman and the brother of his owne Wyfe as reason was, then the preferment of Mustapha, with whom she certaynely knew that Rustanus was in displeasure. For in the beginning, as he sought meanes to extenuate the liuings of all other (as is aforesayd) so also he went about (but in vayne) to plucke somewhat from Mustapha. Whereby he thought that if he should once obtayne the gouernment, he would skarce forget sutch an iniury, and thereby not only in hazarde of his Office, and dignity, but also in daunger of losse of his heade. All which thinges, this wicked woman pondering in hir vngratiouse Stomacke went about to infert into the King's mynde, no small suspitions of Mustapha, saying that he was ambitione and bolde vpon the Fauour and good wil of all men (wherewith in deede he was greatly endued) and reioyfing in his force, let no other thing to be expected, then oportunitie of time to aspire to the Kingdome, and to attempt the slaughter of his Father. And for the better cloaking of the matter, she caused Rustanus at conuenient tyme, more at large to amplifie and set forwards hir mallice, who alwayes had in charge all principall and weyghty affayres. In whom also was no lacke of matter to accelerate the accusation and death of the yong man. Moreouer to sutch as were appoynted to the administration of the countrey of Syria, he priuely declared, that Mustapha was greatly suspected of his Father, commaunding euery of them dilligently to take heede to his estate, and of all sutch things as they eyther saw or perceyued in him, with all expedition to fend aduertisement, affirming that the more spightfully they wrote of him, the more acceptable it should be to the Kinge. Wherefore diuers times Rustanus being certified of the kingly Estimation, Magnanimity, Wysedome, and Fortitude of Mustapha, and of his beneuolence and liberality towards all men, wherewith he greatly conciled their fauour, and how the ardent desires of the People, were inclined to hys election: he therefore durst not take vppon him to be the first that should sow the seede of that wicked conspiracy, but deliuering his Letters to the

vngratiouſe Woman, left the rest to the deuise of his vnhappy brayne: But Rosa espyng oportunity of time to ſucceede hir vnhappy defyre, ceaſed not to corrupt the Kyng's mynde, ſometimes with promeſe of the vſe of other Women, and ſometimes with ſundry other adulations. So that if mention was made of Muſtapha at any time, ſhe woule take ſutche occaſion to open the Letters, as might ferue moſt apt for hir purpose. And ſhe was not deceyued of hir expeſtation. For taking a conuenient time not without teareſ (which Women neuer want in cloaked matter) ſhe admoniſhed the Kinge of the pearill wherein he ſtoode, remebring amoungs other thinges, how his Father Selymus, by ſutche meaneſ depryued his owne Father both from his Kingdome, and Life, iſtantly requiringe him by that example to beware. But theſe Argumenſ of ſuſpition, at the firſt brunt ſeemed not probable to the Kyng, and therefore by this meaneſ the deuiliſhe Woman could little preuayle, which when hir eniuious Stomacke perceyued, ſhe began to direct hir miſchieuous mynde to other deuifeſ, ſeekyng meaneſ with poyſon to deſtroy the yonge man. And there wanted not alſo, gracieleſſe perſons, prompt and ready to acco‐pliſh that miſchieuous fact, had not diuine prouidence refiſted the fame. For Rosa ſent vnto Muſtapha a ſute of Apparell in the name of his Father, which by marueylous craft was enuenimed with Poyſon. But Muſtapha in no wyſe would weare the ſayd apparell before one of his ſlaues had affayed the fame, whereby he preuented the Miſchiefe of his vngratiouſe Stepmother, opening to all men the deceipt of the poyſon. And yet this pestilent Woman ceaſed not to attempt other Enterprifes. She went about to pur‐chafe vnto hir the good will and familiarity of the Kyng in ſutche ſort as the like neuer obtayned in the Courte of Ottoman, (for the vſed certayne Sorceries through the helpe of a Woman a Jewe borne, which was a famous Enchauntrefſe, to wyn the loue of the Kyng, and thereby perſwaded hir ſelfe to procure greater things at his hands) in ſo much as ſhe obtayned that hir Children by courſe ſhould be refiant in their Father's Courte, that by theyr con‐tinuall preſence and affiduall flattering, they might get the loue of their Father. So that if Muſtapha did at any time come to the Court, by that meane ſhe might haue a better meaneſ to rid him of his life, if not, to tary a time, wherein he ſhould be diſpatched

by the help of others. But Mustapha not repayring to the Courte (for the Kyng's chyldren do not vse to go out of their Countreys affigned vnto them, without their Father's knowledge, nor to repaire to Constantinople with any number of men of Warre, to receyue their Inheritance till their Father be deade) she deuised another mischiefe. For enioying hir former request, she recouered another, also hauing brought to passe that not onely in the Citty, but also in the countrey, hir children should attend vpon theyr Father. Yea, and Giangir the crokebacked shoule alwayes attend on his father in his Warres. But the Stepmother's deuise for certayne yeares hanging as it were in ballance, at length Fortune throughly fauoured hir wicked endeouours. For the Bascha which had the protection of Mustapha, and the gouernment of the Province of Amasia, (For euery one of the Kyng's chyldren haue one Bascha, that is to say a Liutenaunt, which doe aunswere the people according to the lawes and gieue orders for the administration of the Warres, and also euery one of them haue a learned Man to Instruct them in good dyscipline, and Pryncely qualities) the sayd Bascha I say deuised Letters wherein was contayned a certayne treatise of Marriage, betwene Mustapha and the Kyng's Daughter of Persia, and how he had referred the matter to the Ministers of the Temple, to the intent that if it had not good succeſſe, he should be free from all suspition, and sent the same Letters to Rustanus who greatly reioyed for that he hoped to bring his defyred purpose to good effect. And fearing the matter no longer, incontinently he vttered the same to Rosa, who both together, forthwith went into the Pallace, and discouered the whole matter to the King. And to the intent they might throughly incense the Kyng's mynde with suspicions, that before was doubtfull, and deliberatiue in the matter, to put him out of all doubt, they affyrm'd that Mustapha like an ambitious man, sought meanes to conspyre his death being incensed like a Madman to the gouernment of his large Empyre, contrary to nature, and Law diuine. And to the intent better credit might be gieuen to their subtile Suggestions, they alleaged the Treaty of Marriage betwene Mustapha and the Kyng of Persia, the deadly and auncient enimy of the Ottoman Ligneage. For respect whereof, he ought diligently to take heede

least by conioyning the power of the Persians with the Sangachi, and Ianischari, which are the Captayns, and Souldiours, whose good willes he had with his lyberality already tyed to his fauour, in short time, would go about to deprive him of his Kyngdome and Lyfe. With these accusations and sutch lyke they had so farre sturred the king, as he himselfe fought the Death of his owne Sonne, in manner as foloweth. Therefore in the yere of our Lord 1552, he caused to be published with al expedition throughout his provinces, that the Persians had made their vauntes how they woulde inuade the Countrey of Syria, win the Cityes there, and carry away the Captiues, and also would destroy euery place with fier and Sword, in sutch sort as no man should withstand them. Wherefore to prouide against the sayd proude and haultie Bragges, hee was forced to send Rustanus thytherwith an Armie. The Souldiours being leuied, hee prvyly commaunded Rustanus in as secret manner as hee could and without any Tumulte to lay handes vpon Mustapha, and to bryng hym bound to Canstantinople. But if he could not conueniently bryng that to passe, then to dispatch hym of hys Lyfe by sutch meanes as he could. Rustanus receyuyng thys wycked and cruell Commaundement, marched towards Syria wyth a power. Wher when he arryued Mustapha, hauing knowledge thereof setting all other businesse a parte, beying accompanied with the Lustyest and best appoynted Men of Warre in al Turkey to the Numbre of seuen Thousande, hee directed his Iorney also towards Syria. Whereof when Rustanus had vnderstandinge, and perceyued hee could not well accomplysh the wycked desire of the Kyng, immedately retourned backe agayne to Canstantinople in sutch haste that hee durste not abyde the fight of the Dufte rered into the Ayre by Mustaphae's Horse Men, and mutch lesse hys commyng. When the Souldyers were retyred Rustanus declared to all Men that the Countrey was in good quyet, and pryuely repayred to the Kynge, and vttered to hym the cause of hys retourne, addynge further, that as farre as hee could see by manyfeste Sygnes, and Coniectures, the good Wylles of all the Armye were inclyned to Mustapha, and for that cause in so daungerous an Enterpryse, hee durste not aduenture with open Warres, but lefte all to the confideration of hys Maiesy. This

reporte bred to the cruell Father (who nothyng degenerated from the Naturall Tiranny of hys Aunceftors) greater Suspicions: for reuengement whereof he moft wickedly toke further aduife. The yeare folowyng he commaunded an huge Army to be leuied once againe makyng Proclamation that the Perfians with a greater Power would inuade Syria, and therefore thought it mete that he himself for the Common fauegarde of them all, ought personally to repayre thyther with a power to withstande the indeuors of his Ennemis. The Army being assembed, and al furnitures prouyded in that behalfe, they marched forwardes, and within fewe dayes after the cruell Father folowed. Who beyng come into Syria, addreſſed a meſſenger to Mustapha, to commaund him forthwith to repayre vnto him, then being encamped at Alepes. And yet Solymane could not keepe ſecret the mortall hatred he bare to hys Sonne from others, althoſe he employed diligent care for that purpoſe, but that the knowledge thereof came to the Eares of one of the Baschæ, and others of Honour. Emonges whome Achmet Bascha pruily ſent Woerde to Mustapha, to the intent he myght take the better heede to hymſelfe. And it ſeemed not without Wonder to Mustapha, that his Father, wythout neceſſary caufe, ſhoulde arryue in thoſe partes wyth ſo great a Number. Who notwithstanding, knowing hymſelfe innocente, althoſe in extreame forrow and penſifenes of mynd determyned to obey hys Father's Commaundement althoſe he ſhoulde ſtand in Daunger of hys Lyfe. For hee eſteemed it a more honest and laudable part to incurre the Peryll of death in Obedience to hys Father, than to lyue in contumelye by diſobedience. Therefore in that great anxietye and care of Mynde, debatyng many thinges wyth hymſelfe: At length he demaunded of a learned Man whych contynually was conuersaunt wyth hym in his Houſe (as is aforesayde,) whether the Empyre of the whole Worlde or a vertuous Lyfe ought rather to be wyſhed for. To whom this Learned Man moft Godly aunſwered. That hee which diligenty weyed the Gouernement of this Worlde, ſhall perceiue no other Felycitiye therein then a vayne and fooliſh apparence of goodneſſe. "For there is nothyng" (quod he) "more frayle or vnsure then the Worlde's proſperity. And it bryngeth none other Fruictſ but Feare,

sorrow, troubles, suspicions, murders, Wickednesse, vnrightcousnes, spoyle, Pouerty, Captiuity, and futch lyke whych to a man that affe~~teth~~ a blessed Lyfe, are in no wyse to be wyshed for. For whose sake who so list to enioy them, leaseth the happines of that Lyfe. But to whome it is gyuen from aboue to way and consider the fraylyte and shortnes of thys state (which the Common People deemeth to be a Lyfe) and to refist the vanityes of the World, at length to embrace vertue, to them truely in heauen there is a Place assigned and prepared of the highest God, where hee shall inherite perpetuall Ioyes, and Felicity of the Lyfe to come.” Wyth whych aunswer Mustapha beyng somwhat prycked in conscience wonderfully was satisfied, as being tolde of him which seemed by a certaine Prophecy to pronoosticate his end. And tarrying vpon no longer disputation, immedyately dyrected his Journey towards his cruell Father. And vsing that expedition he could, arriued at the place where his Father encamped, and not farre from the same he pitched his pauilion. But this expedite arriuall of Mustapha did inculcat a greater suspiccion in the wycked Father. And Rustanus was not behynde wyth lyes, and other subtil informacions to set forwardes the same. And after he had called together the common Souldiours and the chiefe men of Warre in the Army, hee fente them to meeete wyth Mustapha, who without any tarrying most readily obeyed his commaundement, to put themselues in readines. In the mean time this crafty Verlet, shewing by outward countenance the hid enuy that lay secrete in his heart, forthwith repaired into the Kynge’s Pauilion, and without shame or honesty told the King, howe almost euery one of the principall Souldiours of their owne accorde went to meeete Mustapha. Then the King being troubled in mind, went forth of his tent, and persuaded with himself that Rustanus Wordes were true. Now Mustapha lacked not sondry tokens of his vnhappy fate: For not thre daies before he should take his iorney about the breake of day in the morning being in slepe, he dreamed that he saw Machomet clad in gorgious apparel, to take him by the hand, and lead him into a most pleasant place beutified with sondry turrets and sumptuous buildinge hauing in it a most delectable gardein, who shewing hym al those things with his finger, spake these

wordes: "Here" (quod he) "doe they rest for euer, which in the World haue lyued a Godly and iust Life, and haue bene Aduauncers of Law and Iustice, and contempners of vice." And turning his face to the other syde, he saw two swifte and broad Riuers, the one of them boiled more blacke then Pitch. And in the sayd Riuers many were drowned, whereof some appeared aboue Water crying with horrible voices, Mercy, Mercy. "And there" (quod he) "are tormented all futch, which in the World most wyckedly haue committed Mischief." And the chiefe of them he sawyd were Prynches, Kinges, Emperours, and other great Men. With that Mustapha awaked and callyng the saied learned Man vnto him, vttered his dreame. And pausyng a lyttle whyle (for the superstitious Machometistes attribute mutch Credite to dotage of dreames) being ful of sorrow and pensifnesse, at length answered That the vission was very dreadful, for that it pronoosticated extreame peril of his life. Therefore he required him to haue diligent respect thereunto. But Mustapha beyng of great valiaunce and fortitude, hauing no regard to the aunswyer aforesaid, couragiously replied with these wordes: "Shall I suffer my self to be vanquished with vaine and childif feare? Nay I wil rather take a good heart, and make hast to my Father. For I am assured that alwayes from time to time I haue honored his maiesy accordingy to my duety, in so mutch as neyther Fote trauelled, nor Eye looked, mutch lesse heart thought agaynst his will to defyre or couet to raigne, except it had pleased the highe God to haue called hys Maiesy from thys Lyfe to a better. And besydes that my Mynde was neuer bente after hys Death to beare rule, excepte Generall Electyon of all the Army, to the intent I myghte entre the Imperiall Seate wythout slaughter, Bloudshed, or any other cruell fact, and thereby preserue the friendship of my Brethren inuiolat, and free from any spot of hatred. For I alwayes determinyd, and chose rather (fince my Father's pleasure is so) to end my Life like an obedyent Child, than continually to raigne, and be counted of al men, obstinate and disobedient, especilly of mine enimies." When he had spoken those wordes, he made hast to his father. And at his arrial to the Campe, so sone as he had pitched his Tent he apparelled himself al in white, and putting certain letters into his

bosome, which the Turkes vse to do, when they go to any place (for in supersticions they vse maruaillous dotage) he proceded towards his father, entending wyth reuerence (as the manner is) to kisse his hand. But when hee was come to the entry of the tent, he remembred himself of his Dagger which he wore about him, and therefore vngirding himself he put it of for auoiding of al suspicione. Which don, when he was entred the Tent, he was very curteously (with futch reuerence as behoued) welcomed of his father's Eunuches. And when he saw no man else, but the seat royal, where his father was wont to sitte readye furnished, with a sorrowful heart stode stil, and at length demaunded where his Father was. Who answered that forthwith hee would come in presence. In the meane season he saw seuen dombe men (which the Turke vseth as Instruments to kepe his secrets, and priuily to do futch murthers as he commaundeth) and therewith immedietly was wonderfully mased saying: "Beholde my present Death." And therewith stepped aside to auoide them, but it was in vaine, For being apprehended of the Eunuches and garde, was by force drawen to the place appointed for him to loose hys Lyfe, and sodainly the dombe Men fastened a Bowstryng about his Necke. But Mustapha, some what striuing, requyred to speake but two Wordes with his Father. Which when the wicked parricide his Father hearde, beholding the Cruell Spectacle on the other side of the Tente, rebuked the dombe Men, saying: "Wil you neuer execute my Commaundement, and doe as I bid you? Wyll you not kyll the Traitor, which these ten years space would not suffer me to slepe one quyet Night?" Who when they harde him speake thosse cruell Woordes, the Eunuches and dombe Men threw him prostrate vpon the ground, and cording the string with a double knot most pitifully strangled him. Which wycked and cruell facte being done, the Bascha that was Lieuetenaunt of Amasia was also apprehended by the Kynge's Commaundement, and likewyse beheaded in hys owne Presence. This Facte also commytted, he caused to be called before hym Gianger the Crokebacke, who was Ignoraunte of that was done, and Iestynge wyth hym as though hee had done a thyng worthie commendation, bad him to go and meeete his Brother Mustapha: who with a ioyful cheere made haft to meeete him.

But when he came to the place and saw his unfortunate Brother ly strangled and dead vpon the earth, it is impossible to tell with what sorrow he was affected. And he was scafce come to the place, but his wicked Father sent Messengers after him, to tell him that the Kyng had giuen him all Mustapha, his Treasures, Horfemen, Bondmen, Pauilions, Apparell : Yea, and moreouer the Prouince of Amasia. But Giangir conceyuing extreme sorrow for the cruell murder of his deere brother, with lamentable teares spake these words. "Oh cruell and wicked Dogge : yea, and if I may so call my father, Oh Traytor most pestilent, do thou enjoy Mustapha, his Treasures, his Horses, Furnitures, and the sayd Countrey to. Is thy heart so vnnaturall, cruell, and wicked, to kill a yongue man so notable as Mustapha was, so good a Warriour, and so worthy a Gentleman as the Ottoman house neuer had or shall haue the like, without any respect of Humanity or Zeale naturall ? By Saynt Mary I neede to take heede least hereafter in like maner thou as impudently do triumph of my death, being but a crokebacke and deformed man." When hee had spoken theese wordes, plucking out his Dagger, he flew himselfe. Whereof when the Emperor had aduertisement, he conceyued inspeakable sorrow. But for al that, his sorrowfull heart vanquished not his couetouse minde. For he commaunded all Mustaphe's Treasure, and other Furnitures to bee brought into his Tent. And the Souldiours thincking the same should be gieuen amongs them made as mutch haste to dispatche his commaundement. In the meane tyme Mustaphe's Souldiours (not knowing what was become of their Mayster) seeing sutch a number runne in heapes without order came forth of their Camp to withstande their foolishe tumult, who very manfully, not without mutch slaughter withstoode the same. And when the Fame of that Tragicall tumult was bruted amongs the King's souldiers, (who perceyuing the same more and more to waxe hot,) they went forth to succour their fellowes, but the Onset being gieuen on all fides, the fight on both parts was so fierce, as in short space there were slayne very neere the number of two thousande men besides the hurt and wounded, whereof the number was greater. Howbeit this Broyle had not bene thus ended, had not Achmat Bafcha, a graue and wise man, and for his experementes in the Warres of great auuthority amongs the

souldiers driuen them back, and repreffed their fury. Who turning himself towards Mustaphe's souldiers with fmailing countenaunce and milde words appeasing their furious stomacks spake these wordes : " Why my deere brethren and freends wil yee now degenerate from your olde accustomed wisedome, sufficiently tried in you these many yeares past, and will now resist the commaundement of the great Soltan the lord and soueraigne of vs all ? I cannot chuse (as God shal help me) but meruayle what should mooue you whom hitherto I haue proued to be so notable and valiant men, and in this ciuile conflict, you should bende your force vpon your own frends, and raise vp futch a spectacle to the Ottoman enemy, against whom heretofore you haue very prosperously and manfully fought, and therewith by mutuall slaughter to make them reioyse whom heretofore with the like, you haue made heauy and penfive. Therefore my fellowes as you tender your own valiaunce and Magnanimity, take heede, that by your own folly you do not lese the estimation of your wonted fortitude and wisedome, wherein hitherto you haue excelled all men. And refreue your force, which you now more than inough haue vfed amongs your owne Fellowes till you come against your Enemies, where you shall haue a more laudable, and better occasion to vse it." With these woordes and the like spoken by Achamat Basca, the Soulidiours were somewhate appeased, and all thinges were franckely suffered to bee carried out of Mustapha hys Pavylion to the Kynge's. But when the death of Mustapha came to the knowledge of the Ianischari, and the rest of the Army, forthwith began another sedition. And after the Trumpets had blowen the onset, there was futch a Tumult and styrre amongs the Soulidiours, mixte wyth sundry Lamentations, and Teares, that like Madmen with great violence, they ran into the Courte, with theyr Swords naked in theyr hands ready bent to strike. And this renued and sudden styrre so terrified the Knyg, that hee wiste not what to do who for all the dampes would needes haue fled. But being perfwaded of his Counsellours to tarry, hauing throughe Necessity, gotten occasion to attempt that whych in the tyme of hys most security he durst scarce haue enterpryfed, went forth, and with sterne Countenaunce, spake to hys Souldyers in this manner. " What rumors, what tumultes, and what mad partes are these, wherewith

so proudly in this sort ye disquiet me? What meane these enflamed countenances? What signify these haulty gestures, these proude and angry lokes? Doe you not remembre that I am your King that hath Power and Authority to gourne and rule you? Are you determinyd in this sort to spot your Auncyent and inuincible valiaunce, and the notable Warrefare of your predeces-sours, with the bloud of your Emperour?" And while the King was speaking these Words, the souldiers boldly answered, how they confessed him to be the same, whome many yeares ago they chose to be their Kinge, and for that hee alleaged how they had with their good seruice in the Warres acquired vnto him many great conquests and had diligently kepte the same: all that they did of purpose that he should vse towards them againe a godly Authority and iust Gouvernment, and not vnauidesly should lay his bloody handes vppon euery iuste Man, and so to staine and defile himselfe with the Bloud of Innocents. And againe, where he laide to their charge, that they were issued from their Cabanes armed with Weapon, they affirmed the same to be done in a iust quarell, euen to reuenge the slaughter of innocent Mustapha, and for that they ought not to haue futch a Kynge as should worke his anger vppon them that had not deserued it. Further they required that they might cleare themselues openly of the offence of Treafon, whereof falsly they were accused by Mustapha, his Enimies, and to haue their accuser to be brought forth in open presence. And fayde more that before he personally did appeare before the Iudgement Seat Face to Face to giue euidence, *sub talionis paena*, accordinge to the Law, they would not vnarne nor yet disasemble themselues. [And whiles these things were debated betwene the emperor and the souldiers, the cruelty of the fact, so moued] all men to teares, that the Kyng him selfe seemed to take great repentaunce for his horrible deede, and promyzed the Souldiours that they should haue their requests, and went about with fayre perswafions to mittigate (as much as lay in him) their furious stomakes. Howbeit the Souldiours gaue diligent heede to their watch and warde euery man in his place appoynted, that the king might not secretly conuey himselfe away, and so deceyue theym of his promis ses, and the expectation of their requests. In

the meane time the Kyng depriued Rustanus of all his offices, and promotions, and tooke away from him the priuy Signet whereof he had the keeping, and deliuered it to Achmat Bascha. Rustanus amased with the terror and feare of the Souldiours, thinking himselfe scarce in good security amongs his owne men, secretly conueyed himselfe to Achmat Bascha his Paulyon, and asked counsell of him what was best to be done in so doubtfull, and daungerous a case. Who aduised him therein to haue the kyng's aduise, and as he commaunded him so in any wyse to doe. Which counsayle marueylously satisfied the mynde of Rustanus. And without any longer delay by certaine Messengers which were his faythfull, and familiere Freends required the King's aduise. Whereunto the King aunswere that forthwith without longer tariaunce he should auoyde his syght, and absent himselfe from his Campe. Who replied that without Money and other furnitures, he could not conueniently execute hys commaundement. But the King had hym to do what hee list, for he woulde in no wise gieue hym leaue to haue any longer time or space to deliberate the matter. At length Rustanus without further stay, as guilty of his cursed deuises, accompanied with eyght of his trustiest Frends directed his Iorney to Constantinople, and vsing mutch expedition (as feare in fearefull matters putteth spurres to the horse) came to Constantinople: and there with Rosa and other the Conspiratours expected the euents of Fortune not without daunger of their liues. Moreouer it was sayd that Solyman, whose Conscience bewrayed the beastlynes of his abhominable facte, being pricked with a superstitious repentance, determined to trauel on pilgrimage to Mecha, and proceeding in his voyage, he was driuen by meanes of the Persians force to go to Hierusalem there to offer sacrifice for the death of his Sonne, which they call Corba. But now to conclude, and somewhat to speake of Mustapha or rather by way of admonition this one thing to say of him, that the sayde Mustapha was so acceptable and well beloued of all men for his warlike experience, and for his redineffe to sheade Christian bloud, that they supposed the like would neuer be in the Ottoman house more towards to enlarge, and amplyfie their Empyre, or promyfie greater things for the perfourmance thereof. In so mutch as

then they dispayred so of their Enterpris, as this Prouerbe rose vp amongs them, Gietti Soltan Mustapha, which signifieth an vtter dispayre in thinges which they thought before to goe about. Therefore we haue good cause to reioyce for the death of thys cruell enimy that should haue raygned, and to thinck the slaughter of him not to be done without God's speciall prouidence, who in this forte hath prouided for vs. And at length to be wise, and abstayne from ciuile Warre and diffencions. And with common Force to set vpon this wicked Tarmegant, confidering that he is not only a generall Ennimy to our Countrey and Lyfe, but also to our Soules. Which thing if we do, it will not be so hard a matter to withstand the force of this enemy of Christendome, as if we doe not, it wyll be daungerous through our continuall discorde to gieue him occasion to inuade the rest of Europe, and so with his tiranny bring the same to vtter destruction, which God that is omnipotent forbid, who bring vs to vnity through his Sonne Iesus Christe,

Amen.

THE THIRTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The great curteſie of the Kyng of Marocco, (a City in Barbarie) toward a poore Fijherman, one of his Subiects, that had lodged the Kyng, being ſtrayed from his Company in hunting.

FOR somutch as the more than beastly cruelty recounted in the former Hystory, doth yelde ſome ſowre taste to the minds of thoſe that be curteous, gentle and well conditioned by nature, and as the Stomacke of him that dayly vieth one kinde of meate, be it neuer ſo delicate and daynty, doth at length lothe, and diſdayne the ſame, and vtterly refuſeth it: I now chaunge the Diet, leauing muſters, ſlaughters, diſpayres, and tragicall accidents, and turne my ſtyle to a more pleafaunt thing, that may ſo well ferue for inſtruction of the noble to follow vertue, as that which I haue already written, may riſe to their profit, warely to take heede they fal not into ſutche deformed and filthy faults, as the name and prayſe of man be defaced, and his reputation decayed: if then the contraries be knowne by that which is of diuers natures, the villany of great cruelty ſhalbe conuerted into the gentlenesse of milde curteſie, and rigor ſhalbe condeſempned, when with ſweeteneſſe and generofity, the noble ſhall affaye to wyn the heart, feruice, and affeſted deuotion of the baſeſt forte: So the greatneſſe and nobility of man placed in dignity, and who hath puiaunce ouer other, confiſteth not to ſhew himſelfe hard, and terrible, for that is the manner of Tyrants, bicaufe he that is feared, is conſequently hated, euyll beloued, and in the ende forſaken, of the whole World, which hath bene the cauſe that in times paſt Prynces aſpiring to great Conqueſts, haue made their way more eaſie by gentlenesse and Curteſie, than by fury of armes, ſtabliſhing the foundations of their dominions more firme and durable by thoſe meanes, than they which by rigor and cruelty haue facked townes, ouerthrowne Cities, depopulated Prouinces, and fatted Landes with the bodies of thoſe, whoſe liues they haue depriued by dent of ſword, fith the gouernement and authority ouer other, caryeth greater ſubiection, than puiffance. Where-

fore Antigonus, one of the successors of great Alexander (that made all the Earth to tremble vpon the recitall of hys name) seeing that hys Sonne behaued himselfe arrogantly, and wythout modesty to one of hys Subiects, reproued and checked hym, and amongs many wordes of chaftisement and admonition, sayd vnto him: "Knowest thou not my Sonne, that the estate of a Kyng is a noble and honourable feruitude?" Royall wordes (in deede) and meete for a Kyng: For albeit that eche man doth reuerence to a Kyng, and that he be honoured, and obeyed of all, yet is hee for all that, the Seruaunt, and publike Mynister, who ought no leffe to defend hys Subiect, than the Subiect to do him honour and Homage. And the more the Prynce doth humble himselfe, the greater increase hath his glory, and the more wonderfull he is to euery Wyght. What aduaunced the Glory of Iulius Cæsar, who first depressed the Senatorie State of gouernment at Rome? Where his Victories atchieued ouer the Galles and Britons, and afterwardes ouer Rome it selfe, when he had vanquished Pompee? All those serued his tourne, but his greatest fame rose of his Clemency and Curtefie: By the whych Vertues hee shewed himselfe to be gentle, and fauorable euen to thosse, whom hee knewe not to loue him, otherwise than if hee had beene their mortall Enimy. His Successors as Augustus, Vespasianus, Titus, Marcus Aurelius, and Flavius were worthily noted for clemency: Notwithstanding I see not one drawe neere to the great Courage, and Gentlenesse, ioyned wyth the singuler Curtefie of Dom Roderigo Viuario the Spanyarde Surnamed Cid, towarde Kyng Pietro of Aragon that hindred his expedityon agaynst the Mores at Grenadoe. For hauing vanquyshed the fayde King, and taken hym in Battell, not onely remitted the reuenge of his wrong, but also suffered hym to go wythout raunsome, and tooke not from him so much as one Forte, esteemyng it to bee a better exploite to winne futch a King with curtefie, than beare the name of cruell in putting him to Death, or seasing vpon his land. But bicause acknowledging of the poore, and enriching the fmal, is commendable in a Prynce, than when he sheweth himselfe gentle to his lyke, I haue collected this discourse and faute of Kynge Mansor of Marocco, whose Chyldren (by subtile and fained religion) Cherif

succeded, the Sonne of whom at this day inioyeth the kingdomes of Su, Marocco, and the most part of the ifles confynge vpon Æthiopia. This history was told by an Italian called Nicholofo Baciadonne, who vpon this accydent was in Affrica, and in trafike of Marchandyse in the Land of Oran, situated vpon the coast of the South seas, and where the Geneuois and Spanyards vse great entercourse, bicause the countrey is faire, wel peopled, and wher the inhabitants (although the foyle be barbarous) lyue indifferent ciuilly, vsing great curtesie to Straungers, and largely departing their goodes to the poore, towards whom they be so earnestly bente, and louing, as for theyr Lyberality and pytiful almesse, they shame vs Christians. They meinteine a gret numbre of Hospitalles, to receiue and intertaine the poore and neady, wherein they shew themselues more deuout than they that be bounde by the law of Iesu Christe, to vse Charity towardes theyr brethren, with more curtesie and greater myldnesse. These Oraniens delight also to record in wryting the successe of thinges that chaunce in their time and carefully referue the same in Memorie, whych was the cause that hauyng registred in theyr Chronicles, (wrytten in Arabie letters, as the most part of thos Countreyes do vse) this present history, they imparted the same to the Geneuois marchants of whom the Italian author confesseth to haue receyued the copie. The cause why the Geneuois merchant was so diligent to make the enquirie, was by reason of a City of that prouince, builte through the chaunce of thys Historye, and which was called in theyr Tongue, Cæsar Elcabir, so mutch to say as, A great Palace. And bycause I am assyred, that curteous Myndes will delyght in deedes of Curtefie, I haue amonges other the Nouelles of Bandello, chosen by Francois de Belleforest and my self, discoursed thys, albeit the matter be not of great importance. For greater thynges and more notorious curtesies haue bene done by our own Kinges and Prynces. As that of Henry the eight a Prynce of notable memorye in hys Progresse into the North the xxxiii. yeare of his raigne, when he dysdayned not a pore Miller's house being strangled from his trayne, busily purfuing the Hart, and ther vndeowne of the Miller, was welcomed with homely cheare, as hys mealy house was able for the time to minister, and afterwardes

for acknowledging his willing Mynde, recompenced him wyth daynties of the Courte, and a Prynely rewarde. Of Edwardre the thyrde, whose Royall Nature was not displeased pleasauntly to vse a Waifaring Tanner, when deuyded from his Company, he mette hym by the way not far from Tomworth in Staffordshire, and by cheapening of his welfare steede (for stedinesse sure and able to carry him so farre as the stable dore) grewe to a price, and for exchaunge the Tanner craned fwe shillings to boote betwene the Kings and his. And when the King satissified with disport, desired to shew himself by sounding his warning blaste, assembled all hys Traine, and to the great amaze of the poore Tanner, (when he was guarded with that Troupe) he well guerdoned his good Pastime and familiar dealing, with the order of Knighthooде and reasonable reuenue for the maintenaunce of the same. The lyke Examples our Chronicles, memory, and reporte plentifully doe auouche and witnesse. But what? this Hyftory is the more rare and worthy of notyng, for respect of the People and Countrey, where feldome or never Curtesie haunteth or findeth harborough, and where Nature doth bryng forth greater store of monsters, than thinges worthy of praise. This great King Mansor then was not onely the Temporall Lord of the Countrey of Oran and Marocco, but also (as is saide of Prete Iean,) Byshop of his Law and the Mahomet Priest, as he is at thys Day that raighneth in Feze, Sus, and Marocco. Now thys Prynce aboue all other pleasure, loued the game of Hunting. And he so mutch delighted in that passe-time, as sometime he would cause his Tentes in the myd of the desertes to be erected, to lye there all Nyght, to the end, that the next day he might renew his game, and defraud his men of idlenessse, and the Wild beasts of rest. And this manner of Life he vsed still, after he had done Iustice and hearkened the complaintes for which his Subiectes came to disclose thereby theyr grieves. Wherein also he toke so great pleasure, as some of our magistrates do seeke their profite, whereof they be so squeymishe, as they be desirous to satify the place whereunto they be called, and render all men their righte due vnto them. For wyth theyr Bribery and Sacred Golden Hunger, Kings and Prynces in these dayes be ill serued, the people wronged, and the wycked out of

feare. There is none offence almost how villanous so euer it be, but is washed in the Water of Bribery, and clenched in the holly drop, wherewith the Poets faine Iupiter to corrupt the daughter of Acrifius fast closed within the brasen Toure. And who is able to resist that, which hath subdued the highest powers? Now returne we from our wanderings: This greate Kynge Manfor on a day assembled his People to hunt in the marish and fenny Countrey, that in elder age was not farre of from the City of Alela, which the Portugalles holde at this present, to make the way more free into the Isles of Molucca, of the most part wherof their King is Lord. As he was attentife in folowing a Beare, and his pastime at the best, the Elements began to darke and a great tempeste rose, such as with the storme and violent Winde, scattered the trayne far of from the King, who not knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to auoid the tempeste, the greatest that he felt in al his life, would with a good wil haue ben accompanied as the Troiane Æneas was, when being in like pastime and fear he was constrainyd to enter into a Cauë wyth his Queene Dido, where he perfourmed the Ioyes of hys vnhappy Maryage. But Manfor beeyng without Companye, and wythout any Cauë at Hande, wandered alonges the Champayne so carefull of hys Lyfe for feare of Wylde Beastes, whych flocke together in those desertes as the Courtiers were pensiue, for that they knew not whether theyr Prynce was gone. And that which chiefly grieued Manfor was hys being alone without guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durst passe no further for fear of drowning, and to be destroyed amiddes those Marshes, whereof all the Countrey was very ful. On the one side he was fryghted with Thunderclaps, which rumbled in the ayre very thicke and terryble: On the other side the lightning continually flashed on his face, the roring of the Beastes apalled him, the ignoraunce of the way so astonned him, as he was affraide to fall into the running Brokes, which the outragious raignes had caused to swell and ryse. It is not to be doubted, that orifons and prayers vnto hys greate prophet Mahomet were forgotten, and doubtfull it is whether he were more deuout when he went on Pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mosqua. Hee complayned of ill lucke, accusing Fortune, but chiefly hys

owne folly, for giuing himselfe so mutch to hunting, for the desire whereof, hee was thus straggled into vnknownen Countreyes. Sometimes he raued and vomytted his Gall agaynst his Gentlemen and houshold seruaunts, and threatned death vnto his guarde. But afterwards, when reason ouershadowed his sene, he saw that the tyme, and not their neglygence or little care caused that disgrace. He thoughte that his Prophet had poured downe that tempest for some Notable sinne, and had brought him into such and so dangerous extremity for his faults. For which cause he lifted vp his Eyes, and made a thoufand Mahomet mowes, and Apish mocks (according to theyr manner.) And as he fixed his eyes aloft vp to the heauens, a flash of lightning glaunced on his Face so violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, lyke a lyttle Chyld reproud of his maister. But he was further daunted and amazed, when he saw the night approche, which with the darkenes of his cloudy Mantell, stayed hys pace from going any further, and brought him into such perplexitye, as willingly he would haue forsaken both his hunting and company of his Seruants to be quit of that Daunger. But God carefull of good Myndes (with what law so euer they be trayned vp,) and who maketh the Sunne to shine vpon the iust and and vniuste, prepared a meanes for his fauegarde, as you shal heare. The Africane King beyng in his traunce, and naked of all hope, necessity (which is the clearest loking glasse that may be found,) made him diligently to loke about, whether he could see any perfone by whome he might attayne some securitie. And as he thus bent himselfe to discry all the partes of the Countrey, he saw not far of from him, the glimpe of a light which glimmered out at a little Window, whereunto he addreſſed himselfe, and perceiued that it was a ſimple Cabane ſituate in the middeft of the Fennes, to which he approached for his ſuccor and defense in the time of that tempeſt. He reioyſed as you may think, and whither his heart lept for ioy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue affayed like daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the faylers on the feas feele no greater ioy when they arriue to harborough, than the king of Marocco dyd: or when after a Tempeſt, or other peril, they discrye vpon the prowe of their ſhippe, the bryghtneſſe of

some clyffe, or other land. And thys king hauing felt the tempest of Wind, raine, haile, lyghtenyng, and Thunder claps, compassed round aboue with Marshes and violent streames of little Riuers that ran along his way, thought he had found Paradife by chauncing vpon that rusticall lodge. Now that Cotage was the refuge place of a pore Fisher man, who lived and susteined his Wife and children with Eeles which he toke alongs the ditches of those deepe and huge Marshes. Mansor when he was arrived at the dore of that great pallace couered and thacked with Reede, called to them wythin, who at the first would make no answer to the Prynce that taried there comming at the Gate. Then he knocked againe, and with louder voyce than before, which caused this fisher man, thinkyng that he had bene some rippier (to whom he was wont to sell hys ware, or else some straunger strayed out of his way,) spedily went out, and seeinge the Kinge well mounted and richlye clothed, and albeit he tooke him not to be his soueraigne LORD, yet he thought he was some one of his Courtly Gentlemen. Wherefore hee sayde: "What Fortune hath dryuen you (sir) into these so deserte and folytarye Places, and sutch as I maruell that you were not drowned a hundred tymes, in these streames, and bogges whereof this Marrish and fenny Countrey are full?" "It is the great God" (aunswere Mansor) "which hath had some care of me, and will not suffer me to perysh without doyng greater good turnes and better deedes than hitherto I haue don." The King's comming thither, seemed to Prognosticate that whych after chaunced, and that God poured downe the Tempest for the Wealth of the Fisher man, and commodity of the Country. And the straying of the Kyng was a thyng appoynted to make voyde those Marshes, and to purge and clense the Countrey: Semblable chaunces haue happened to other Prynces, as to Constantine the great, besides his City called New Rome, when he caused certayne Marshes and Ditches to be filled vp and dryed, to build a fayre and sumptuous Temple, in the Honor and Memory of the blessed Virgin that brought forth the Sauior of the World. "But tel me good man" (replied Mansor) canst thou not shew me the way to the Court, and whether the King is gone, for gladly (if it were possible) would I ride thither." "Verily" (sayd the Fisher Man) "it will be almost

day before ye can come there, the same beinge ten leagues from hence. "Forsomutch as thou knowest the way" (aunswered Mansor) "doe me so great pleasure to brynge me thither, and be assured that besides the good turne, for which I shall be bound vnto thee, I will curteously content thee for thy paynes." "Sir" (sayd the poore man) "you seeme to be an honest Gentleman, wherfore I pray you to lyght, and to tarry heere this Night, for that it is so late, and the way to the City very euyll and combersome for you to passe." "No, no," (sayd the King) "if it be possible, I must repaire to the place whither the King is gone, wherefore doe so mucht for me as to bee my guide, and thou shalt see whether I be vnthankfull to them that employ their paynes for mee." "If Kyng Mansor" (sayd the Fisher man) "were heere hymselfe in Person and made the lyke request, I would not be so very a foole, nor so presumptuous, (at this time of the Nyght) to take vpon me without Daunger to bryng hym to his Palace." "Wherfore?" (sayed the Kyng) "Wherfore? (quod you), bicause the Marshes bee so daungerous, as in the Day tyme, if one know not wel the way, the Horse, (be hee neuer so stronge and Lusty,) may chaunce to sticke fast, and tarry behynd for gage. And I would be sorry if the King were heere, that he should fall into Peryl, or suffer any anoyance and therewythall would deeeme my selfe vnhappy if I did let hym to incur futch euyll or incombrance." Mansor that delighted in the communication of this good man, and desirous to know the cause that moued him to speak with futch affection, said vnto him: "And why carest thou for the Life, health, or preseruation of the Kynge? What hast thou to doe wyth him that wouldest be so sorry for hys state, and carefull of his safety." "Ho, ho," said the good man, "doe you say that I am carefull for my Prince? Verily I loue him a hundred tymes better than I do my selfe, my Wife or children whych God hath sent me: and what sir, do not you loue our Prince?" "Yes that I doe" (replyed the Kyng) "for I haue better cause than thou, for that I am many times in his company, and liue vpon his charge and am entartayned with his wages. But what nedest thou to care for hym? Thou knowest him not, hee neuer did thee anye good turne or pleasure: nor yet thou nedest not hope henceforth to haue any pleasure at his hands."

“What?” (said the Fisher man) “must a Prince be loued for gaine and good turnes, rather than for hys Iustice and curtesie? I fee wel that amongs you maister Courtiers, the benefits of kings be more regarded, and their gifts better liked than their vertue and nobility, which maketh them wonderful vnto vs: and ye do more esteeme the gold, honor and estates that they bestow vpon you, than their health and fauegard, which are the more to be considered, for that the King is our head, and GOD hath made him futch one to kepe vs in Peace, and to be carefull of our states. Pardon me if I speake so boldly in your presence.” The kyng (which toke singular delight in this Countrey Philosopher,) answered him: “I am not offended bicause thy words approche so neare the troth: but tel me what benefit hast thou receiued of that king Manfor, of whome thou makest futch accompt and louest so wel? For I cannot thinke that euer he dyd thee good, or shewed thee pleasure, by reason of thy pouerty, and the little Furnytur within thy house in respect of that which they posseſſe whome hee loueth and fauoreth, and vnto whome he sheweth so great familyaritye and Benefite.” “Doe tell me fir” (replied the good man) “for so mutch as you so greatly regard the fauoures which Subiects receiue at theyr Prynces handes, as in deede they ought to doe, What greater goodnesse, richeſſe, or Benefite ought I to hope for, or can receyue of my King (being futch one as I am,) but the profite and vtility that all we whych be his vassalles do apprehend from day to day in the Iuſtyce that he rendereth to euery Wyghte, by not suffering the puissant and Rich to ſuppreſſe and ouertread the feeble and weake, and him that is deuoid of Fortune’s goods, that indifferency be maintayned by the Officers, to whom he committeth the gouernement of his Prouinces, and the care which he hath that his people be not deuoured by exactions, and intollerable tributes. I do esteeme more his goodnesse, clemency and Loue, that he beareth to his ſubiects, than I doe all your delicates and ease in following the Court. I moſt humbly honor and reuerence my king in that he being farre from vs, doeth neuertheleſſe ſo vfe his gouernment as we feele his prefence like the Image of God, for the peace and vniōn wherein we through him do lyue and enjoy, without disturbance, that lytle whych

God and Fortune haue gyuen vs. Who (if not the king) is he that doeth preferue vs, and defend vs from the incursions and pillages of those Theues and Pirates of Arabie, which inuade and make warre with their neighbours? and there is no friend they haue but they would displease if the King wysely did not forbyd and preuent their villanies. That great Lord which kepeth his Court at Constantinople and maketh himself to be adored of his people like a God, brideleth not so mutch the Arabians, as our king doth, vnder the Protection and sauegard of whome, I that am a poore Fisher man, do ioy my pouerty in peace, and without fear of theeues do norish my litle family, applying my selfe to the fishing of Eeles that be in these ditches and fenny places, which I carry to the market townes, and sell for the sustenance and feeding of my wife and children, and esteeme my self right happy, that returning to my cabane, and homely lodge at my pleasure, in whatsoeuer place I do abide, bicause (albeit far of from Neigh-boures,) by the benefite and dilygence of my Prince, none staye my iourney, or offendeth me by any meanes, whych is the cause (sayd he lifting vp his hands and eyes aloft,) that I pray vnto God and his great Prophet Mahomet, that it may please them to preferue our King in health, and to gyue him so great happe and contentation, as he is vertuous and debonaire, and that ouer hys Ennimies (flying before him,) he may euermore be victorius, for noryshing his people in peace, and his children in ioy and Nobility." The King seeing that deuout affe~~c~~tion of the paifaunte, and knowyng it to be without guile or Hypocrisie, would gladly haue discouered himself, but yet willyng to referue the same for better opportunity, he sayd vnto him: "Forsomutch as thou louest the king so well, it is not impossible but those of his house be welcome vnto thee, and that for thy Mansor's sake, thou wilt helpe and do seruice to his Gentlemen." "Let it suffise you" (replyed he) "that my heart is more inclined to the King, than to the willes of those that serue him for hope of preferment. Now being so affectionate to the king as I am, thynke whyther hys houfholde Seruautes haue power to commaund me, and whither my willing mynde be prest to doe them good or not. But mee thynke ye neede not to stay heere at the gate in talke, being so wet as

you be: Wherefore vouchsafe to come into my house, which is youre owne, to take sutch simple lodging as I haue, where I wyl entreat you, (not according to your merite) but with the little that God and his Prophet haue departed to my pouerty: And to morrow morning I will conduit you to the City, euen to the royll Palace of my Prynce." "Truly" (answered the King) "albeit necessity did not prouoke me, yet thine honesty deserueth well other reputation than a simple Countrey man, and I do thinke that I haue profited more in hearing thee speake than by hearkenyng to the flattering and babbling tales of Courting triflers, which dayly employ themselues to corrupte the eares of Prynces." "What sir?" (sayd the Paysant) "thynke you that thys poore Coate and simple lodging be not able to apprehend the Preceptes of Vertue? I haue sometimes heard tell, that the wife auoyding Cityes and Troupes of Men, haue wythdrawne themselues into the desertes, for leyisure to contemplate heauenly thynges." "Your skyll is greate," replied Mansor: "Goe we then, sith you please to doe me that Curtefie as this night to be myne hoste." So the king went into the Rustical Lodge, where infsteede of Tapistery and Turkey hangings, he fawe the house stately hanged with fisher Nets and Cordes, and in place of rich feeling of Noble mens houses, he beheld Canes and Reedes whych serued both for the feeling and couering. The Fisher man's Wife continued in the kitchen, whilst Mansor hymself both walked and dressed his owne horse, to which horse the Fisher man durste not once come neare for his Corage and stately trappour, wyth one thing he was abundantly refreshed, and that the mooste needefull thing which was fire, whereof there was no spare, no more then there was of Fifhe. But the king which had been dayntely fed, and did not well taste and lyke that kynde of meat, demaunded if hys hunger could not be supplyed with a lytle Flesh, for that his stomacke was anoyed with the onely fawoure of the Eeles. The poore man, (as ye haue somewhat perceiued by the former discourse) was a pleasaunt fellow, and delighted rather to prouoke laughter than to prepare more dainty meat, said vnto the king: "It is no maruell, though our kinges do furnishe themselues with Countrey men, to serue them in their Warres, for the delicate bringing vp and litle force in fine Cour-

tiers. Wee, albeit the Raine doth fal vpon our heads, and the Winde affaile euery part of our bodies all durtie and Wet, doe not care either for fire or Bed, wee feede vpon any kinde of meate that is set before vs, withoute seeking Sauce for increasing of our appetite: and we (beholde) are nimble, healthy, lusty, and neuer ficke, nor our mouth out of taft, where ye do feele sutch distemperaunce of stomacke, as pity it is to see, and more ado there is to bring the same into his right order and taste, than to ordeine and dresse a supper for a whole armie." The king who laughed (with displayed throte,) hearing his hoste so merily disposed, could haue been contented to haue heard him still had not his appetite pronoked him, and the time of the Night very late. Wherefore he said vnto him: "I do agree to what you alleage, but performe I pray thee my request, and then wee will satissie our selues with further talke." "Well sir" (replied the king's Hoste,) "I see well that a hungry Belly hath no luste to heare a merry song, whereof were you not so egre and sharpe set, I could sing a hundred. But I hane a lytle Kidde which as yet is not weaned, the same wil I cause to bee made ready, for I think it cannot be better bestowed." The supper by reason of the hoste's curtesie, was passed forth in a thousand pleasant passetetimes, whych the Fisher-man of purpose vttered to recreate hys Guest, bicause he sawe hym to delight in those deuyses. And vpon the end of Supper, he sayd vnto the King: "Now sir, how like you this banquet? It is not so sumptuous as thosse that be ordinarily made at our Prynce's Court, yet I thynke that you shal slepe wyth no lesse appetyte than you haue eaten with a god stomack, as appeareth by the few Woords you have vttered in the tyme of your repast. But whereunto booteh it to employ tyme, ordeyned for eating, in expence of talke, whych serueth not but to passe the tyme, and to shorten, the day? And meats ought rather to be taken for sustentation of Nature then for prouocation or motion of thys feeble and Transitorye Fleshe?" "Verily" (sayd the King) "your reason is good, and I doe meane to ryse from the Table, to passe the remnant of the Nyght in rest, therewyth to satissie my selfe so well as I haue wthy eatyng, and do thanke you heartily for your good aduertysement." So the King went to Bed, and it was not long ere hee fell a

sleepe, and contynued tyll the Mornynge. And when the Sunne dyd ryse, the Fisherman came to wake hym, tellyng hym that it was tyme to rise, and that hee was ready to bryng him to the Court. All this whyle the Gentlemen of the kinge's Traine were searching round abouthe the Countrey to fynde his Maiesy, makyng Cryes and Hues, that he myghte heare them. The kyng knowyng their voices, and the noyes they made, went forth to meeete them, and if his People were gladde when they founde him, the Fisherman was no lesse amazed to see the honor the Courtyers did vnto his Guest. Which the curteous king perceiuing, sayd vnto him: "My Friend, thou feest here, that Mansor, of whome yester-night thou madest so great accompt, and whome thou saidst, that thou didst loue so well. Bee assured, that for the Curtise thou haft done him, before it bee longe, the same shall be so well acquyted, as for euer thou shalte haue good cause to remembre it." The good man was already vpon his marybones beseeching the King that it would please him pardon hys rude entertainement and his ouermutch familiarity whych hee had vsed vnto him. But Mansor causing him to rise vp, willed hym to depart, and sayed that within few dayes after he shoulde heare further Newes. Now in these Fennish and marrysh groundes, the Kyng had already builded diuers Castles and lodges for the pleasure and solace of hunting. Wherefore he purposed there to erect a goodly City, causing the waters to be voyded with greate expedition, whych City he builded immediately, and compassyng the circuite of the appoynted place, with strong Walles and depe Ditches, he gaue many immunitiess and Pryuiledges to thosse, that would repayre to people the same, by meanes whereof, in litle tyme, was reduced to the state of a beautifull and wealthy City, whych is the very same that before we sayd to be Cæsar Elcabit, as mutch to say: "The great Palace." This goodly worke beinge thus performed Mansor sent for his host, to whome hee sayde: "To the end from henceforth thou mayest more honourably entertaine Kyngs into thy House, and mayest intreate them wyth greater sumptuositie, for the better solacyng of them wyth thy curtesy and pleasaunt talke, beholde the City that I haue buylded, which I doe gyue vnto thee and thyne for euer, referuynge nothyng but an acknowledgement of good wil,

to the end thou mayst know that a Gentleman's mind nouised in villany, is discouered, when forgetting a good turne, he incurreth the vice of Ingratitude." The good man seeing so liberall an offer and present worthy of futch a king fell downe vpon his knees, and kyssing his foote with al humility, sayd vnto him: "Sir if your Liberality did not supply the imperfection of my Meryte, and perfourmed not what wanted in me, to attayne so great estate, I would excuse my selfe of the charge whych it pleaseth you to gyue mee, and whereunto for lacke of trayning vp, and vse of futch a Dignity, I am altogether vnfit. But sith that the graces of GOD, and the gyttes of Kynges ought neuer to bee reieected, by acceptynge thys Benefite wyth humble thankes for the clemencye of your royll Maiestye, I rest the Seruaunt and slauue of you and yours." The king hearing hym speake so wisely, took hym vp, and imbraced him, saying: "Would to God and his great Prophete, that all they which rule Cityes, and gouerne Prouinces, had so good a Nature as thine then I durst be bolde to say, that the People shoulde lyue better at theyr easse, and Monarchs without charge of conscience, for the ill behauyors of theyr Officers. Lyue good man, lyue at thine easse, maynteine thy people, obserue our lawes, and increase the Beauty of the City, whereof from this time forth wee doe make the posseffer. And truly the present was not to bee contempned, for that the same at this day is one of the fairest that is in Affrica, and is the Land of the blacke People, futch as the Spaniards call Negroes. It is very full of Gardeins, furnished with abundance of Spyces brought from the Moluccas, bicause of the martes and faires ordeined there. To be short, Mansor shewed by this gift what is the force of a gentle heart, which can not abyde to bee vanquished in curtesie, and lesse suffer that vnder forgetfulnesse the memorye of a receyued good turne be lost. King Darius whilome, for a little garment, receiued in gift by Silofon the Samien, recompenced him wyth the gaine and royll dignity of that City, and made him soueraine Lord thereof, and of the Isle of Samos. And what greater vertue can illustrate the name of a noble man, than to acknowledge and prefferre them, which for Natural shame and bashfulnesse, dare not beholde the Maiesty of their greatnesse? God sometymes with

a more curteous Eye doth loke vpon the presents of a poore man, than the fat and rych offerings of him that is great and wealthy ? Euen so a benefite, from what hand soeuer it procedeth, cannot chose but bryng forth the fruictes of his Liberality that giueth the same, who by vsing largefesse, feleth also the like in him to whom it is employed. That magnificence no long time past vsed the Seigniorie of Venice, to Francesco Dandulo, who after he had dured the great displeasures of the Pope, in the name of the whole City, vpon his returne to Venice, for acknowledgment of his pacyence, and for abolishmente of that Shame, was wyth happye and vniforme Acclamatyon of the whole state elected, and made Prince, and Duke of that Common wealth. Worthy of prayse truly is he, that by some pleasure bindeth another to his curtesie : but when a Noble man acknowledgeth for a benefit, that which a Subiect is bounde to gieue him by duty and seruice, there the proofe of prayse carryeth no Fame at all. For which cause I determined to display the Hyftory of the barbarous King Mansor, to the intent that our Gentlemen, noryshed and trained vp in great ciuilitie, may assay by their mildenesse and good education, to surmount the curtesie of that Prynce, of whom for this time wee purpose to take our Farewell.

THE
CONCLUSION,
WITH
AN ADUERTISEMENT TO THE READER.



WHAT thou hast gained for thy better instruction, or what con-
ceiued for recreation by reading these thirty fwe Nouells, I am n
Iudge, although (by deeming) in reading and perusing, tho
mayft (at thy pleasure) gather both. But howsoeuer profite, c
delight, can satiffy mine apoyntment, wherefore they were pre-
ferred into thy hands, contented am I that thou doe vouchsaſ
them Good leſſons how to ſhun the Darts, and Prickes of iſolenc
thou findeſt in the ſame. The vertuous noble may fauor th
fruits and taste the licour that ſtilleth from the gums or buds c
Vertue. The contrary may ſee the bloſſoms fall, that blome fro
the shrubs of diſloyalty and degenerat kinde. Yong Gentle
men, and Ladies do view a plot founded on ſured grounde, an
what the foundation is, planted in ſhattring Soyle, with a fashio
of attire to garniſh their inward parts, ſo well as (ſpareleſſe) the
imploy vpon the vaniſhing pompe. Euery ſort and ſexe th
warfare in the fielde of humayne life, may ſet here the fauouroi
fruiſt (to outwarde lyking) that fanſied the ſenſuall taste c
Adam's Wyfe. They ſee alſo what griefts ſutſh fading fruiſt
produce vnto poſterity: what likewiſe the luſty growth an
ſpring of vertue's plant, and what delicates it brauncheth to tho
that carefully keepe the ſlips thereof, within the Orchard of the
mindes. Diuers Tragical ſhewes by the pennes deſcription haſ

bene disclosed in greatest number of these Hystories, the same also I haue mollified and sweetened with the course of pleasaunt matters, of purpose not to dampe the deyntry mindes of thos that shrinke and feare at such rehearsall. And bicause fodaynly (contrary to expectation) this Volume is risen to greater heape of leaues, I doe omit for this present time sundry Nouels of mery deuise, referueng the same to be ioyned with the rest of an other part, wherein shall succeede the remnaunt of Bandello, specially futch (suffrable) as the learned French man François de Belleforrest hath selected, and the choyest done in the Italian. Some also out of Erizzo, Ser Giouani Florentino, Parabosco, Cynthio, Straparole, Sansouino, and the best liked out of the Queene of Nauarre, and other Authors. Take these in so good part with those that haue and shall come forth, as I do offre them with good will curteously correcting futch Faults, and Errors, as shall present themselues, eyther burying them in the Bosome of Fauor, or pretermitteng them with the beck of Curtefie.!

FINIS.